Digitized by Google

65 E 439.

Národní knihovna ČR
Historické fondy

60 E 439/Vol. 11

Národní knihovna

1003298645

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING.

VOLUME ELEVENTH.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

IN

TWELVE VOLUMES.

WITH

The LIFE of the AUTHOR.

VOLUME the ELEVENTH.

LONDON:
Printed for JOHN BELL, No 132. Strand,
M. DCC. LXXV.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

Felices ter & amplius,
Quos irrupta tenet copula.

Γυναικὸς ὐδὲν χρῆμ' ἀνὴρ λπίζεῖας
Ἐςθλῆς ἀμεινον, ὐδὲ βίγιον κακῆς.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

OF THE

ELEVENTH VOLUME.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Being the first chapter of the eighth book. 1

CHAP. II.

Containing an account of Mr Booth's fellow-sufferers. 5

CHAP. III.

Containing some extraordinary behaviour in Mrs Ellison. 8

CHAP. IV.

Containing, among many matters, the exemplary behaviour of Colonel James.

CHAP. V.

Comments upon authors. 18

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

Which inclines rather to satire than panegyric. 25

CHAP. VII.

Worthy a very serious perusal. 29

CHAP. VIII.

Consisting of grave matters. 32

CHAP. IX.

A curious chapter, from which a curious reader may draw sundry observations. 38

CHAP. X.

In which are many profound secrets of philosophy. 43

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

In which the history looks backwards. 55

CHAP. II.

In which the history goes forward. 58

CHAP. III.

A conversation between Dr Harrison and others. 63

CHAP. IV.

A dialogue between Booth and Amelia. 68

CHAP. V.

A conversation between Amelia and Doctor Harrison, with the result. 73

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

Containing as surprising an event as it perhaps recorded in history. Page 79

CHAP. VII.

In which the author appears to be master of that profound learning called, The Knowledge of the Town. 86

CHAP. VIII.

In which two strangers make their appearance. 90

CHAP. IX.

A scene of modern wit and humour. 97

CHAP. X.

A curious conversation between the Doctor, the young clergyman, and the young clergyman's father. 103

BOOK X.

CHAP. I.

To which we will prefix no preface. 110

CHAP. II.

What happened at the masquerade. 115

CHAP. III.

Consequences of the masquerade, not uncommon nor surprising. 125

CHAP. IV.

Consequences of the masquerade. 128

CHAP. V.

In which Colonel Bath appears in great glory. 136

CHAP. VI.

Read, gamester, and observe. 143

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VII.

In which Booth receives a visit from Captain Trent. Page 147

CHAP. VIII.

Contains a letter, and other matters. 152

CHAP. IX.

Containing some things worthy observation. 160

BOOK XI.

CHAP. I.

Containing a very polite scene. 165

CHAP. II.

Matters political. 171

CHAP. III.

The history of Mr Trent. 179

CHAP. IV.

Containing some distress. 188

CHAP. V.

Containing more wormwood, and other ingredients. 192

CHAP. VI.

A scene of the tragic kind. 196

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr Booth meets with more than one adventure. 201

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

In which Amelia appears in a light more amiable than gay. 205

CHAP. IX.

A very tragic scene. 209

BOOK XII.

CHAP. I.

The book begins with polite history. 214

CHAP. II.

In which Amelia visits her husband. 217

CHAP. III.

Containing matter pertinent to the history. 223

CHAP. IV.

In which Dr Harrison visits Colonel James. 229

CHAP. V.

What passed at the Bailiff's house. 234

CHAP. VI.

What passed between the Doctor and the sick man. 240

CHAP. VII.

In which the history draws towards a conclusion. 247

CHAP. VIII.

Thus this history draws nearer to a conclusion. 253

CHAP. IX.

In which the history is concluded. 259

An ENQUIRY *into the* Causes *of the late* INCREASE *of* ROBBERS, &c. 263

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

Being the firſt chapter of the eighth book.

THE hiſtory muſt now look a little backwards to thoſe circumſtances which led to the cataſtrophe mentioned at the end of the laſt book.

When Amelia went out in the morning, ſhe left her children to the care of her huſband. In this amiable office he had been engaged near an hour; and was at that very time lying along on the floor, and his little things crawling and playing about him, when a moſt violent knock was heard at the door; and immediately a footman, running up ſtairs, acquainted him, that his lady was taken violently ill, and carried into Mrs Chenevix's toy-ſhop.

Booth no ſooner heard this account, which was delivered with great appearance of haſte and earneſtneſs, than he leapt ſuddenly from the floor; and leaving his children, roaring at the news of their mother's illneſs, in ſtrict charge with his maid, he ran as faſt as his legs could carry him to the place; or towards the place rather: for before he arrived at the ſhop, a gentleman ſtopt him full butt, crying, 'Captain, 'whither ſo faſt?' Booth anſwered eagerly, 'Who'ever you are, friend, don't aſk me any queſtions 'now.' 'You muſt pardon me, Captain!' anſwered the gentleman; 'but I have a little buſineſs with 'your honour——In ſhort, Captain, I have a ſmall 'warrant here in my pocket againſt your honour,

Digitized by Google

'at the ſuit of one Dr Harriſon.' 'You are a bailiff 'then?' ſays Booth. 'I am an officer, Sir,' anſwered the other.—'Well, Sir, it is in vain to con-'tend,' cries Booth: 'but let me beg you will per-'mit me only to ſtep to Mrs Chenevix's——I will at-'tend you, upon my honour, where-ever you pleaſe; 'but my wife lies violently ill there.'—'O, for that 'matter,' anſwered the bailiff, 'you may ſet your 'heart at eaſe; your lady, I hope, is very well. I 'aſſure you, ſhe is not there; you will excuſe me, 'Captain, theſe are only ſtratagems of war. *Bolus 'and virtus, quis in a hoſteſs equirit?*'—'Sir, I ho-'nour your learning,' cries Booth, 'and could al-'moſt kiſs you for what you tell me. I aſſure you, 'I would forgive you five hundred arreſts for ſuch a 'piece of news. Well, Sir, and whither am I to go 'with you?'—'O, any where; where your honour 'pleaſes,' cries the bailiff. 'Then ſuppoſe we go to 'Brown's coffee-houſe,' ſaid the priſoner. 'No,' anſwered the bailiff, 'that will not do; that's in 'the verge of the court.' 'Why then, to the neareſt 'tavern,' ſaid Booth. 'No, not to a tavern,' cries the other, 'that is not a place of ſecurity; and you 'know, Captain, your honour is a ſhy cock: I have 'been after your honour theſe three months—Come, 'Sir, you muſt go to my houſe, if you pleaſe.' 'With 'all my heart,' anſwered Booth, 'if it be any where 'hereabouts.' 'O, it is but a little ways off,' replied the bailiff; 'it is only in Grays-inn-Lane, juſt by 'almoſt.' He then called a coach, and deſired his priſoner to walk in.

Booth entered the coach without any reſiſtance, which had he been inclined to make, he muſt have plainly perceived would have been ineffectual, as the bailiff appeared to have ſeveral followers at hand, two of whom, beſide the commander in chief, mounted with him into the coach. As Booth was a ſweet-tempered man, as well as ſomewhat of a philoſopher, he behaved with all the good humour imaginable, and, indeed, with more than his companions; who, however, ſhewed him what they call civility, that is, they neither ſtruck him nor ſpit in his face.

Notwith-

Digitized by Google

Notwithstanding the pleasantry which Booth endeavoured to preserve, he in reality envied every labourer whom he saw pass by him in his way. The charms of liberty against his will rushed on his mind; and he could not avoid suggesting to himself, how much more happy was the poorest wretch, who without controul could repair to his homely habitation, and to his family, compared to him who was thus violently, and yet lawfully, torn away from the company of his wife and his children! And their condition, especially that of his Amelia, gave his heart many a severe and bitter pang.

At length he arrived at the bailiff's mansion, and was ushered into a room, in which were several persons. Booth desired to be alone; upon which the bailiff waited on him up stairs, into an apartment, the windows of which were well fortified with iron bars; but the walls had not the least outwork raised before them; they were, indeed, what is generally called naked, the bricks having been only covered with a thin plaister, which, in many places, was mouldered away.

The first demand made upon Booth was for coach-hire, which amounted to two shillings, according to the bailiff's account; that being just double the legal fare. He was then asked if he did not chuse a bowl of punch; to which he having answered in the negative, the bailiff replied, 'Nay, Sir, just as you 'please. I don't ask you to drink, if you don't chuse 'it; but certainly you know the custom; the house 'is full of prisoners, and I can't afford gentlemen a 'room to themselves for nothing.'

Booth presently took this hint, indeed it was a pretty broad one, and told the bailiff, he should not scruple to pay him his price; but in fact, he never drank unless at his meals. 'As to that, Sir,' cries the bailiff, 'it is just as your honour pleases. I 'scorn to impose upon any gentleman in misfortunes: I wish you well out of them for my part. 'Your honour can take nothing amiss of me, I only 'does my duty, what I am bound to do; and as you

Digitized by Google

'says, you don't care to drink any thing, what will 'you be pleased to have for dinner?'

Booth then complied in bespeaking a dish of meat, and told the bailiff, he would drink a bottle with him after dinner. He then desired the favour of pen, ink, and paper, and a messenger; all which were immediately procured him, the bailiff telling him he might send where-ever he pleased, and repeated his concern for Booth's misfortunes, and a hearty desire to see the end of them.

The messenger was just dispatched with the letter, when, who should arrive but honest Atkinson? A soldier of the guards, belonging to the same company with the Serjeant, and who had known Booth at Gibraltar, had seen the arrest, and heard the orders given to the coachman. This fellow accidentally meeting Atkinson, had acquainted him with the whole affair.

At the appearance of Atkinson, joy immediately overspread the countenance of Booth. The ceremonials which passed between them are unnecessary to be repeated. Atkinson was soon dispatched to the attorney, and to Mrs Ellison, as the reader hath before heard from his own mouth.

Booth now greatly lamented that he had writ to his wife. He thought she might have been acquainted with the affair better by the Serjeant. Booth begged him, however, to do every thing in his power to comfort her, to assure her that he was in perfect health and good spirits, and to lessen as much as possible the concern which he knew she would have at reading his letter.

The Serjeant, however, as the reader hath seen, brought himself the first account of the arrest. Indeed, the other messenger did not arrive till a full hour afterwards. This was not owing to any slowness of his, but to many previous errands which he was to execute before the delivery of the letter: for, notwithstanding the earnest desire which the bailiff had declared to see Booth out of his troubles, he had ordered the porter, who was his follower, to call upon two or three other bailiffs, and as many attorneys, to try

Digitized by Google

try to load his prisoner with as many actions as possible.

Here the reader may be apt to conclude, that the bailiff, instead of being a friend, was really an enemy to poor Booth; but in fact, he was not so. His desire was no more than to accumulate bail-bonds; for the bailiff was reckoned an honest and good sort of man in his way, and had no more malice against the bodies in his custody, than a butcher hath to those in his: and as the latter, when he takes his knife in hand, hath no idea but of the joints into which he is to cut the carcase; so the former, when he handles his writ, hath no other design but to cut out the body into as many bail-bonds as possible. As to the life of the animal, or the liberty of the man, they are thoughts which never obtrude themselves on either.

CHAP. II.

Containing an account of Mr Booth's fellow-sufferers.

BEFORE we return to Amelia, we must detain our reader a little longer with Mr Booth, in the custody of Mr Bondum the bailiff, who now informed his prisoner, that he was welcome to the liberty of the house with the other gentlemen.

Booth asked who those gentlemen were. 'One of 'them, Sir,' says Mr Bondum, 'is a very great writer, 'or author, as they call him,—He hath been here 'these five weeks, at the suit of a bookseller, for 'eleven pound odd money; but he expects to be dis- 'charged in a day or two; for he hath writ out the 'debt. He is now writing for five or six booksellers, 'and he will get you sometimes, when he sits to it, 'a matter of fifteen shillings a-day. For he is a very 'good pen, they say; but is apt to be idle. Some 'days he won't write above five hours; but at other 'times I have known him at it above sixteen.'—'Ay!' cries Booth, 'Pray, what are his productions?—'What doth he write?' 'Why, sometimes,' answered Bondum, 'he writes your history-books for 'your numbers, and sometimes your verses, your

Digitized by Google

'poems, what do you call them? and then again he 'writes news for your newſpapers.'—'Ay, indeed! 'he is a moſt extraordinary man truly—How doth he 'get his news here?'—'Why he makes it, as he 'doth your parliament-ſpeeches for your magazines. 'He reads them to us ſometimes over a bowl of 'punch.—To be ſure it is all one as if one was in 'the parliament-houſe—It is about liberty and free-'dom, and about the conſtitution of England. I ſay 'nothing for my part: for I will keep my neck out 'of a halter; but faith, he makes it out plainly to 'me, that all matters are not as they ſhould be. I 'am all for liberty, for my part.' 'Is that ſo con-'ſiſtent with your calling?' cries Booth. 'I thought, 'my friend, you had lived by depriving men of their 'liberty.' 'That's another matter,' cries the bailiff, 'that's all according to law, and in the way of bu-'ſineſs. To be ſure men muſt be obliged to pay 'their debts, or elſe there would be an end of every 'thing.' Booth deſired the bailiff to give him his opinion of liberty. Upon which he heſitated a mo-ment, and then cried out, 'O, it is a fine thing, it is 'a very fine thing, and the conſtitution of England.' Booth told him, that by the old conſtitution of Eng-land, he had heard that men could not be arreſted for debt; to which the bailiff anſwered, that muſt have been in very bad times. 'Becauſe as why,' ſays he, 'would it not be the hardeſt thing in the 'world if a man could not arreſt another for a juſt 'and lawful debt? beſides, Sir, you muſt be miſ-'taken: for how could that ever be! is not liberty 'the conſtitution of England? well, and is not the 'conſtitution, as a man may ſay,——whereby the 'conſtitution, that is the law and liberty, and all 'that——'

Booth had a little mercy upon the poor bailiff, when he found him rounding in this manner, and told him he had made the matter very clear. Booth then proceeded to enquire after the other gentlemen, his fellows in affliction; upon which, Bondum ac-quainted him that one of the priſoners was a poor fel-low. 'He calls himſelf a gentleman,' ſaid Bondum, 'but,

Digitized by Google

'but I am sure I never saw any thing genteel by him. 'In a week that he hath been in my house, he hath 'drank only part of one bottle of wine. I intend to 'carry him to Newgate within a day or two, if he 'cannot find bail, which, I suppose, he will not be 'able to do: for every body says he is an undone 'man. He hath run out all he hath by losses in busi-'ness, and one way or other; and he hath a wife and 'seven children.—Here was the whole family here 'the other day, all howling together. I never saw 'such a beggarly crew; I was almost ashamed to see 'them in my house. I thought they seemed fitter for 'Bridewell than any other place. To be sure, I do 'not reckon him as proper company for such as you, 'Sir; but there is another prisoner in the house that 'I dare say you will like very much. He is, indeed, 'very much of a gentleman, and spends his money 'like one. I have had him only three days, and I 'am afraid he won't stay much longer. They say, 'indeed, he is a gamester; but what is that to me or 'any one, as long as a man appears as a gentleman? 'I always love to speak by people as I find. And, in 'my opinion, he is fit company for the greatest lord 'in the land; for he hath very good cloaths, and 'money enough. He is not here for debt, but upon 'a judge's warrant for an assault and battery; for 'the tipstaff locks up here.'

The bailiff was thus haranguing, when he was interrupted by the arrival of the attorney, whom the trusty serjeant had, with the utmost expedition, found out, and dispatched to the relief of his distressed friend. But before we proceed any further with the Captain, we will return to poor Amelia, for whom, considering the situation in which we left her, the good-natured reader may be, perhaps, in no small degree solicitous.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

Containing ſome extraordinary behaviour in Mrs Elliſon.

THE ſerjeant being departed to convey Mrs Elliſon to the Captain, his wife went to fetch Amelia's children to their mother.

Amelia's concern for the diſtreſſes of her huſband was aggravated at the ſight of her children. 'Good 'Heavens!' ſhe cried, 'what will, what can become 'of theſe poor little wretches! why have I produced 'theſe little creatures only to give them a ſhare of 'poverty and miſery!' At which words ſhe embraced them eagerly in her arms, and bedewed them both with her tears.

The children's eyes ſoon overflowed as faſt as their mother's, though neither of them knew the cauſe of her affliction. The little boy, who was the elder, and much the ſharper of the two, imputed the agonies of his mother to her illneſs, according to the account brought to his father in his preſence.

When Amelia became acquainted with the child's apprehenſions, ſhe ſoon ſatisfied him that ſhe was in a perfect ſtate of health; at which the little thing expreſſed great ſatisfaction, and ſaid, he was glad ſhe was well again—Amelia told him ſhe had not been in the leaſt diſordered.—Upon which the innocent cried out, 'La! how can people tell ſuch fibs! a great 'tall man told my papa you was taken very ill at 'Mrs ſomebody's ſhop; and my poor papa preſently 'ran down ſtairs, I was afraid he would have broke 'his neck to come to you.'

'O the villains,' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'what a 'ſtratagem was here to take away your huſband!'

'Take away!' anſwered the child—'What, hath 'any body taken away papa?—Sure that naughty 'fibbing man hath not taken away papa?'

Amelia begged Mrs Atkinſon to ſay ſomething to her children; for that her ſpirits were overpowered. She then threw herſelf into a chair, and gave a full

a full vent to a paſſion almoſt too ſtrong for her delicate conſtitution.

The ſcene that followed, during ſome minutes, is beyond my power of deſcription; I muſt beg the reader's heart to ſuggeſt it to themſelves. The children hung on the mother, whom they endeavoured in vain to comfort; as Mrs Atkinſon did in vain attempt to pacify them, telling them, all would be well, and they would ſoon ſee their papa again.

At length, partly by the perſuaſions of Mrs Atkinſon, partly from conſideration of her little ones, and more, perhaps, from the relief which ſhe had acquired by her tears, Amelia became a little compoſed.

Nothing worth notice paſt in this miſerable company from this time till the return of Mrs Elliſon from the bailiff's houſe; and to draw out ſcenes of wretchedneſs to too great a length, is a talk very uneaſy to the writer, and for which none but readers of a moſt gloomy complexion will think themſelves ever obliged to his labours.

At length Mrs Elliſon arrived, and entered the room with an air of gaiety rather miſbecoming the occaſion. When ſhe had ſeated herſelf in a chair, ſhe told Amelia that the Captain was very well, and in good ſpirits; and that he earneſtly deſired her to keep up hers. 'Come, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'don't 'be diſconſolate; I hope we ſhall ſoon be able to get 'him out of his troubles. The debts, indeed, amount 'to more than I expected; however, ways may be 'found to redeem him. He muſt own himſelf guilty 'of ſome raſhneſs in going out of the verge, when he 'knew to what he was liable; but that is now not to 'be remedied. If he had followed my advice, this 'had not happened; but men will be headſtrong.'

'I cannot bear this,' cries Amelia; 'ſhall I hear 'that beſt of creatures blamed for his tenderneſs to 'me?'

'Well, I will not blame him,' anſwered Mrs Elliſon, 'I am ſure I propoſe nothing but to ſerve him; 'and if you will do as much to ſerve him yourſelf, he 'will not long be a priſoner.'

'I do?'

Digitized by Google

'I do?' cries Amelia; 'Oh heavens! is there a 'thing upon earth——'

'Yes, there is a thing upon earth,' said Mrs Ellison, 'and a very easy thing too.——And yet I will 'venture my life, you start when I propose it. And 'yet when I consider that you are a woman of under-'standing, I know not why I should think so; for 'sure you must have too much good sense to imagine 'that you can cry your husband out of prison. If 'this would have done, I see you have almost cried 'your eyes out already. And yet you may do the bu-'siness by a much pleasanter way than by crying and 'bawling.'

'What do you mean, Madam,' cries Amelia.—— 'For my part, I cannot guess your meaning.'

'Before I tell you then, Madam!' answered Mrs Ellison, 'I must inform you, if you do not already 'know it, that the Captain is charged with actions to 'the amount of near five hundred pound. I am sure 'I would willingly be his bail; but I know my bail 'would not be taken for that sum. You must consi-'der, therefore, Madam, what chance you have of 'redeeming him; unless you chuse, as perhaps some 'wives would, that he should lie all his life in prison.'

At these words Amelia discharged a shower of tears, and gave every mark of the most frantic grief.

'Why there now,' cries Mrs Ellison, 'while 'you will indulge these extravagant passions, how 'can you be capable of listening to the voice of rea-'son? I know I am a fool in concerning myself thus 'with the affairs of others. I know the thankless of-'fice I undertake; and yet I love you so, my dear 'Mrs Booth, that I cannot bear to see you afflicted, 'and I would comfort you, if you would suffer me. 'Let me beg you to make your mind easy; and with-'in these two days, I will engage to set your husband 'at liberty.

'Harkee, child, only behave like a woman of spirit 'this evening, and keep your appointment, notwith-'standing what hath happened; and I am convinced 'there is one who hath the power and the will to serve 'you.'

Mrs

Mrs Ellifon ſpoke the latter part of her ſpeech in a whiſper; ſo that Mrs Atkinſon, who was then engaged with the children, might not hear her; but Amelia anſwered aloud, and ſaid, 'What appointment would you have me keep this evening?'

'Nay, nay, if you have forgot,' cries Mrs Ellifon, 'I will tell you more another time; but come, will you go home? my dinner is ready by this time, and you ſhall dine with me.'

'Talk not to me of dinners,' cries Amelia, 'my ſtomach is too full already.'

'Nay, but dear Madam,' anſwered Mrs Ellifon, —'let me beſeech you to go home with me. I do not care,' ſays ſhe, whiſpering, 'to ſpeak before ſome folks.'

'I have no ſecret, Madam, in the world,' replied Amelia aloud, 'which I would not communicate to this Lady: for I ſhall always acknowledge the higheſt obligations to her for the ſecrets ſhe hath imparted to me.'

'Madam,' ſaid Mrs Ellifon, 'I do not interfere with obligations. I am glad the Lady hath obliged you ſo much; and I wiſh all people were equally mindful of obligations. I hope I have omitted no opportunity of endeavouring to oblige Mrs Booth, as well as I have ſome other folks.'

'If by other folks, Madam, you mean me,' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'I confeſs, I ſincerely believe you intended the ſame obligation to us both: and I have the pleaſure to think it is owing to me that this lady is not as much obliged to you as I am.'

'I proteſt, Madam, I can hardly gueſs your meaning,' ſaid Mrs Ellifon.—'Do you really intend to affront me, Madam?'

'I intend to preſerve innocence and virtue, if it be in my power, Madam,' anſwered the other. 'And ſure nothing but the moſt eager reſolution to deſtroy it, could induce you to mention ſuch an appointment at ſuch a time.'

'I did not expect this treatment from you, Madam,' cries Mrs Ellifon: 'Such ingratitude I could not have believed, had it been reported to me by any other.'

'Such impudence,' anſwered Mrs Atkinſon, 'muſt 'exceed, I think, all belief: but when women once 'abandon that modeſty which is the characteriſtic of 'their ſex, they ſeldom ſet any bounds to their aſſu-'rance.

'I could not have believed this to have been in 'human nature,' cries Mrs Elliſon. 'Is this the wo-'man whom I have fed, have cloathed, have ſup-'ported? who owes to my charity, and my interceſ-'ſions, that ſhe is not at this day deſtitute of all the 'neceſſaries of life!'

'I own it all,' anſwered Mrs Atkinſon.—'And I 'add the favour of a maſquerade ticket to the number. 'Could I have thought, Madam, that you would, 'before my face, have aſked another lady to go to 'the ſame place with the ſame man!—But I aſk your 'pardon, I impute rather more aſſurance to you than 'you are miſtreſs of—You have endeavoured to keep 'the aſſignation a ſecret from me; and it was by 'mere accident only that I diſcovered it; unleſs there 'are ſome guardian angels, that in general protect 'innocence and virtue, though I may ſay I have not 'always found them ſo watchful.'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid Mrs Elliſon,' 'you are not 'worth my anſwer, nor will I ſtay a moment longer 'with ſuch a perſon.——So, Mrs Booth, you have 'your choice, Madam, whether you will go with me, 'or remain in the company of this lady.

'If ſo, Madam,' anſwered Mrs Booth, 'I ſhall 'not be long in determining to ſtay where I am.'

Mrs Elliſon then, caſting a look of great indigna-tion at both the ladies, made a ſhort ſpeech full of invectives againſt Mrs Atkinſon, and not without ob-lique hints of ingratitude againſt poor Amelia; after which ſhe burſt out of the room, and out of the houſe; and made haſte to her own home, in a condition of mind to which Fortune, without guilt, cannot, I be-lieve, reduce any one.

Indeed, how much the ſuperiority of miſery is on the ſide of wickedneſs, may appear to every reader who will compare the preſent ſituation of Amelia with that of Mrs Elliſon. Fortune had attacked the

Digitized by Google

former with almoſt the higheſt degree of her malice. She was involved in a ſcene of moſt exquiſite diſtreſs; and her huſband, her principal comfort, torn violently from her arms; yet her ſorrow, however exquiſite, was all ſoft and tender; nor was ſhe without many conſolations. Her caſe, however hard, was not abſolutely deſperate; for ſcarce any condition of fortune can be ſo. Art and induſtry, chance and friends, have often relieved the moſt diſtreſſed circumſtances, and converted them into opulence. In all theſe ſhe had hopes on this ſide the grave, and perfect virtue and innocence gave her the ſtrongeſt aſſurances on the other. Whereas, in the boſom of Mrs Elliſon all was ſtorm and tempeſt; anger, revenge, fear, and pride, like ſo many raging furies, poſſeſſed her mind, and tortured her with diſappointment and ſhame. Loſs of reputation, which is generally irreparable, was to be her lot; loſs of friends is of this the certain conſequence; all on this ſide the grave appeared dreary and comfortleſs; and endleſs miſery, on the other, cloſed the gloomy proſpect.

Hence, my worthy reader, conſole thyſelf, that however few of the other good things of life are thy lot, the beſt of all things, which is innocence, is always within thy own power; and though fortune may make thee often unhappy, ſhe can never make thee completely and irreparably miſerable without thy own conſent.

CHAP. IV.

Containing, among many matters, the exemplary behaviour of Colonel James.

WHEN Mrs Elliſon was departed, Mrs Atkinſon began to apply all her art to ſooth and comfort Amelia; but was preſently prevented by her: 'I am aſhamed, dear Madam,' ſaid Amelia, 'of 'having indulged my affliction ſo much at your ex- 'pence. The ſuddenneſs of the occaſion is my only 'excuſe; for had I had time to ſummon my reſolution 'to my aſſiſtance, I hope I am miſtreſs of more pati-

Digitized by Google

'ence than you have hitherto ſeen me exert. I know, 'Madam, in my unwarrantable exceſſes, I have been 'guilty of many tranſgreſſions. Firſt, againſt that 'divine will and pleaſure, without whoſe permiſſion 'at leaſt, no human accident can happen: in the next 'place, Madam, if any thing can aggravate ſuch 'a fault, I have tranſgreſſed the laws of friendſhip 'as well as decency, in throwing upon you ſome part 'of the load of my grief; and again, I have ſinned 'againſt common ſenſe, which ſhould teach me, in-'ſtead of weakly and heavily lamenting my misfor-'tunes, to rouſe all my ſpirits to remove them. In 'this light, I am ſhocked at my own folly, and am 'reſolved to leave my children under your care, and 'go directly to my huſband. I may comfort him. I 'may aſſiſt him. I may relieve him. There is no-'thing now too difficult for me to undertake.'

Mrs Atkinſon greatly approved and complimented her friend on all the former part of her ſpeech, except what related to herſelf, on which ſhe ſpoke very civilly, and I believe with great truth; but as to her determination of going to her huſband, ſhe endeavoured to diſſuade her, at leaſt ſhe begged her to defer it for the preſent, and till the ſerjeant returned home. She then reminded Amelia that it was now paſt five in the afternoon, and that ſhe had not taken any refreſhment but a diſh of tea the whole day, and deſired ſhe would give her leave to procure her a chick, or any thing ſhe liked better, for her dinner.

Amelia thanked her friend, and ſaid, ſhe would ſit down with her to whatever ſhe pleaſed; 'but, if 'I do not eat,' ſaid ſhe, 'I would not have you im-'pute it to any thing but want of appetite: for I aſ-'ſure you, all things are equally indifferent to me. I 'am more ſolicitous about theſe poor little things, 'who have not been uſed to faſt ſo long. Heaven 'knows what may hereafter be their fate!'

Mrs Atkinſon bid her hope the beſt, and then recommended the children to the care of her maid.

And now arrived a ſervant from Mrs James, with an invitation to Captain Booth and his lady, to dine with the Colonel the day after the next. This a little perplexed

Digitized by Google

perplexed Amelia; but after a ſhort conſideration ſhe diſpatched an anſwer to Mrs James, in which ſhe conciſely informed her of what had happened.

The honeſt Serjeant, who had been on his legs almoſt the whole day, now returned, and brought Amelia a ſhort letter from her huſband; in which he gave her the moſt ſolemn aſſurances of his health and ſpirits, and begged her, with great earneſtneſs, to take care to preſerve her own; which, if ſhe did, he ſaid he had no doubt but that they ſhould ſhortly be happy. He added ſomething of hopes from my Lord, with which Mrs Elliſon had amuſed him; and which ſerved only to deſtroy the comfort that Amelia received from the reſt of his letter.

Whilſt Amelia, the Serjeant and his lady were engaged in a cold collation, for which purpoſe a cold chick was procured from the tavern for the ladies, and two pound of cold beef for the Serjeant; a violent knocking was heard at the door, and preſently afterwards Colonel James entered the room. After proper compliments had paſt, the Colonel told Amelia, that her letter was brought to Mrs James while they were at table, and that, on her ſhewing it him, he had immediately roſe up, made an apology to his company, and took a chair to her. He ſpoke to her with great tenderneſs on the occaſion, and deſired her to make herſelf eaſy; aſſuring her, that he would leave nothing in his power undone to ſerve her huſband. He then gave her an invitation, in his wife's name, to his own houſe, in the moſt preſſing manner.

Amelia returned him very hearty thanks for all his kind offers; but begged to decline that of an apartment in his houſe. She ſaid, as ſhe could not leave her children, ſo neither could ſhe think of bringing ſuch a trouble with her into his family; and though the Colonel gave her many aſſurances that her children as well as herſelf would be very welcome to Mrs James, and even betook himſelf to entreaties, ſhe ſtill perſiſted obſtinately in her refuſal.

In real truth, Amelia had taken a vaſt affection for Mrs Atkinſon, of the comfort of whoſe company ſhe could not bear to be deprived in her diſtreſs; nor to

Digitized by Google

exchange it for that of Mrs James, to whom she had lately conceived no little dislike.

The Colonel, when he found he could not prevail with Amelia to accept his invitation, desisted from any further solicitations. He then took a bank-bill of fifty pounds from his pocket-book, and said——. 'You will pardon me, dear Madam, if I chuse to impute your refusal of my house, rather to a dislike of my wife, who I will not pretend to be the most agreeable of women (all men,' said he, sighing, have not Captain Booth's fortune), than to any aversion or anger to me. I must insist upon it therefore, to make your present habitation as easy to you as possible.—I hope, Madam, you will not deny me this happiness; I beg you will honour me with the acceptance of this trifle. He then put the note into her hand, and declared that the honour of touching it was worth a hundred times that sum.'

'I protest, Colonel James,' cried Amelia blushing, 'I know not what to do or say, your goodness so greatly confounds me. Can I, who am so well acquainted with the many great obligations Mr Booth already hath to your generosity, consent that you should add more to a debt we never can pay?'—

The Colonel stopt her short, protesting that she misplaced the obligation: for that, if to confer the highest happiness was to oblige, he was obliged to her acceptance. 'And I do assure you, Madam,' said he, 'if this trifling sum, or a much larger, can contribute to your ease, I shall consider myself as the happiest man upon earth, in being able to supply it; and you, Madam, my greatest benefactor in receiving it.'

Amelia then put the note in her pocket; and they entered into a conversation, in which many civil things were said on both sides; but what was chiefly worth remark was, that Amelia had almost her husband constantly in her mouth, and the Colonel never mentioned him: the former seemed desirous to lay all obligations, as much as possible, to the account of her husband; and the latter endeavoured with the utmost

Digitized by Google

moſt delicacy to inſinuate that her happineſs was the main and indeed only point which he had in view.

Amelia had made no doubt, at the Colonel's firſt appearance, but that he intended to go directly to her huſband. When he dropt therefore a hint of his intention to viſit him next morning, ſhe appeared viſibly ſhocked at the delay. The Colonel perceiving this, ſaid, 'However inconvenient it may be; yet, 'Madam, if it will oblige you, or if you deſire it, I 'will even go to-night.' Amelia anſwered, 'My 'huſband would be far from deſiring to derive any 'good from your inconvenience; but if you put it to 'me, I muſt be excuſed for ſaying, I deſire nothing 'more in the world than to ſend him ſo great a com-'fort as I know he will receive from the preſence of 'ſuch a friend.' 'Then to ſhew you, Madam,' cries the Colonel, 'that I deſire nothing more in the 'world than to give you pleaſure, I will go to him 'immediately.'

Amelia then bethought herſelf of the Serjeant, and told the Colonel, his old acquaintance Atkinſon, whom he had known at Gibraltar, was then in the houſe, and would conduct him to the place. The Serjeant was immediately called in, paid his reſpects to the Colonel, and was acknowledged by him. They both immediately ſet forward, Amelia to the utmoſt of her power preſſing their departure.

Mrs Atkinſon now returned to Amelia, and was by her acquainted with the Colonel's late generoſity: for her heart ſo boiled over with gratitude, that ſhe could not conceal the ebullition. Amelia likewiſe gave her friend a full narrative of the Colonel's former behaviour and friendſhip to her huſband, as well abroad as in England; and ended with declaring, that ſhe believed him to be the moſt generous man upon earth.

Mrs Atkinſon agreed with Amelia's concluſion, and ſaid ſhe was glad to hear there was any ſuch man. They then proceeded with the Children to the tea-table, where panegyric, and not ſcandal, was the topic of their converſation; and of this panegyric the Colonel was the ſubject; both the ladies ſeeming to vie

Digitized by Google

with each other, in celebrating the praiſes of his goodneſs.

CHAP. V.

Comments upon authors.

HAVING left Amelia in as comfortable a ſituation as could poſſibly be expected, her immediate diſtreſſes relieved, and her heart filled with great hopes from the friendſhip of the Colonel; we will now return to Booth, who, when the attorney and ſerjeant had left him, received a viſit from that great author of whom honourable mention is made in our ſecond chapter.

Booth, as the reader may be pleaſed to remember, was a very good maſter of the claſſics; for his father, though he deſigned his ſon for the army, did not think it neceſſary to breed him up a blockhead. He did not, perhaps, imagine that a competent ſhare of Latin or Greek would make his ſon either a pedant or a coward. He conſidered likewiſe, probably, that the life of a ſoldier is in general a life of idleneſs; and might think that the ſpare hours of an officer in country quarters would be as well employed with a book, as in ſauntering about the ſtreets, loitering in a coffee-houſe, ſotting in a tavern, or in laying ſchemes to debauch and ruin a ſet of harmleſs ignorant country girls.

As Booth was therefore what might well be called in this age at leaſt, a man of learning, he began to diſcourſe our author on ſubjects of literature. 'I 'think, Sir,' ſays he, 'that Doctor Swift hath been 'generally allowed by the critics in this kingdom, to 'be the greateſt maſter of humour that ever wrote. 'Indeed, I allow him to have poſſeſſed moſt admi'rable talents of this kind; and if Rabelais was his 'maſter, I think he proves the truth of the common 'Greek proverb-----That the ſcholar is often ſuperior 'to the maſter. As to Cervantes, I do not think we 'can make any juſt compariſon; for though Mr Pope 'compliments him with ſometimes taking Cervantes' 'ſerious

Digitized by Google

'serious air'——'I remember the paſſage,' cried the author:

"Oh thou, whatever title pleaſe thine ear,
"Dean, Drapier, Bickerſtaff or Gulliver;
"Whether you take Cervantes' ſerious air,
"Or laugh and ſhake in Rabelais' eaſy chair."

'You are right, Sir,' ſaid Booth; 'but though I 'ſhould agree that the Doctor hath ſometimes conde-'ſcended to imitate Rabelais, I do not remember to 'have ſeen in his works the leaſt attempt in the man-'ner of Cervantes. But there is one in his own way, 'and whom I am convinced he ſtudied above all 'others——You gueſs, I believe, I am going to 'name Lucian. This author, I ſay, I am convinced 'he followed: but I think he followed him at a 'diſtance; as, to ſay the truth, every other writer 'of this kind hath done in my opinion: for none, 'I think, hath yet equalled him. I agree, indeed, 'entirely with Mr Moile, in his Diſcourſe on the 'age of the Philopatris, when he gives him the 'epithet of the incomparable Lucian; and incom-'parable, I believe, he will remain as long as the 'language in which he wrote ſhall endure. What 'an inimitable piece of humour is his Cock!'—'I 'remember it very well,' cries the author, 'his ſtory 'of a Cock and a Bull is excellent.' Booth ſtared at this, and aſked the author what he meant by the Bull? 'Nay,' anſwered he, 'I don't know very 'well, upon my ſoul. It is a long time ſince I read 'him. I learnt him all over at ſchool, I have not 'read him much ſince. And pray, Sir,' ſaid he, 'how do you like his Pharſalia? don't you think Mr 'Rowe's tranſlation a very fine one?' Booth replied, 'I believe we are talking of different authors. The 'Pharſalia, which Mr Rowe tranſlated, was written 'by Lucan; but I have been ſpeaking of Lucian, a 'Greek writer, and, in my opinion, the greateſt in 'the humourous way, that ever the world produced.' 'Ay!' cries the author, 'he was indeed ſo, a very 'excellent writer indeed. I fancy a tranſlation of

'him

Digitized by Google

'him would ſell very well.' 'I do not know, in-
'deed,' cries Booth. 'A good tranſlation of him
'would be a valuable book. I have ſeen a wretched
'one publiſhed by Mr Dryden, but tranſlated by
'others, who in many places have miſunderſtood Lu-
'cian's meaning, and have no where preſerved the
'ſpirit of the original.' 'That is great pity,' ſays
the author. 'Pray, Sir, is he well tranſlated into
'French?' Booth anſwered, he could not tell; but
that he doubted it very much, having never ſeen a
good verſion into that language, out of the Greek.
'To confeſs the truth, I believe,' ſaid he, 'the French
'tranſlators have generally conſulted the Latin only;
'which, in ſome of the few Greek writers I have
'read, is intolerably bad. And as the Engliſh tranſ-
'lators, for the moſt part, purſue the French, we
'may eaſily gueſs, what ſpirit thoſe copies of bad
'copies muſt preſerve of the original.'

'Egad, you are a ſhrewd gueſſer,' cries the author,
'I am glad the bookſellers have not your ſagacity.
'But how ſhould it be otherwiſe, conſidering the
'price they pay by the ſheet? The Greek, you will
'allow, is a hard language; and there are few gen-
'tlemen that write, who can read it without a good
'lexicon. Now, Sir, if we were to afford time to
'find out the true meaning of words, a gentleman
'would not get bread and cheeſe by his work. If
'one was to be paid, indeed, as Mr Pope was for his
'Homer—Pray, Sir, don't you think that the beſt
'tranſlation in the world?'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries Booth, 'I think, though it
'is certainly a noble paraphraſe, and of itſelf a fine
'poem, yet, in ſome places, it is no tranſlation at
'all. In the very beginning, for inſtance, he hath
'not rendered the true ſenſe of the author. Homer
'invokes his Muſe in the five firſt lines of the Iliad;
'and, at the end of the fifth, he gives his reaſon:

"Διὸς δ' ἐτελείετο βουλή.

'For all theſe things,' ſays he, 'were brought
'about by the decree of Jupiter; and, therefore, he
'ſuppoſes

'ſuppoſes their true ſources are known only to the 'deities. Now, the tranſlation takes no more notice 'of the ΔΕ, than if no ſuch word had been there.

'Very poſſibly,' anſwered the author; 'it is a 'long time ſince I read the original. Perhaps then, 'he followed the French tranſlations. I obſerve, in- 'deed, he talks much in the notes of Madam Dacier 'and Monſieur Euſtathius.'

Booth had now received conviction enough of his friend's knowledge of the Greek language; without attempting, therefore, to ſet him right, he made a ſudden tranſition to the Latin. 'Pray, Sir,' ſaid he, 'as you have mentioned Rowe's tranſlation of the 'Pharſalia, do you remember how he hath rendered 'that paſſage in the character of Cato?

'——*Veneriſque huic maximus uſus*
'*Progenies; urbi pater eſt, urbique maritus.*'

'For I apprehend that paſſage is generally miſunder- 'derſtood.'

'I really do not remember,' anſwered the author, '——Pray, Sir, what do you take to be the mean- 'ing?'

'I apprehend, Sir,' replied Booth, 'that by theſe 'words, *Urbi pater eſt, urbique maritus*, Cato is re- 'preſented as the father and huſband to the city of 'Rome.'

'Very true, Sir,' cries the author; 'very fine, in- 'deed.——Not only the father of his country, but the 'huſband too; very noble, truly.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' cries Booth, 'I do not conceive 'that to have been Lucan's meaning. If you pleaſe 'to obſerve the context: Lucan, having commended 'the temperance of Cato, in the inſtances of diet and 'clothes, proceeds to venereal pleaſures; of which, 'ſays the poet, his principal uſe was procreation: then 'he adds, *Urbi pater eſt, urbique maritus*; that he 'became a father and a huſband, for the ſake only of 'the city.'

'Upon my word, that's true,' cries the author; 'I 'did not think of it. It is much finer than the other.

'—*Urbis*

Digitized by Google

'—*Urbis pater est*—what is the other?—ay—*Urbis maritus.*——It is certainly as you say, Sir.'

Booth was, by this, pretty well satisfied of the author's profound learning; however, he was willing to try him a little further. He asked him therefore, what was his opinion of Lucan in general, and in what class of writers he ranked him.

The author stared a little at this question; and, after some hesitation, answered, 'Certainly, Sir, I think he is a fine writer, and a very great poet.'

'I am very much of the same opinion,' cries Booth, 'but where do you class him, next to what poet do you place him?'

'Let me see,' cries the author, 'where do I class him! next to whom do I place him!—Ay!—why! —why, pray, where do you yourself place him?'

'Why, surely,' cries Booth, 'if he is not to be placed in the first rank, with Homer and Virgil, and Milton——I think clearly, he is at the head of the second; before either Statius, or Silius Italicus.—Though I allow to each of these their merits; but, perhaps an epic poem was beyond the genius of either. I own, I have often thought, if Statius had ventured no farther than Ovid or Claudian, he would have succeeded better; for his Sylvæ are, in my opinion, much better than his Thebais.'

'I believe I was of the same opinion formerly,' said the author.

'And for what reason have you altered it?' cries Booth.

'I have not altered it,' answered the author; 'but to tell you the truth, I have not any opinion at all about these matters at present. I do not trouble my head much with poetry; for there is no encouragement to such studies in this age. It is true, indeed, I have now and then wrote a poem or two for the Magazines; but I never intend to write any more: for a gentleman is not paid for his time. A sheet is a sheet with the booksellers; and whether it be in prose or verse, they make no difference: though certainly there is as much difference to a gentleman in the work, as there is to a tailor be-

'tween

Digitized by Google

'tween making a plain and a laced ſuit. Rhimes are 'difficult things; they are ſtubborn things, Sir. I 'have been ſometimes longer in tagging a couplet, 'than I have been in writing a ſpeech on the ſide of 'the oppoſition, which hath been read with great ap-'plauſe all over the kingdom.'

'I am glad you are pleaſed to confirm that,' cries Booth: 'for I proteſt it was an entire ſecret to me 'till this day. I was ſo perfectly ignorant, that I 'thought the ſpeeches, publiſhed in the Magazines, 'were really made by the members themſelves.'

'Some of them, and I believe I may, without 'vanity, ſay, the beſt,' cries the Author, 'are all 'the production of my own pen; but, I believe, I 'ſhall leave it off ſoon, unleſs a ſheet of ſpeech will 'fetch more than it does at preſent. In truth, the 'romance-writing is the only branch of our buſineſs 'now, that is worth following. Goods of that ſort 'have had ſo much ſucceſs lately in the market, that 'a bookſeller ſcarce cares what he bids for them. 'And it is certainly the eaſieſt work in the world; 'you may write it almoſt as faſt as you can ſet pen to 'paper; and if you interlard it with a little ſcandal, 'a little abuſe on ſome living characters of note, you 'cannot fail of ſucceſs.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' cries Booth, 'you have 'greatly inſtructed me. I could not have imagined 'there had been ſo much regularity in the trade of 'writing, as you are pleaſed to mention; by what I 'can perceive, the pen and ink is likely to become 'the ſtaple commodity of the kingdom.'

'Alas! Sir,' anſwered the Author, 'it is over-'ſtocked——The market is over-ſtocked. There is 'no encouragement to merit, no patrons. I have 'been theſe five years ſoliciting a ſubſcription for my 'new tranſlation of Ovid's Metamorphoſes, with notes 'explanatory, hiſtorical, and critical; and I have 'ſcarce collected five hundred names yet.'

The mention of this tranſlation a little ſurpriſed Booth; not only as the author had juſt declared his intentions to forſake the tuneful Muſes, but for ſome other reaſons, which he had collected from his con-

Digitized by Google

verſation with our author, he little expected to hear of a propoſal to tranſlate one of the Latin poets. He proceeded, therefore, to catechiſe him a little farther; and by his anſwers was fully ſatisfied, that he had the very ſame acquaintance with Ovid, that he had appeared to have with Lucan.

The author then pulled out a bundle of papers, containing propoſals for his ſubſcription, and receipts; and addreſſing himſelf to Booth, ſaid, 'Though the 'place in which we meet, Sir, is an improper place to 'ſolicit favours of this kind; yet, perhaps, it may be 'in your power to ſerve me, if you will charge your 'pockets with ſome of theſe.' Booth was juſt offering at an excuſe, when the bailiff introduced Colonel James, and the Serjeant.

The unexpected viſit of a beloved friend to a man in affliction, eſpecially in Mr Booth's ſituation, is a comfort which can ſcarce be equalled; not barely from the hopes of relief, or redreſs, by his aſſiſtance; but as it is an evidence of ſincere friendſhip which ſcarce admits of any doubt or ſuſpicion. Such an inſtance doth, indeed, make a man amends for all ordinary troubles and diſtreſſes; and we ought to thiuk ourſelves gainers, by having had ſuch an opportunity of diſcovering, that we are poſſeſſed of one of the moſt valuable of all human poſſeſſions.

Booth was ſo tranſported at the ſight of the Colonel, that he dropt the propoſals which the author had put into his hand, and burſt forth into the higheſt profeſſions of gratitude to his friend, who behaved very properly on his ſide, and ſaid every thing which became the mouth of a friend on the occaſion.

It is true, indeed, he ſeemed not moved equally, either with Booth or the Serjeant; both whoſe eyes watered at the ſcene. In truth, the Colonel, though a very generous man, had not the leaſt grain of tenderneſs in his diſpoſition. His mind was formed of thoſe firm materials, of which nature formerly hammered out the Stoic, and upon which the ſorrows of no man living could make an impreſſion. A man of this temper, who doth not much value danger, will fight for the perſon he calls his friend; and the man that hath but

Digitized by Google

but little value for his money will give it him; but such friendship is never to be absolutely depended on; for whenever the favourite passion interposes with it, it is sure to subside and vanish into air. Whereas, the man whose tender disposition really feels the miseries of another, will endeavour to relieve them for his own sake; and, in such a mind, friendship will often get the superiority over every other passion.

But from whatever motive it sprung, the Colonel's behaviour to Booth seemed truly amiable; and so it appeared to the Author, who took the first occasion to applaud it in a very florid oration; which the reader, when he recollects that he was a speech-maker by profession, will not be surprised at; nor, perhaps, will be much more surprised, that he soon after took an occasion of clapping a proposal into the Colonel's hands; holding at the same time a receipt very visible in his own.

The Colonel received both, and gave the Author a guinea in exchange, which was double the sum mentioned in the receipt; for which the Author made a low bow, and very politely took his leave, saying, 'I suppose, gentlemen, you may have some private 'business together; I heartily wish a speedy end to 'your confinement: and I congratulate you on the 'possessing so great, so noble, and so generous a 'friend.'

CHAP. VI.

Which inclines rather to satire than panegyric.

THE Colonel had the curiosity to ask Booth the name of the gentleman, who, in the vulgar language, had struck, or taken him in for a guinea, with so much ease and dexterity. Booth answered, he did not know his name; all that he knew of him was, that he was the most impudent and illiterate fellow he had ever seen; and that, by his own account, he was the author of most of the wonderful productions of the age. 'Perhaps,' said he, 'it may look uncha-'ritable in me, to blame you for your generosity;

Digitized by Google

'but I am convinced the fellow hath not the leaſt merit or capacity; and you have ſubſcribed to the moſt horrid traſh that ever was publiſhed!'

'I care not a farthing what he publiſhes,' cries the Colonel. 'Heaven forbid, I ſhould be obliged to read half the nonſenſe I have ſubſcribed to.'

'But, don't you think,' ſaid Booth, 'that by ſuch indiſcriminate encouragement of authors, you do a real miſchief to the ſociety? by propagating the ſubſcriptions of ſuch fellows, people are tired out, and with-hold their contributions to men of real merit; and, at the ſame time, you are contributing to fill the world, not only with nonſenſe, but with all the ſcurrility, indecency, and profaneneſs with which the age abounds, and with which all bad writers ſupply the defect of genius.'

'Pugh!' cries the Colonel, 'I never conſider theſe matters. Good or bad, it is all one to me; but there's an acquaintance of mine, and a man of great wit too, that thinks the worſt the beſt, as they are the ſureſt to make him laugh.'

'I aſk pardon, Sir,' ſays the Serjeant; 'but I wiſh your honour would conſider your own affairs a little; for it grows late in the evening.'

'The Serjeant ſays true,' anſwered the Colonel. 'What is it you intend to do?'

'Faith, Colonel, I know not what I ſhall do. My affairs ſeem ſo irreparable, that I have been driving them, as much as poſſibly I could, from my mind. If I was to ſuffer alone, I think, I could bear them with ſome philoſophy; but when I conſider who are to be the ſharers in my fortune—the deareſt of children; and the beſt, the worthieſt, and the nobleſt of women; pardon me, my dear friend; theſe ſenſations are above me, they convert me into a woman; they drive me to deſpair, to madneſs.'

The Colonel adviſed him to command himſelf: and told him, this was not the way to retrieve his fortune. 'As to me, my dear Booth,' ſaid he, 'you know, you may command me as far as is really within my power.'

Booth

Digitized by Google

Booth answered eagerly, that he was so far from expecting any more favours from the Colonel, that he had resolved not to let him know any thing of his misfortune. 'No, my dear friend,' cries he, 'I am 'too much obliged to you already;' and then burst into many fervent expressions of gratitude; till the Colonel himself stopped him, and begged him to give an account of the debt or debts for which he was detained in that horrid place.

Booth answered, he could not be very exact; but he feared it was upward of four hundred pounds.

'It is but three hundred pounds, indeed, Sir,' cries the Serjeant; 'if you can raise three hundred pounds, 'you are a free man this moment.'

Booth, who did not apprehend the generous meaning of the Serjeant, as well as, I believe, the reader will, answered, he was mistaken: that he had computed his debts, and they amounted to upwards of four hundred pounds; nay, that the bailiff had shewn him writs for above that sum.

'Whether your debts are three or four hundred,' cries the Colonel, 'the present business is to give bail 'only; and then you will have some time to try your 'friends. I think you might get a company abroad; 'and then I would advance the money on the secu-'rity of half your pay: and, in the mean time, I 'will be one of your bail with all my heart.'

While Booth poured forth his gratitude for all this kindness, the Serjeant ran down stairs for the bailiff; and shortly after returned with him into the room.

The bailiff, being informed that the Colonel offered to be bail for his prisoner, answered a little surlily, 'Well, Sir, and who will be the other? you know, 'I suppose, there must be two; and I must have 'time to enquire after them.'

The Colonel replied, 'I believe, Sir, I am well 'known to be responsible for a much larger sum than 'your demand on this gentleman; but if your forms 'require two I suppose the Serjeant here will do for 'the other.'

Digitized by Google

'I don't know the Serjeant, nor you either, Sir,' cries Bondum; 'and if you propose yourselves bail 'for the gentleman, I must have time to enquire af-'ter you.'

'You need very little time to enquire after me,' says the Colonel; 'for I can send for several of the 'law, whom I suppose you know, to satisfy you; 'but consider, it is very late.'

'Yes, Sir,' answered Bondum, 'I do consider it 'is too late for the Captain to be bailed to-night.'

'What do you mean by too late?' cries the Colonel.

'I mean, Sir, that I must search the office, and that is 'now shut up; for if my Lord Mayor and the court of 'aldermen would be bound for him, I would not dis-'charge him, till I had searched the office.'

'How, Sir,' cries the Colonel, 'hath the law of 'England no more regard for the liberty of the sub-'ject, than to suffer such fellows as you to detain a 'man in custody for debt, when he can give undeni-'able security?'

'Don't fellow me,' said the bailiff, 'I am as good a 'fellow as yourself, I believe, though you have that 'ribbond in your hat there.'

'Do you know who you are speaking to?' said the Serjeant. 'Do you know you are talking to a Colonel 'of the army?'

'What's a Colonel of the army to me!'—— cries the Bailiff. 'I have had as good as he in my cus-'tody before now.'

'And a member of parliament,'—— cries the Serjeant.

'Is the gentleman a member of parliament?— 'Well, and what harm have I said—I am sure I meant 'no harm, and if his honour is offended, I ask his 'pardon; to be sure, his honour must know that the 'sheriff is answerable for all the writs in the office, 'though they were never so many, and I am answer-'able to the sheriff. I am sure the Captain can't say 'that I have shewn him any manner of incivility since 'he hath been here?—And I hope, honourable Sir,' cries he, turning to the Colonel, 'you don't take 'any thing amiss that I said, or meant by way of 'distre-

Digitized by Google

'disrespect, or any such matter. I did not, indeed, 'as the gentleman here says, know who I was speak 'ing to; but I did not say any thing uncivil as I 'know of, and I hope no offence.'

The Colonel was more easily pacified than might have been expected, and told the bailiff, that if it was against the rules of law to discharge Mr Booth that evening, he must be contented. He then addressed himself to his friend, and began to prescribe comfort and patience to him; saying he must rest satisfied with his confinement that night, and the next morning he promised to visit him again.

Booth answered, that as for himself, the lying one night in any place was very little worth his regard. 'You and I, my dear friend, have both spent our 'evening in a worse situation than I shall in this 'house. All my concern is for my poor Amelia, 'whose sufferings on account of my absence I know, 'and I feel with unspeakable tenderness. Could I 'be assured she was tolerably easy, I could be con-'tented in chains or in a dungeon.'

'Give yourself no concern on her account,' said the Colonel. 'I will wait on her myself, though I 'break an engagement for that purpose, and will give 'her such assurances as I am convinced will make 'her perfectly easy.'

Booth embraced his friend, and weeping over him, paid his acknowledgements with tears, for all his goodness. In words, indeed, he was not able to thank him; for gratitude joining with his other passions almost choaked him, and stopt his utterance.

After a short scene, in which nothing past worth recounting, the Colonel bid his friend good night; and leaving the serjeant with him, made the best of his way back to Amelia.

CHAP. VII.

Worthy a very serious perusal.

THE Colonel found Amelia sitting very disconsolate with Mrs Atkinson. He entered the room with an air of great gaiety, assured Amelia that

Digitized by Google

her husband was perfectly well, and that he hoped the next day he would again be with her.

Amelia was a little comforted at this account; and vented many grateful expressions to the Colonel, for his unparalleled friendship, as she was pleased to call it. She could not, however, help giving way soon after to a sigh at the thoughts of her husband's bondage, and declared that night would be the longest she had ever known.

'This lady, Madam,' cries the Colonel, 'must 'endeavour to make it shorter. And if you will give 'me leave, I will join in the same endeavour.' Then, after some more consolatory speeches, the Colonel attempted to give a gay turn to the discourse; and said, 'I was engaged to have spent this evening dis-'agreeably at Ranelagh, with a set of company I did 'not like. How vastly am I obliged to you, dear 'Mrs Booth, that I pass it so infinitely more to my 'satisfaction!'

'Indeed, Colonel,' said Amelia, 'I am convinced 'that to a mind so rightly turned as yours, there must 'be a much sweeter relish in the highest offices of 'friendship, than in any pleasures which the gayest 'public places can afford.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' said the Colonel, 'you 'now do me no more than justice. I have, and al-'ways had, the utmost indifference for such pleasures. 'Indeed I hardly allow them worthy of that name, 'or, if they are so at all, it is in a very low degree. 'In my opinion, the highest friendship must always 'lead us to the highest pleasure.'

Here Amelia entered into a long dissertation on friendship, in which she pointed several times directly at the Colonel as the hero of her tale.

The Colonel highly applauded all her sentiments; and when he could not avoid taking the compliment to himself, he received it with a most respectful bow. He then tried his hand likewise at description, in which he found means to repay all Amelia's panegyric in kind. This though he did with all possible delicacy, yet a curious observer might have been apt to suspect that

Digitized by Google

that it was chiefly on her account that the Colonel had avoided the masquerade.

In discourses of this kind they passed the evening, till it was very late, the Colonel never offering to stir from his chair before the clock had struck one; when he thought, perhaps, that decency obliged him to take his leave.

As soon as he was gone, Mrs Atkinson said to Mrs Booth, 'I think, Madam, you told me this afternoon, 'that the Colonel was married.'

Amelia answered, she did so.

'I think likewise, Madam,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'you 'was acquainted with the Colonel's lady.'

Amelia answered, that she had been extremely intimate with her abroad.

'Is she young and handsome?' said Mrs Atkinson. 'In short, pray, was it a match of love or conve-'nience?'

Amelia answered, entirely of love, she believed, on his side: for that the lady had little or no fortune.

'I am very glad to hear it,' said Mrs Atkinson; 'for I am sure the Colonel is in love with somebody. 'I think, I never saw a more luscious picture of love 'drawn than that which he was pleased to give us, 'as the portraiture of friendship. I have read, in-'deed, of Pylades and Orestes, Damon and Pythias, 'and other great friends of old; nay, I sometimes 'flatter myself that I am capable of being a friend 'myself: but as for that fine, soft, tender, delicate 'passion, which he was pleased to describe, I am con-'vinced there must go a he and a she to the compo-'sition.'

'Upon my word, my dear, you are mistaken,' cries Amelia. 'If you had known the friendship which 'hath always subsisted between the Colonel and my 'husband, you would not imagine it possible for any 'description to exceed it. Nay, I think his beha-'viour this very day is sufficient to convince you.'

'I own what he hath done to-day hath great me-'rit,' said Mrs Atkinson; 'and yet from what he hath 'said to-night—You will pardon me, dear Madam;

'parhaps

Digitized by Google

'perhaps I am too quick-ſighted in my obſervations, 'nay, I am afraid I am even impertinent.'

'Fy upon it,' cries Amelia, 'how can you talk in 'that ſtrain? do you imagine I expect ceremony? '——Pray, ſpeak what you think with the utmoſt 'freedom.'

'Did he not then,' ſaid Mrs Atkinſon, 'repeat 'the words, *the fineſt woman in the world*, more than 'once? did he not make uſe of an expreſſion which 'might have become the mouth of Oroondates him-'ſelf?—If I remember, the words were theſe, 'That "had he been Alexander the Great, he ſhould have "thought it more glory to have wiped a tear from "the bright eyes of Statira, than to have conquered "fifty worlds,'

'Did he ſay ſo?' cries Amelia,—'I think he did 'ſay ſomething like it; but my thoughts were ſo full 'of my huſband that I took little notice. But what 'would you infer from what he ſaid? I hope you 'don't think he is in love with me!'

'I hope he doth not think ſo himſelf,' anſwered Mrs Atkinſon; 'though when he mentioned the 'bright eyes of Statira, he fixed his own eyes on yours 'with the moſt languiſhing air I ever beheld.'

Amelia was going to anſwer, when the Serjeant arrived, and then ſhe immediately fell to enquiring after her huſband; and received ſuch ſatisfactory anſwers to all her many queſtions concerning him, that ſhe expreſſed great pleaſure. Theſe ideas ſo poſſeſſed her mind, that without once caſting her thoughts on any other matters, ſhe took her leave of the ſerjeant and his lady, and repaired to bed to her children, in a room which Mrs Atkinſon had provided her in the ſame houſe; where we will at preſent with her a good night.

CHAP. VIII.

Conſiſting of grave matters.

WHILE innocence and chearful hope, in ſpite of the malice of Fortune, cloſed the eyes of the

Digitized by Google

the gentle Amelia, on her homely bed, and she enjoyed a sweet and profound sleep, the Colonel lay restless all night on his down; his mind was affected with a kind of ague fit; sometimes scorched up with flaming desires, and again chilled with the coldest despair.

There is a time, I think, acording to one of our poets, 'When lust and envy sleep.' This, I suppose, is when they are well gorged with the food they most delight in; but while either of these are hungry,

"Nor poppy, nor mandragora,
"Nor all the drousy syrups of the East,
"Will ever medicine them to slumber."

The Colonel was, at present, unhappily tormented by both these fiends. His last evening's conversation with Amelia had done his business effectually. The many kind words she had spoken to him, the many kind looks she had given him, as being, she conceived, the friend and preserver of her husband, had made an entire conquest of his heart. Thus, the very love which she bore him, as the person to whom her little family were to owe their preservation and happiness, inspired him with thoughts of sinking them all in the lowest abyss of ruin and misery; and while she smiled with all her sweetness on the supposed friend of her husband, she was converting that friend into his most bitter enemy.

"Friendship, take heed; if woman interfere,
"Be sure the hour of thy destruction's near."

These are the lines of Vanburgh; and the sentiment is better than the poetry. To say the truth, as a handsome wife is the cause and cement of many false friendships, she is often too liable to destroy the real ones.

Thus the object of the Colonel's lust very plainly appears; but the object of his envy may be more difficult to discover. Nature and Fortune had seemed to strive with a kind of rivalship, which should bestow most on the

Digitized by Google

the Colonel. The former had given him person, parts and complexion, in all which he was superior to almost every other man. The latter had given him rank in life, and riches, both in a very eminent degree. Whom then should this happy man envy? Here, lest ambition should mislead the reader to search the palaces of the great, we will direct him at once to Gray's-inn Lane; where, in a miserable bed, in a miserable room, he will see a miserable broken Lieutenant, in a miserable condition, with several heavy years on his back, and without a penny in his pocket. This, and no other, was the object of the Colonel's envy. And why? because this wretch was possessed of the affections of a poor little lamb, which all the wolf flocks that were within the power and reach of the Colonel, could not prevent that glutton's longing for. And sure this image of the lamb is not improperly adduced on this occasion: for what was the Colonel's desire but to lead this poor lamb, as it were, to the slaughter, in order to purchase a feast of a few days by her final destruction, and to tear her away from the arms of one where she was sure of being fondled and caressed all the days of her life?

While the Colonel was agitated by these thoughts, his greatest comfort was, that Amelia and Booth were now separated, and his greatest terror was of their coming again together. From wishes therefore he began to meditate designs; and so far was he from any intention of procuring the liberty of his friend, that he began to form schemes of prolonging his confinement, till he could procure some means of sending him far away from her; in which case he doubted not but of succeeding in all he desired.

He was forming this plan in his mind, when a servant informed him, that one Serjeant Atkinson desired to speak with his honour. The Serjeant was immediately admitted, and acquainted the Colonel, that if he pleased to go and become bail for Mr Booth, another unexceptionable house-keeper would be there to join with him. This person the Serjeant had procured that morning, and had, by leave of his wife, given him a bond of indemnification for the purpose.

The

The Colonel did not ſeem ſo elated with this news as Atkinſon expected. On the contrary, inſtead of making a direct anſwer to what Atkinſon ſaid, the Colonel began thus: 'I think, Serjeant, Mr Booth 'hath told me that you was foſter brother to his lady. 'She is really a charming woman, and it is a thouſand 'pities ſhe ſhould ever have been placed in the dread-'ful ſituation ſhe is now in. There is nothing ſo filly 'as for ſubaltern officers of the army to marry, unleſs 'where they meet with women of very great fortunes 'indeed. What can be the event of their marrying 'otherwiſe, but entailing miſery and beggary on their 'wives and their poſterity?'

'Ah! Sir!' cries the Serjeant, 'it is too late to 'think of thoſe matters now. To be ſure, my lady 'might have married one of the top gentlemen in the 'country; for ſhe is certainly one of the beſt, as well 'as one of the handſomeſt women in the kingdom; 'and if ſhe had been fairly dealt by, would have had 'a very great fortune into the bargain. Indeed ſhe 'is worthy of the greateſt prince in the world; and 'if I had been the greateſt prince in the world, I ſhould 'have thought myſelf happy with ſuch a wife; but 'ſhe was pleaſed to like the lieutenant, and certainly 'there can be no happineſs in marriage without 'liking.'

'Lookee, Serjeant,' ſaid the Colonel, 'you know 'very well that I am the lieutenant's friend. I think 'I have ſhewn myſelf ſo.

'Indeed, your honour hath,' quoth the ſerjeant, 'more than once to my knowledge.'

'But I am angry with him for his imprudence, 'greatly angry with him for his imprudence; and 'the more ſo, as it affects a lady of ſo much worth.'

'She is indeed a lady of the higheſt worth,' cries the ſerjeant. 'Poor dear lady! I knew her, an't 'pleaſe your honour, from her infancy; and the 'ſweeteſt-tempered, beſt natured lady ſhe is, that 'ever trod on Engliſh ground. I have always loved 'her as if ſhe was my own ſiſter.—Nay, ſhe hath very 'often called me brother; and I have taken it to be

'a greater

Digitized by Google

'a greater honour than if I was to be called a general 'officer.'

'What pity it is,' said the Colonel, 'that this 'worthy creature should be exposed to so much mi-'sery by the thoughtless behaviour of a man, who, 'though I am his friend, I cannot help saying, hath 'been guilty of imprudence at least! Why could he 'not live upon his half pay? what had he to do to 'run himself into debt in this outragious manner?'

'I wish indeed,' cries the serjeant, 'he had been 'a little more considerative; but I hope this will be a 'warning to him.'

'How am I sure of that,' answered the Colonel; 'or what reason is there to expect it? extravagance is 'a vice of which men are not so easily cured. I have 'thought a great deal of this matter, Mr Serjeant; 'and upon the most mature deliberation, I am of o-'pinion, that it will be better both for him and his 'poor lady, that he should smart a little more.

'Your honour, Sir, to be sure is in the right,' replied the serjeant; 'but yet, Sir, if you will pardon 'me for speaking, I hope you will be pleased to con-'sider my poor lady's case. She suffers, all this 'while, as much or more than the lieutenant; for I 'know her so well, that I am certain she will never 'have a moment's ease till her husband is out of con-'finement.'

'I know women better than you, serjeant,' cries the Colonel: 'they sometimes place their affections on 'a husband, as children do on their nurse; but they 'are both to be weaned. I know you, serjeant, to be 'a fellow of sense as well as spirit, or I should not 'speak so freely to you; but I took a fancy to you a 'long time ago, and I intend to serve you; but first, 'I ask you this question, is your attachment to Mr 'Booth, or to his lady?'

'Certainly, Sir,' said the serjeant, 'I must love 'my lady best. Not but I have a great affection for 'the lieutenant too because I know my lady hath 'the same: and indeed he hath been always very 'good to me, as far as was in his power. A lieute-'nant, your honour knows, can't do a great deal;

Digitized by Google

'but I have always found him my friend upon all occaſions.'

'You ſay true,' cries the Colonel, 'a lieutenant 'can do but little; but I can do much to ſerve you, 'and will too.—But let me aſk you one queſtion—— 'Who was the lady whom I ſaw laſt night with Mrs 'Booth at her lodgings?'

Here the ſerjeant bluſhed, and repeated, 'The lady, 'Sir!'

'Ay, a lady, a woman,' cries the Colonel, 'who 'ſupped with us laſt night. She looked rather too 'much like a gentlewoman for the miſtreſs of a lod-'ging-houſe.'

The ſerjeant's cheeks glowed at this compliment to his wife, and he was juſt going to own her, when the Colonel proceeded. 'I think I never ſaw in my life 'ſo ill-looking, ſly, demure a b—— I would give 'ſomething, methinks, to know who ſhe was.'

'I don't know, indeed,' cries the ſerjeant in great confuſion. ——'I know nothing about her.'

'I wiſh you would enquire,' ſaid the Colonel, 'and 'let me know her name, and likewiſe what ſhe is. 'I have a ſtrange curioſity to know, and let me ſee 'you again this evening exactly at ſeven.'

'And will not your honour then go to the lieute-'nant this morning?' ſaid Atkinſon.

'It is not in my power,' anſwered the Colonel: 'I 'am engaged another way. Beſides, there is no haſte 'in this affair. If men will be imprudent, they muſt 'ſuffer the conſequences. Come to me at ſeven, and 'bring me all the particulars you can concerning that 'ill-looked jade I mentioned to you; for I am reſol-'ved to know who ſhe is. And ſo good-morrow to 'you, Serjeant: be aſſured I will take an opportunity 'to do ſomething for you.'

Though ſome readers may, perhaps, think the ſerjeant not unworthy of the freedom with which the Colonel treated him, yet that haughty officer would have been very backward to have condeſcended to ſuch familiarity with one of his rank, had he not propoſed ſome deſign from it. In truth, he began to conceive

Digitized by Google

hopes of making the ſerjeant inſtrumental to his deſign on Amelia; in other words, to convert him into a pimp, an office in which the Colonel had been ſerved by Atkinſon's betters; and which, as he knew it was in his power very well to reward him, he had no apprehenſion that the ſerjeant would decline: an opinion which the ſerjeant might have pardoned, though he had never given the leaſt grounds for it, ſince the Colonel borrowed it from the knowledge of his own heart. This dictated to him, that he, from a bad motive, was capable of deſiring to debauch his friend's wife; and the ſame heart inſpired him to hope that another, from another bad motive, might be guilty of the ſame breach of friendſhip, in aſſiſting him. Few men, I believe, think better of others than of themſelves; nor do they eaſily allow the exiſtence of any virtue of which they perceive no traces in their own minds: for which reaſon I have obſerved, that it is extremely difficult to perſuade a rogue that you are an honeſt man; nor would you ever ſucceed in the attempt by the ſtrongeſt evidence, was it not for the comfortable concluſion which the rogue draws, that he who proves himſelf to be honeſt, proves himſelf to be a fool at the ſame time.

CHAP. IX.

A curious chapter, from which a curious reader may draw ſundry obſervations.

THE ſerjeant retired from the Colonel in a very dejected ſtate of mind; in which, however, we muſt leave him a while, and return to Amelia; who, as ſoon as ſhe was up, had diſpatched Mrs Atkinſon to pay off her former lodgings, and to bring off all cloaths and other moveables.

The truſty meſſenger returned without performing her errand: for Mrs Elliſon had locked up all her rooms, and was gone out very early that morning, and the ſervant knew not whither ſhe was gone.

The two ladies now ſat down to breakfaſt, together with Amelia's two children: after which, Amelia declared

Digitized by Google

clared she would take a coach and visit her husband. To this motion Mrs Atkinson soon agreed, and offered to be her companion. To say truth, I think it was reasonable enough; and the great abhorrence which Booth had of seeing his wife in a bailiff's house, was, perhaps, rather too nice and delicate.

When the ladies were both dressed, and just going to send for their vehicle, a great knocking was heard at the door, and presently Mrs James was ushered into the room.

This visit was disagreeable enough to Amelia, as it detained her from the sight of her husband, for which she so eagerly longed. However, as she had no doubt but that the visit would be reasonably short, she resolved to receive the lady with all the complaisance in her power.

Mrs James now behaved herself so very unlike the person that she lately appeared, that it might have surprised any one who doth not know, that besides that of a fine lady, which is all mere art and mummery, every such woman hath some real character at the bottom, in which, whenever nature gets the better of her, she acts. Thus the finest ladies in the world will sometimes love, and sometimes scratch, according to their different natural dispositions, with great fury and violence, though both of these are equally inconsistent with a fine lady's artificial character.

Mrs James then was at the bottom a very good-natured woman; and the moment she heard of Amelia's misfortune, was sincerely grieved at it. She had acquiesced on the very first motion with the Colonel's design of inviting her to her house; and this morning at breakfast, when he had acquainted her that Amelia made some difficulty in accepting the offer, very readily undertook to go herself and persuade her friend to accept the invitation.

She now pressed this matter with such earnestness, that Amelia, who was not extremely versed in the art of denying, was hardly able to refuse her importunity; nothing, indeed, but her affection to Mrs Atkinson could have prevailed on her to refuse; that point, however, she would not give up, and Mrs James, at last,

Digitized by Google

was contented with a promise, that as soon as their affairs were settled, Amelia, with her husband and family, would make her a visit, and stay for some time with her in the country, whither she was soon to retire.

Having obtained this promise, Mrs James, after many very friendly professions, took her leave; and stepping into her coach, re-assumed the fine lady, and drove away to join her company at an auction.

The moment she was gone, Mrs Atkinson, who had left the room upon the approach of Mrs James, returned into it, and was informed by Amelia of all that had past.

'Pray, Madam,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'do this 'Colonel and his lady live, as it is called, well toge-'ther?'

'If you mean to ask,' cries Amelia, 'whether they 'are a very fond couple, I must answer that I believe 'they are not.'

'I have been told,' says Mrs Atkinson, 'that 'there have been instances of woman who have be-'come bawds to their own husbands, and the husbands 'pimps for them.'

'Fie upon it,' cries Amelia. 'I hope there are 'no such people. Indeed, my dear, this is being a 'little too censorious.'

'Call it what you please,' answered Mrs Atkinson. 'It arises from my love to you, and my fears for your 'danger. You know the proverb of a burnt child; 'and if such a one hath any good-nature, it will 'dread the fire, on the account of others as well as on 'its own. And if I may speak my sentiments freely, 'I cannot think you will be in safety at this Colonel's 'house.'

'I cannot but believe your apprehensions to be 'sincere,' replied Amelia, 'and I must think myself 'obliged to you for them; but I am convinced you 'are entirely in an error. I look on Colonel James 'as the most generous and best of men. He was a 'friend, and an excellent friend too, to my husband, 'long before I was acquainted with him, and he hath 'done him a thousand good offices. What do you 'say of his behaviour yesterday?'

'I wish,'

Digitized by Google

'I wiſh,' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'that his behaviour to-day had been equal. What I am now going 'to undertake is the moſt diſagreeable office of 'friendſhip, but it is a neceſſary one. I muſt tell you 'therefore what paſt this morning between the Colonel and Mr Atkinſon; for though it will hurt you, 'you ought, on many accounts, to know it.' Here ſhe related the whole which we have recorded in the preceeding chapter, and with which the ſerjeant had acquainted her, while Mrs James was paying her viſit to Amelia. And as the ſerjeant had painted the matter rather in ſtronger colours than the colonel; ſo Mrs Atkinſon again a little improved on the ſerjeant. Neither of theſe good people, perhaps, intended to aggravate any circumſtance; but ſuch is, I believe, the unavoidable conſequence of all reports. Mrs Atkinſon, indeed, may be ſuppoſed not to ſee what related to James in the moſt favourable light, as the ſerjeant, with more honeſty than prudence, had ſuggeſted to his wife, that the colonel had not the kindeſt opinion of her, and had called her a ſly and demure—; it is true he omitted ill-looking b—: two words, which are, perhaps, ſuperior to the patience of any Job in petticoats that ever lived. He made amends, however, by ſubſtituting ſome other phraſes in their ſtead, not extremely agreeable to a female ear.

It appeared to Amelia, from Mrs Atkinſon's relation, that the colonel had groſsly abuſed Booth to the ſerjeant, and had abſolutely refuſed to become his bail. Poor Amelia became a pale and motionleſs ſtatue at this account. At length, ſhe cried, 'If this 'be true, I and mine are all, indeed, undone. We 'have no comfort, no hope, no friend left.—I can'not diſbelieve you.—I know you would not deceive 'me—Why ſhould you, indeed, deceive me? But 'what can have cauſed this alteration ſince laſt 'night?—Did I ſay or do any thing to offend him?

'You ſaid, and did rather, I believe, a great deal 'too much to pleaſe him,' anſwered Mrs Atkinſon. 'Beſides, he is not in the leaſt offended with you. 'On the contrary, he ſaid many kind things'—

'What can my poor love have done?' ſaid Amelia,

Digitized by Google

'He hath not seen the Colonel since last night. Some 'villain hath set him against my husband; he was once 'before suspicious of such a person. Some cruel 'monster hath belied his innocence.'

'Pardon me, dear Madam,' said Mrs Atkinson; 'I believe the person who hath injured the captain 'with this friend of his, is one of the worthiest and 'best of creatures—Nay, do not be surprised; the 'person I mean is even your fair self: sure you would 'not be so dull in any other case; but in this, grati-'tude, humility, modesty, every virtue shuts your 'eyes.

"*Mortales hebitant visus;*

'as Virgil says. What in the world can be more 'consistent, than his desire to have you at his own 'house, and to keep your husband confined in ano-'ther? All that he said, and all that he did yester-'day; and, what is more convincing to me than both, 'all that he looked last night, are very consistent 'with both these designs.'

'O Heavens!' cries Amelia, 'you chill my blood 'with horror! the idea freezes me to death: I can-'not, must not, will not think it. Nothing but con-'viction—Heaven forbid I should ever have more con-'viction! 'and did he abuse my husband! what! did 'he abuse a poor, unhappy, distressed creature; oppres-'sed, ruined, torn from his children, torn away from his 'wretched wife; the honestest, worthiest, noblest, 'tendерest, fondest, best!'—Here she burst into an agony of grief, which exceeds the power of description.

In this situation, Mrs Atkinson was doing her utmost to support her, when a most violent knocking was heard at the door, and immediately the serjeant ran hastily into the room, bringing with him a cordial, which presently relieved Amelia. What this cordial was, we shall inform the reader in due time. In the mean while, he must suspend his curiosity; and the gentlemen at White's may lay wagers, whether it was Ward's pill, or Doctor James's powder.

But before we close this chapter, and return back to the bailiff's house, we must do our best to rescue the character

Digitized by Google

character of our heroine from the dulneſs of apprehenſion, which ſeveral of our quick-ſighted readers may lay more heavily to her charge than was done by her friend Mrs Atkinſon.

I muſt inform, therefore, all ſuch readers, that it is not, becauſe innocence is more blind than guilt, that the former often overlooks and tumbles into the pit which the latter foreſees and avoids. The truth is, that it is almoſt impoſſible guilt ſhould miſs the diſcovering of all the ſnares in its way; as it is conſtantly prying cloſely into every corner in order to lay ſnares for others. Whereas innocence, having no ſuch purpoſe, walks fearleſsly and careleſsly through life; and is conſequently liable to tread on the gins, which cunning has laid to entrap it. To ſpeak plainly, and without allegory or figure, it is not want of ſenſe, but want of ſuſpicion, by which innocence is often betrayed. Again, we often admire at the folly of the dupe, when we ſhould transfer our whole ſurpriſe to the aſtoniſhing guilt of the betrayer. In a word, many an innocent perſon hath owed his ruin to this circumſtance alone, that the degree of villainy was ſuch as muſt have exceeded the faith of every man who was not himſelf a villain.

CHAP. X.

In which are many profound ſecrets of philoſophy.

BOOTH, having had enough of the Author's company the preceeding day, choſe now another companion. Indeed the author was not very ſolicitous of a ſecond interview: for, as he could have no hope from Booth's pocket, ſo he was not likely to receive much encreaſe to his vanity from Booth's converſation: for, low as this wretch was in virtue, ſenſe, learning, birth and fortune, he was by no means low in his vanity. This paſſion, indeed, was ſo high in him, and at the ſame time ſo blinded him to his own demerits, that he hated every man, who did not either flatter him or give him money. In ſhort, he claimed a ſtrange kind of right; either to cheat all his acquaintance

Digitized by Google

quaintence of their praiſe, or to pick their pockets of their pence; in which latter caſe, he himſelf repaid very liberally with panegyric.

A very little ſpecimen of ſuch a fellow muſt have ſatisfied a man of Mr Booth's temper. He choſe, therefore, now to aſſociate himſelf with that gentleman, of whom Bondum had given ſo ſhabby a character. In ſhort, Mr Booth's opinion of the bailiff was ſuch, that he recommended a man moſt, where he leaſt intended it. Nay the bailiff, in the preſent inſtance, though he had drawn a malicious concluſion, honeſtly avowed, that this was drawn only from the poverty of the perſon: which is never, I believe, any forcible diſrecommendation to a good mind; but he muſt have had a very bad mind, indeed, who, in Mr Booth's circumſtances, could have diſliked or deſpiſed another man, becauſe that other man was poor.

Some previous converſation having paſt between this gentleman and Booth, in which they had both opened their ſeveral ſituations to each other; the former caſting an affectionate look on the latter, expreſſed great compaſſion for his circumſtances; for which Booth thanking him, ſaid, 'You muſt have a great 'deal of compaſſion, and be a very good man, in 'ſuch a terrible ſituation as you deſcribe yourſelf, to 'have any pity to ſpare for other people.'

'My affairs, Sir,' anſwered the gentleman, 'are 'very bad, it is true; and yet there is one circum-'ſtance, which makes you appear to me more the 'object of pity than I am to myſelf; and it is this, 'that you muſt from your years be a novice in afflic-'tion; whereas I have ſerved a long apprenticeſhip 'to miſery, and ought, by this time, to be a pretty 'good maſter of my trade. To ſay the truth, I be-'lieve, habit teaches men to bear the burdens of the 'mind, as it enures them to bear heavy burdens on 'their ſhoulders. Without uſe and experience, the 'ſtrongeſt minds and bodies both will ſtagger under 'a weight, which habit might render eaſy, and even 'contemptible.'

'There

'There is great juſtice,' cries Booth, 'in the compariſon; and, I think, I have myſelf experienced the truth of it: for I am not that Tyro in affliction, which you ſeem to apprehend me. And, perhaps, it is from the very habit you mention, that I am able to ſupport my preſent misfortunes a little like a man.'

The gentleman ſmiled at this, and cried, 'Indeed, Captain, you are a young philoſopher.'

'I think,' cries Booth, 'I have ſome pretenſions to that philoſophy which is taught by misfortunes; and you ſeem to be of opinion, Sir, that that is one of the beſt ſchools of philoſophy.'

'I mean no more, Sir,' ſaid the gentleman, 'than that in the days of our affliction, we are inclined to think more ſeriouſly, than in thoſe ſeaſons of life, when we are engaged in the hurrying purſuits of buſineſs or pleaſure, when we have neither leiſure nor inclination to ſift and examine things to the bottom. Now there are two conſiderations, which, from my having long fixed my thoughts upon them, have greatly ſupported me under all my afflictions. The one is the brevity of life, even at its longeſt duration, which the wiſeſt of men hath compared to the ſhort dimenſion of a ſpan. One of the Roman poets compares it to the duration of a race; and another, to the much ſhorter tranſition of a wave.

'The ſecond conſideration is the uncertainty of it. Short as its utmoſt limits are, it is far from being aſſured of reaching thoſe limits. The next day, the next hour, the next moment, may be the end of our courſe. Now of what value is ſo uncertain, ſo precarious a ſtation? This conſideration, indeed, however lightly it is paſſed over in our conception, doth, in a great meaſure, level all fortunes and conditions, and gives no man a right to triumph in the happieſt ſtate, or any reaſon to repine in the moſt miſerable. Would the moſt worldly men ſee this in the light in which they examine all other matters, they would ſoon feel and acknowledge the force of this way of reaſoning; for which of them would give any price for an eſtate, from which they

were

Digitized by Google

'were liable to be immediately ejected? or, would 'they not laugh at him as a madman, who account-'ed himself rich from such an uncertain possession? 'This is the fountain, Sir, from which I have drawn 'my philosophy. Hence it is, that I have learned 'to look on all those things, which are esteemed the 'blessings of life, and those which are dreaded as its 'evils, with such a degree of indifference, that as I 'should not be elated with possessing the former, so 'neither am I greatly dejected and depressed by suf-'fering the latter. Is the actor esteemed happier, to 'whose lot it falls to play the principal part, than he 'who plays the lowest? and yet the drama may run 'twenty nights together, and by consequence may 'outlast our lives; but, at the best, life is only a little 'longer drama; and the business of the great stage 'is consequently a little more serious than that which 'is performed at the Theatre-Royal. But even here, 'the catastrophes and calamities which are repre-'sented, are capable of affecting us. The wisest men 'can deceive themselves into feeling the distresses of 'a tragedy, though they know them to be merely 'imaginary; and the children will often lament them 'as realities: what wonder, then, if these tragical 'scenes, which I allow to be a little more serious, 'should a little more affect us? where then is the re-'medy, but in the philosophy I have mentioned; 'which, when once by a long course of meditation it 'is reduced to a habit, teaches us to set a just value 'on every thing; and cures at once all eager wishes 'and abject fears, all violent joy and grief concern-'ing objects which cannot endure long, and may not 'exist a moment?'

'You have expressed yourself extremely well,' cries Booth, 'and I entirely agree with the justice of your 'sentiments; but, however true all this may be in 'theory, I still doubt its efficacy in practice. And 'the cause of the difference between these two is 'this; that we reason from our heads, but act from 'our hearts:

——"*Video meliora, proboque;*
"*Deteriora sequor.*"

'Nothing

Digitized by Google

'Nothing can differ more widely than wise men and 'fools, in their estimation of things; but as both act 'from their uppermost passion, they both often act 'alike. What comfort then can your philosophy give 'to an avaritious man, who is deprived of his riches; 'or to an ambitious man, who is stript of his power; 'to the fond lover, who is torn from his mistress; or, 'to the tender husband, who is dragged from his 'wife? do you really think, that any meditations on 'the shortness of life will sooth them in their afflic-'tions? is not this very shortness itself one of their 'afflictions? and if the evil they suffer be a tempora-'ry deprivation of what they love, will they not think 'their fate the harder, and lament the more, that 'they are to lose any part of their enjoyment, to which 'there is so short and so uncertain a period?'

'I beg leave, Sir,' said the gentleman, 'to distin-'guish here. By philosophy, I do not mean the bare 'knowledge of right and wrong; but an energy, a 'habit, as Aristotle calls it; and this I do firmly be-'lieve, with him and with the Stoics, is superior to all 'the attacks of fortune.'

He was proceeding, when the bailiff came in, and in a surly tone bade them both good-morrow; after which, he asked the philosopher, if he was prepared to go to Newgate; for that he must bring him thither that afternoon.

The poor man seemed very much shocked with this news. 'I hope,' cries he, 'you will give a little 'longer time, if not till the return of the writ. But 'I beg you particularly, not to carry me thither to-'day; for I expect my wife and children here in the 'evening.'

'I have nothing to do with wives and children,' cried the bailiff; 'I never desire to see any wives and 'children here. I like no such company.'

'I intreat you,' said the prisoner, 'give me ano-'ther day. I shall take it as a great obligation; and 'you will disappoint me in the cruellest manner in the 'world, if you refuse me.'

'I can't help people's disappointments,' cries the bailiff; 'I must consider myself and my own family.

'I know

Digitized by Google

'I know not where I ſhall be paid the money that's 'due already. I can't afford to keep priſoners at my 'own expence.'

'I don't intend it ſhall be at your expence,' cries the philoſopher; 'my wife is gone to raiſe money 'this morning, and I hope to pay you all I owe you 'at her arrival. But we intend to ſup together to-'night at your houſe; and if you ſhould remove me 'now, it would be the moſt barbarous diſappointment 'to us both, and will make me the moſt miſerable man 'alive.'

'Nay, for my part,' ſaid the bailiff, 'I don't de-'ſire to do any thing barbarous. I know how to treat 'gentlemen with civility as well as another. And 'when people pay as they go, and ſpend their money 'like gentlemen, I am ſure no body can accuſe me of 'any incivility ſince I have been in the office. And 'if you intend to be merry to-night, I am not the 'man that will prevent it. Though I ſay it, you may 'have as good a ſupper dreſs'd here as in any tavern 'in town.'

'Since Mr Bondum is ſo kind, Captain,' ſaid the philoſopher, 'I hope for the favour of your company. 'I aſſure you, if it ever be my fortune to go abroad 'into the world, I ſhall be proud of the honour of 'your acquaintance.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries Booth, 'it is an honour I ſhall 'be very ready to accept; but as for this evening, I 'cannot help ſaying, I hope to be engaged in another 'place.'

'I promiſe you, Sir,' anſwered the other, 'I ſhall 'rejoice at your liberty, though I am a loſer by it.'

'Why, as to that matter,' cries Bondum with a ſneer, 'I fancy, Captain, you may engage yourſelf to 'the gentleman without any fear of breaking your 'word; for I am very much miſtaken, if we part 'to-day.'

'Pardon me, my good friend,' ſaid Booth, 'but 'I expect my bail every minute.'

'Lookee, Sir,' cries Bondum, 'I don't love to ſee 'gentlemen in an error. I ſhall not take the Ser-'jeant's bail; and as for the Colonel, I have been

Digitized by Google

'with him myself this morning; (for to be sure I 'love to do all I can for gentlemen); and he told me, 'he could not possibly be here to-day: besides, why 'should I mince the matter? there is more stuff in the 'office.'

'What do you mean by stuff?' cries Booth.

'I mean that there is another writ,' answered the bailiff, 'at the suit of Mrs Ellison, the gentlewoman 'that was here yesterday; and the attorney that was 'with her is concerned against you. Some officers 'would not tell you all this; but I loves to shew 'civility to gentlemen, while they behave themselves 'as such. And I loves the gentlemen of the army in 'particular. I had like to have been in the army 'myself once; but I liked the commission I have bet-'ter. Come, Captain, let not your noble courage be 'cast down; what say you to a glass of white wine, 'or a tiff of punch, by way of whet?'

'I have told you, Sir, I never drink in the morn-'ing,' cries Booth a little peevishly.

'No offence, I hope, Sir,' said the bailiff, 'I 'hope I have not treated you with any incivility. 'I don't ask any gentleman to call for liquor in my 'house, if he doth not chuse it; nor I don't desire 'any body to stay here longer than they have a mind 'to?—Newgate, to be sure, is the place for all debtors 'that can't find bail. I know what civility is, and 'I scorn to behave myself unbecoming a gentleman; 'but I'd have you consider that the twenty-four hours 'appointed by act of parliament are almost out; and 'so it is time to think of removing. As to bail, I 'would not have you flatter yourself: for I knows 'very well there are other things coming against you. 'Besides, the sum you are already charged with is 'very large, and I must see you in a place of safety. 'My house is no prison, though I lock up for a little 'time in it. Indeed, when gentlemen are gentlemen, 'and likely to find bail, I don't stand for a day or 'two; but I have a good nose at a bit of carrion, 'Captain; I have not carried so much carrion to 'Newgate, without knowing the smell of it.'

Digitized by Google

'I underſtand not your cant,' cries Booth; 'but I 'did not think to have offended you ſo much by refu-'ſing to drink in a morning.'

'Offended me, Sir!' cries the Bailiff. 'Who told 'you ſo? do you think, Sir, if I want a glaſs of wine, 'I am under any neceſſity of aſking my priſoners for 'it? damn it, Sir, I'll ſhew you I ſcorn your words, 'I can afford to treat you with a glaſs of the beſt 'wine in England, if you comes to that.'—He then pulled out a handful of guineas, ſaying, 'There, 'Sir, they are all my own; I owe no body a ſhilling. 'I am no beggar, nor no debtor. I am the king's 'officer, as well as you, and I will ſpend guinea for 'guinea as long as you pleaſe.'

'Harkee, raſcal,' cries Booth, laying hold of the Bailiff's collar, 'how dare you treat me with this 'inſolence? doth the law give you any authority to 'inſult me in my misfortunes?' At which words he gave the Bailiff a good ſhove, and threw him from him.

'Very well, Sir,' cries the Bailiff, 'I will ſwear 'both an aſſault and an attempt to a reſcue. If officers 'are to be uſed in this manner, there is an end of all 'law and juſtice. But though I am not a match for 'you myſelf, I have thoſe below that are.' He then ran to the door, and called up two ill-looking fellows, his followers, whom, as ſoon as they entered the room, he ordered to ſeize on Booth, declaring he would immediately carry him to Newgate; at the ſame time pouring out a vaſt quantity of abuſe, below the dignity of hiſtory to record.

Booth deſired the two dirty fellows to ſtand off, and declared he would make no reſiſtance, at the ſame time bidding the Bailiff carry him where-ever he durſt.

'I'll ſhew you what I dare,' cries the Bailiff; and again ordered the followers to lay hold of their priſoner, ſaying, 'He has aſſaulted me already, and endeavour-'ed a reſcue. I ſhan't truſt ſuch a fellow to walk at 'liberty. A gentleman, indeed! ay, ay, Newgate 'is the propereſt place for ſuch gentry; as arrant 'carrion as ever was carried thither.'

The

Digitized by Google

The fellows then both laid violent hands on Booth, and the bailiff ſtept to the door to order a coach; when on a ſudden, the whole ſcene was changed in an inſtant: for now the ſerjeant came running, out of breath, into the room; and ſeeing his friend, the Captain, roughly handled by two ill-looking fellows, without aſking any queſtions, ſtept briſkly up to his aſſiſtance, and inſtantly gave one of the aſſailants ſo violent a ſalute with his fiſt, that he directly meaſured his length on the floor.

Booth having by this means his right arm at liberty, was unwilling to be idle, or entirely to owe his reſcue from both the ruffians to the ſerjeant; he therefore imitated the example which his friend had ſet him, and with a luſty blow levelled the other follower with his companion on the ground.

The Bailiff roared out, 'A reſcue, a reſcue,' to which the ſerjeant anſwered, There was no reſcue intended. 'The Captain,' ſaid he, 'wants no reſcue. Here are 'ſome friends coming who will deliver him in a better 'manner.'

The Bailiff ſwore heartily he would carry him to Newgate, in ſpite of all the friends in the world.

'You carry him to Newgate!' cried the ſerjeant, with the higheſt indignation. 'Offer but to lay your 'hands on him, and I will knock your teeth down 'your ugly jaws.'—Then turning to Booth, he cried, 'They will be all here within a minute, Sir: we had, 'much ado to keep my lady from coming herſelf; 'but ſhe is at home in good health, longing to ſee 'your honour; and I hope you will be with her 'within this half hour.'

And now three gentlemen entered the room; theſe were an attorney, the perſon whom the ſerjeant had procured in the morning to be his bail with Colonel James, and laſtly, Doctor Harriſon himſelf.

The Bailiff no ſooner ſaw the attorney, with whom he was well acquainted (for the others he knew not) than he began, as the phraſe is, to pull in his horns, and ordered the two followers, who were now got again on their legs, to walk down ſtairs.

Digitized by Google

'So, Captain,' says the Doctor, 'when last we 'parted, I believe we neither of us expected to meet 'in such a place as this.'

'Indeed, Doctor,' cries Booth, 'I did not expect 'to have been sent hither by the gentleman who did 'me that favour.

'How so, Sir!' said the doctor, 'you was sent hi-'ther by some person, I suppose, to whom you was 'indebted. This is the usual place, I apprehend, 'for creditors to send their debtors to. But you 'ought to be more surprised that the gentleman who 'sent you hither is come to release you.—Mr. Mur-'phy, you will perform all the necessary ceremonials.'

The attorney then asked the bailiff with how many actions Booth was charged, and was informed there were five besides the Doctor's, which was much the heaviest of all. Proper bonds were presently provided, and the Doctor and the serjeant's friend signed them; the bailiff, at the instance of the attorney, making no objection to the bail.

Booth, we may be assured, made a handsome speech to the Doctor for such extraordinary friendship, with which, however, we do not think proper to trouble the reader; and now every thing being ended, and the company ready to depart, the bailiff stepped up to Booth, and told him he hoped he would remember civility money.

'I believe,' cries Booth, 'you mean incivility 'money; if there be any fees due for rudeness, I 'must own you have a very just claim.'

'I am sure, Sir,' cries the bailiff, 'I have treated 'your honour with all the respect in the world: no 'man, I am sure, can charge me with using a gentle-'man rudely. I knows what belongs to a gentleman 'better: but you can't deny that two of my men 'have been knocked down; and I doubt not but, 'as you are a gentleman, you will give them some-'thing to drink.'

Booth was about to answer with some passion, when the attorney interfered, and whispered in his ear, that it was usual to make a compliment to the officer, and that he had better comply with this custom.

'If

'If the fellow had treated me civilly,' answered Booth, 'I should have had no objection to comply 'with a bad custom in his favour; but I am resolved, 'I will never reward a man for using me ill, and I 'will not agree to give him a single farthing.'

'—'Tis very well, Sir,' said the Bailiff, 'I am rightly 'served for my good-nature; but if it had been to do 'again, I would have taken care you should not have 'been bailed this day.'

Doctor Harrison, to whom Booth referred the cause, after giving him a succinct account of what had past, declared the Captain to be in the right. He said, it was a most horrid imposition, that such fellows were ever suffered to prey on the necessitous; but that the example would be much worse to reward them, where they had behaved themselves so ill. 'And I think,' says he, 'the bailiff is worthy of great rebuke for what 'he hath just now said: in which I hope he hath 'boasted of more power than is in him. We do in-'deed, with great justice and propriety, value ourselves 'on our freedom, if the liberty of the subject depends 'on the pleasure of such fellows as these!'

'It is not so neither altogether,' cries the lawyer: 'but custom hath established a present or fee to them 'at the delivery of a prisoner, which they call civility 'money, and expect as in a manner their due, though 'in reality they have no right.'

'But will any man,' cries Doctor Harrison, 'after 'what the Captain hath told us, say that the bailiff 'hath behaved himself as he ought? and if he had, 'is he to be rewarded for not acting in an unchristian 'and inhuman manner? it is pity that instead of a 'custom of feeing them out of the pockets of the poor 'and wretched when they do not behave themselves 'ill, there was not both a law and a practice to pu-'nish them severely when they do. In the present 'case, I am so far from agreeing to give the bailiff a 'shilling, that, if there be any method of punishing 'him for his rudeness, I shall be heartily glad to see 'it put in execution: for there are none whose con-'duct should be so strictly watched as that of these ne-'cessary evils in the society, as their office concerns

Digitized by Google

'for the moſt part thoſe poor creatures who cannot 'do themſelves juſtice, and as they are generally the 'worſt of men who undertake it.'

The bailiff then quitted the room, muttering that he ſhould know better what to do another time; and ſhortly after Booth and his friends left the houſe; but as they were going out, the Author took Doctor Harriſon aſide, and ſlipt a receipt into his hand, which the Doctor returned, ſaying he never ſubſcribed when he neither knew the work nor the author; but that if he would call at his lodgings, he would be very willing to give all the encouragement to merit which was in his power.

The author took down the Doctor's name and direction, and made him as many bows as he would have done had he carried off the half guinea, for which he had been fiſhing.

Mr Booth then took his leave of the philoſopher, and departed with the reſt of his friends.

AMELIA.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

In which the history looks backwards.

BEFORE we proceed farther in our history, it may be proper to look back a little, in order to account for the late conduct of Doctor Harison; which, however inconsistent it may have hitherto appeared, when examined to the bottom, will be found, I apprehend, to be truly congruous with all the rules of the most perfect prudence, as well as with the most consummate goodness.

We have already partly seen in what light Booth had been represented to the Doctor abroad. Indeed, the accounts which were sent of the Captain, as well by the curate as by a gentleman of the neighbourhood, were much grosser and more to his disadvantage, than the Doctor was pleased to set them forth in his letter to the person accused. What sense he had of Booth's conduct, was, however, manifest by that letter. Nevertheless he resolved to suspend his final judgment till his return; and though he censured him, would not absolutely condemn him without ocular demonstration.

The Doctor, on his return to his parish, found all the accusations which had been transmitted to him, confirmed by many witnesses, of which the curate's wife, who had been formerly a friend to Amelia, and still preserved the outward appearance of friendship,

was

Digitized by Google

was the ſtrongeſt. She introduced all with, 'I am 'ſorry to ſay it; and it is friendſhip which bids me 'ſpeak; and it is for their good it ſhould be told 'you;' after which beginnings, ſhe never concluded a ſingle ſpeech without ſome horrid ſlander and bitter invective.

Beſides the malicious turn which was given to theſe affairs in the country, which were owing a good deal to misfortune, and ſome little perhaps to imprudence, the whole neighbourhood rung with ſeveral groſs and ſcandalous lies, which were merely the inventions of his enemies, and of which the ſcene was laid in London ſince his abſence.

Poiſoned with all this malice, the Doctor came to town, and learning where Booth lodged, went to make him a viſit. Indeed, it was the Doctor, and no other who had been at his lodgings that evening when Booth and Amelia were walking in the Park; and concerning which the reader may be pleaſed to remember ſo many ſtrange and odd conjectures.

Here the Doctor ſaw the little gold watch, and all thoſe fine trinkets with which the noble lord had preſented the children; and which, from the anſwers given him by the poor ignorant innocent girl, he could have no doubt had been purchaſed within a few days by Amelia.

This account tallied ſo well with the ideas he had imbibed of Booth's extravagance in the country, that he firmly believed both the huſband and wife to be the vaineſt, ſillieſt, and moſt unjuſt people alive. It was indeed, almoſt incredible, that two rational beings ſhould be guilty of ſuch abſurdity; but monſtrous and abſurd as it was, ocular demonſtration appeared to be the evidence againſt them.

The Doctor departed from their lodgings enraged at this ſuppoſed diſcovery, and unhappily for Booth, was engaged to ſupper that very evening with the country gentleman of whom Booth had rented a farm. As the poor Captain happened to be the ſubject of converſation, and occaſioned their comparing notes, the account which the Doctor gave of what he had ſeen that evening, ſo incenſed the gentleman to whom Booth

was

Digitized by Google

was likewise a debtor, that he vowed he would take a writ out against him next morning, and have his body alive or dead. And the Doctor was at last persuaded to do the same. Mr Murphy was thereupon immediately sent for, and the Doctor in his presence repeated again what he had seen at his lodgings, as the foundation of his suing him, which the attorney, as we have before seen, had blabbed to Atkinson.

But no sooner did the Doctor hear that Booth was arrested, than the wretched condition of his wife and family began to affect his mind. The children, who were to be utterly undone with their father, were intirely innocent: and as for Amelia herself, though he thought he had most convincing proofs of very blameable levity; yet his former friendship and affection to her were busy to invent every excuse, till, by very heavily loading the husband, they lightened the suspicion against the wife.

In this temper of mind, he resolved to pay Amelia a second visit, and was on his way to Mrs Ellison, when the serjeant met him, and made himself known to him. The Doctor took his old servant into a coffee-house, where he received from him such an account of Booth and his family, that he desired the serjeant to shew him presently to Amelia; and this was the cordial which we mentioned at the end of the ninth chapter of the preceding book.

The Doctor became soon satisfied concerning the trinkets which had given him so much uneasiness, and which had brought so much mischief on the head of poor Booth. Amelia likewise gave the Doctor some satisfaction as to what he had heard of her husband's behaviour in the country; and assured him, upon her honour, that Booth could so well answer every complaint against his conduct, that she had no doubt but that a man of the Doctor's justice and candour would entirely acquit him, and would consider him as an innocent unfortunate man, who was the object of a good man's compassion, not of his anger or resentment.

This worthy clergyman, who was not desirous of finding proofs to condemn the captain, or to justify his

Digitized by Google

his own vindictive proceedings, but, on the contrary, rejoiced heartily in every piece of evidence which tended to clear up the character of his friend, gave a ready ear to all which Amelia said. To this, indeed, he was induced by the love he always had for that lady, by the good opinion he entertained of her, as well as by pity for her present condition, than which nothing appeared more miserable; for he found her in the highest agonies of grief and despair, with her two little children crying over their wretched mother. These are, indeed, to a well-disposed mind, the most tragical sights that human nature can furnish, and afford a juster motive to grief and tears in the beholder, than it would be to see all the heroes who have ever infested the earth, hanged altogether in a string.

The Doctor felt this sight as he ought. He immediately endeavoured to comfort the afflicted; in which he so well succeeded, that he restored to Amelia sufficient spirits to give him the satisfaction we have mentioned: after which, he declared he would go and release her husband; which he accordingly did, in the manner we have above related.

CHAP. II.

In which the history goes forward.

WE now return to that period of our history, to which we had brought it at the end of our last book.

Booth and his friends arrived from the bailiff's, at the serjeant's lodgings; where Booth immediately ran up stairs to his Amelia; between whom I shall not attempt to describe the meeting. Nothing certainly was ever more tender or more joyful. This however I will observe, that a very few of these exquisite moments, of which the best of minds only are capable, do, in reality, over-balance the longest enjoyments which can ever fall to the lot of the worst.

Whilst Booth and his wife were feasting their souls with the most delicious mutual endearments, the Doctor was fallen to play with the two little children below

Digitized by Google

low ſtairs. While he was thus engaged, the little boy did ſomewhat amiſs; upon which the Doctor ſaid, 'If you do ſo any more, I will take your papa 'away from you again.'—'Again, Sir,' ſaid the child, 'why, was it you then that took away my papa be-'fore?' 'Suppoſe it was,' ſaid the Doctor, 'would 'not you forgive me?' 'Yes,' cries the child, 'I 'would forgive you; becauſe a Chriſtian muſt for-'give every body; but I ſhould hate you as long as 'I live.'

The Doctor was ſo pleaſed with the boy's anſwer, that he caught him in his arms, and kiſſed him, at which time Booth and his wife returned. The Doctor aſked which of them was their ſon's inſtructor in his religion. Booth anſwered, that he muſt confeſs Amelia had all the merit of that kind. 'I ſhould 'have rather thought he had learned of his father,' cries the Doctor, 'for he ſeems a good ſoldier-like 'Chriſtian, and profeſſes to hate his enemies with a 'very good grace.'

'How, Billy,' cries Amelia, 'I am ſure I did not 'teach you ſo.'

'I did not ſay I would hate my enemies, Madam,' cries the boy. 'I only ſaid I would hate papa's ene-'mies; ſure, Mamma, there is no harm in that: nay, 'I am ſure there is no harm in it; for I have heard 'you ſay the ſame thing a thouſand times.'

The Doctor ſmiled on the child, and chucking him under the chin, told him, he muſt hate no body: and now Mrs Atkinſon, who had provided a dinner for them all, deſired them to walk up, and partake of it.

And now it was that Booth was firſt made acquainted with the ſerjeant's marriage; as well as Dr Harriſon, both of whom greatly felicitated him upon it.

Mrs Atkinſon, who was perhaps, a little more confounded than ſhe would have been had ſhe married a Colonel, ſaid, 'If I have done wrong, Mrs Booth 'is to anſwer for it; for ſhe made the match: in-'deed, Mr Atkinſon, you are greatly obliged to the 'character which this lady gives of you.' 'I hope 'he will deſerve it,' ſaid the Doctor; 'and if the 'army

Digitized by Google

'army hath not corrupted a good boy, I believe I 'may answer for him.'

While our little company were enjoying that happiness which never fails to attend conversation, where all present are pleased with each other, a visitant arrived, who was, perhaps, not very welcome to any of them. This was no other than Colonel James, who entering the room with much gaiety, went directly up to Booth, embraced him, and expressed great satisfaction at finding him there; he then made an apology for not attending him in the morning, which he said had been impossible: and that he had with the utmost difficulty put off some business of great consequence, in order to serve him this afternoon; 'but 'I am glad on your account,' cried he to Booth, 'that my presence was not necessary.'

Booth himself was extremely satisfied with this declaration, and failed not to return him as many thanks as he would have deserved, had he performed his promise; but the two ladies were not quite so well satisfied. As for the serjeant, he had slipped out of the room when the Colonel entered, not entirely out of that bashfulness which we have remarked him to be tainted with; but indeed from what had past in the morning, he hated the sight of the Colonel, as well on the account of his wife as on that of his friend.

The Doctor, on the contrary, on what he had formerly heard from both Amelia and her husband of the Colonel's generosity and friendship, had built so good an opinion of him, that he was very much pleased with seeing him, and took the first opportunity of telling him so. 'Colonel,' said the Doctor, 'I have not the 'happiness of being known to you; but I have long 'been desirous of an acquaintance with a gentleman, 'in whose commendation I have heard so much from 'some present.' The Colonel made a proper answer to this compliment, and they soon entered into a familiar conversation together: for the Doctor was not difficult of access; indeed, he held the strange reserve, which is usually practised in this nation between people who are in any degree strangers to each other, to be very unbecoming the Christian character.

The

Digitized by Google

The two ladies soon left the room, and the remainder of the visit, which was not very long, passed in discourse on various common subjects, not worth recording. In the conclusion, the Colonel invited Booth and his lady, and the Doctor, to dine with him the next day.

To give Colonel James his due commendation, he had shewn a great command of himself, and great presence of mind on this occasion; for to speak the plain truth, the visit was intended to Amelia alone; nor did he expect, or perhaps desire, any thing less than to find the captain at home. The great joy which he suddenly conveyed into his countenance at the unexpected sight of his friend, is to be attributed to that noble art which is taught in those excellent schools called the several courts of Europe. By this men are enabled to dress out their countenances as much at their own pleasure, as they do their bodies; and to put on friendship with as much ease as they can a laced coat.

When the Colonel and Doctor were gone, Booth acquainted Amelia with the invitation he had received. She was so struck with the news, and betrayed such visible marks of confusion and uneasiness, that they could not have escaped Booth's observation, had suspicion given him the least hint to remark: but this indeed is the great optic glass helping us to discern plainly almost all that passes in the minds of others, without some use of which nothing is more purblind than human nature.

Amelia having recovered from her first perturbation, answered, 'My dear, I will dine with you wherever 'you please to lay your commands on me.'—'I am 'obliged to you, my dear soul,' cries Booth, 'your 'obedience shall be very easy; for my command will 'be, that you shall always follow your own inclina-'tions.' 'My inclinations,' answered she, 'would, I 'am afraid, be too unreasonable a confinement to you; 'for they would always lead me to be with you and 'your children, with at most a single friend or two 'now and then.' 'O my dear,' replied he, 'large 'companies give us a greater relish for our own so-

Digitized by Google

'ciety when we return to it; and we shall be extremely merry, for Doctor Harrison dines with us.' 'I 'hope you will, my dear,' cries she; 'but I own I 'should have been better pleased to have enjoyed a 'few days with yourself and the children, with no other person but Mrs Atkinson, for whom I have conceived a violent affection, and who would have given 'us but little interruption. However, if you have 'promised, I must undergo the penance.' 'Nay, 'child,' cried he, 'I am sure I would have refused, 'could I have guessed it had been the least disagreeable to you; though I know your objection.'—'Objection!' cries Amelia eagerly, 'I have no objection!' 'Nay, nay,' said he, 'come be honest, I know your 'objection, tho' you are unwilling to own it.' 'Good 'Heavens!' cried Amelia, frighten'd, 'what do you 'mean? what objection?' 'Why,' answered he, 'to 'the company of Mrs James; and I must confess she 'hath not behaved to you lately as you might have 'expected; but you ought to pass all that by, for the 'sake of her husband, to whom we have both so many 'obligations; who is the worthiest, honestest, and most 'generous fellow in the universe, and the best friend 'to me that ever man had.'

Amelia, who had far other suspicions, and began to fear that her husband had discovered them, was highly pleased when she saw him taking a wrong scent. She gave, therefore, a little into the deceit, and acknowledged the truth of what he had mentioned; but said, that the pleasure she should have in complying with his desires, would highly recompense any dissatisfaction which might arise on any other account; and shortly after ended the conversation on this subject, with her chearfully promising to fulfil his promise.

In reality, poor Amelia had now a most unpleasant task to undertake; for she thought it absolutely necessary to conceal from her husband the opinion she had conceived of the Colonel. For as she knew the characters, as well of her husband as of his friend, or rather enemy (both being often synonimous in the language of the world), she had the utmost reason to apprehend

Digitized by Google

apprehend something very fatal might attend her husband's entertaining the same thought of James, which filled and tormented her own breast.

And, as she knew that nothing but these thoughts could justify the least unkind, or, indeed, the least reserved behaviour to James, who had, in all appearance, conferred the greatest obligations upon Booth and herself, she was reduced to a dilemma, the most dreadful that can attend a virtuous woman, as it often gives the highest triumph, and sometimes no little advantage to the men of professed gallantry.

In short, to avoid giving any umbrage to her husband, Amelia was forced to act in a manner, which she was conscious must give encouragement to the Colonel; a situation which, perhaps, requires as great prudence and delicacy, as any in which the heroic part of the female character can be exerted.

CHAP. III.

A conversation between Dr Harrison and others.

THE next day, Booth and his Lady, with the Doctor, met at Colonel James's, where Colonel Bath likewise made one of the company.

Nothing very remarkable passed at dinner, or till the ladies withdrew. During this time, however, the behaviour of Colonel James was such as gave some uneasiness to Amelia, who well understood his meaning, though the particulars were too refined and subtle to be observed by any other present.

When the ladies were gone, which was as soon as Amelia could prevail on Mrs James to depart, Colonel Bath, who had been pretty brisk with Champagne at dinner, soon began to display his magnanimity. 'My brother tells me, young gentleman,' said he to Booth, 'that you have been used very ill lately by 'some rascals; and I have no doubt but you will do 'yourself justice.'

Booth answered, that he did not know what he meant. 'Since I must mention it then,' cries the Colonel, 'I hear you have been arrested; and I think

Digitized by Google

'you know what satisfaction is to be required by a 'man of honour.'

'I beg, Sir,' says the Doctor, 'no more may be 'mentioned of that matter. I am convinced, no sa-'tisfaction will be required of the Captain, till he is 'able to give it.'

'I do not understand what you mean by able,' cries the Colonel—To which the Doctor answered, that it was of too tender a nature to speak more of.

'Give me your hand, Doctor,' cries the Colonel; 'I see you are a man of honour, though you wear 'a gown. It is, as you say, a matter of a tender na-'ture. Nothing, indeed, is so tender as a man's ho-'nour. Curse my liver, if any man; I mean, that 'is, if any gentleman, was to arrest me—I would as 'surely cut his throat as——

'How, Sir!' said the Doctor, 'would you com-'pensate one breach of the law by a much greater, 'and pay your debts by committing murder?'

'Why do you mention law between gentlemen?' says the Colonel. 'A man of honour wears his law 'by his side. And can the resentment of an affront 'make a gentleman guilty of murder? and what 'greater affront can one man cast upon another, than 'by arresting him? I am convinced, that he who 'would put up an arrest, would put up a slap in the 'face.'

Here the Colonel looked extremely fierce, and the Divine stared with astonishment at this doctrine; when Booth, who well knew the impossibility of opposing the Colonel's humour with success, began to play with it; and having first conveyed a private wink to the Doctor, he said, there might be cases undoubtedly where such an affront ought to be resented; but that there were others, where any resentment was impracticable: 'As for instance,' said he, 'where the man 'is arrested by a woman.'

'I could not be supposed to mean that case,' cries the Colonel; 'and you are convinced I did not mean 'it.'

'To put an end to this discourse at once, Sir,' said the

Digitized by Google

the Doctor, 'I was the plaintiff, at whose suit this 'gentleman was arrested.'

'Was you so, Sir?' cries the Colonel; 'then I have 'no more to say. Women and the clergy are upon 'the same footing. The long-robed gentry are ex-'empted from the laws of honour.'

'I do not thank you for that exemption, Sir,' cries the Doctor; 'and if honour and fighting are, as they 'seem to be, synonymous words with you, I believe 'there are some clergymen, who, in defence of their 'religion, or their country, or their friend, the only 'justifiable causes of fighting, except brave self-de-'fence, would fight as bravely as yourself, Colonel; 'and that without being paid for it.'

'Sir, you are privileged,' says the Colonel with great dignity; 'and you have my leave to say what 'you please. I respect your order, and you cannot 'offend me.'

'I will not offend you, Colonel,' cries the Doctor; 'and our order is very much obliged to you, since you 'profess so much respect to us, and pay none to our 'Master.'

'What master, Sir!' said the Colonel.

'That Master,' answered the Doctor, 'who hath 'expressly forbidden all that cutting of throats, to 'which you discover so much inclination.'

'O, your servant, Sir,' said the Colonel, 'I see what 'you are driving at; but you shall not persuade me 'to think, that religion forces me to be a coward.'

'I detest and despise the name as much as you can,' cries the Doctor; 'but you have a wrong idea of the 'word, Colonel. What were all the Greeks and Ro-'mans? were these cowards? and yet, did you ever 'hear of this butchery, which we call duelling, among 'them?'

'Yes, indeed, have I,' cries the Colonel. 'What 'else is all Mr Pope's Homer full of, but duels? Did 'not, what's his name, one of the Ahamemnons, fight 'with that paultry rascal Paris? and Diomede with, 'what d'ye call him there; and Hector with, I forget 'his name, he that was Achilles's bosom friend; and 'afterwards with Achilles himself? Nay, and in

Digitized by Google

'Dryden's Virgil, is there any thing almoſt beſides 'fighting?'

'You are a man of learning, Colonel,' cries the Doctor, 'but—'

'I thank you for that compliment,' ſaid the Colonel—'No, Sir, I do not pretend to learning; but 'I have ſome little reading, and I am not aſhamed to 'own it.'

'But are you ſure, Colonel,' cries the Doctor, 'that 'you have not made a ſmall miſtake? for I am apt to 'believe, both Mr Pope and Mr Dryden (tho' I can-'not ſay I ever read a word of either of them) ſpeak 'of wars between nations, and not of private duels: 'for of the latter I do not remember one ſingle in-'ſtance in all the Greek and Roman ſtory. In ſhort, 'it is a modern cuſtom, introduced by barbarous na-'tions ſince the times of Chriſtianity; tho' it is a di-'rect and audacious defiance of the Chriſtian law, and 'is conſequently much more ſinful in us, than it would 'have been in the heathens.'

'Drink about, Doctor,' cries the Colonel, 'and 'let us call a new cauſe: for I perceive we ſhall ne-'ver agree on this. You are a churchman, and I 'don't expect you to ſpeak your mind.'

'We are both of the ſame church, I hope,' cries the Doctor.

'I am of the church of England, Sir,' anſwered the Colonel, 'and will fight for it to the laſt drop of my 'blood.'

'It is very generous in you, Colonel,' cries the Doctor, 'to fight ſo zealouſly for a religion by which 'you are to be damned.'

'It is well for you, Doctor,' cries the Colonel, 'that 'you wear a gown: for, by all the dignity of a man, 'if any other perſon had ſaid the words you have juſt 'uttered, I would have made him eat them—Ay, 'd—n me, and my ſword into the bargain.'

Booth began to be apprehenſive, that this diſpute might grow too warm; in which caſe he feared that the Colonel's honour, together with the Champagne, might hurry him ſo far, as to forget the reſpect due, and which he profeſſed to pay, to the ſacerdotal robe.

Digitized by Google

robe. Booth, therefore, interposed between the disputants, and said, That the Colonel had very rightly proposed to call a new subject; for that it was impossible to reconcile accepting a challenge with the Christian religion, or refusing it with the modern notion of honour. 'And you must allow it, Doctor,' said he, 'to be a very hard injunction for a man to 'become infamous; and more especially for a soldier, 'who is to lose his bread into the bargain.'

'Ay, Sir,' says the Colonel, with an air of triumph, 'what say you to that?'

'Why, I say,' cries the Doctor, 'that it is much 'harder to be damned on the other side.'

'That may be,' said the Colonel: 'but damn me, 'if I would take an affront of any man breathing 'for all that. And yet I believe myself to be as good 'a Christian as wears a head. My maxim is, Never to 'give an affront, nor ever to take one; and I say, 'that is the maxim of a good Christian; and no man 'shall ever persuade me to the contrary.'

'Well, Sir,' said the Doctor, 'since that is your 'resolution, I hope no man will ever give you an 'affront.'

'I am obliged to you for your hope, Doctor,' cries the Colonel with a sneer; 'and he that doth, will be 'obliged to you for lending him your gown: for, by 'the dignity of a man, nothing out of petticoats, I 'believe, dares affront me.'

Colonel James had not hitherto joined in the discourse. In truth, his thoughts had been otherwise employed; nor is it very difficult for the reader to guess what had been the subject of them. Being waked, however, from this reverie, and having heard the two or three last speeches, he turned to his brother, and asked him, why he would introduce such a topic of conversation before a gentleman of Doctor Harrison's character?

'Brother,' cried Bath, 'I own it was wrong, and 'I ask the Doctor's pardon; I know not how it hap-'pened to arise: for you know, brother, I am not 'used to talk of these matters. They are generally 'poltroons that do. I think I need not be beholden

'to

Digitized by Google

'to my tongue to declare I am none. I have shewn 'myself in a line of battle. I believe there is no man 'will deny that; I believe I may say, no man dares 'deny, that I have done my duty'—

The Colonel was thus proceeding to prove, that his prowess was neither the subject of his discourse, nor the object of his vanity, when a servant entered, and summoned the company to tea with the ladies; a summons which Colonel James instantly obeyed, and was followed by all the rest.

But as the tea-table conversation, though extremely delightful to those who are engaged in it, may probably appear somewhat dull to the reader, we will here put an end to the chapter.

CHAP. IV.

A dialogue between Booth and Amelia.

THE next morning early, Booth went by appointment and waited on Colonel James; whence he returned to Amelia, in that kind of disposition which the great master of human passions would describe in Andromache, when she tells us she cried and smiled at the same instant.

Amelia plainly perceived the discomposure of his mind, in which the opposite affections of joy and grief were struggling for the superiority, and begged to know the occasion; upon which Booth spoke as follows:

'My dear,' said he, 'I had no intention to conceal 'from you what hath passed this morning between me 'and the Colonel, who hath oppressed me, if I may 'use that expression, with obligations. Sure never 'man had such a friend; for never was there so noble, 'so generous a heart—I cannot help this ebullition of 'gratitude, I really cannot.'—Here he paused a moment, and wiped his eyes, and then proceeded; 'You 'know, my dear, how gloomy the prospect was yes'terday before our eyes, how inevitable ruin stared 'me in the face: and the dreadful idea of having en'tailed beggary on my Amelia and her posterity 'racked

Digitized by Google

racked my mind: For, though by the goodneſs of the Doctor I had regained my liberty, the debt yet remained; and if that worthy man had a deſign of forgiving me his ſhare, this muſt have been my utmoſt hope; and the condition in which I muſt ſtill have found myſelf need not to be expatiated on. In what light then ſhall I ſee, in what words ſhall I relate, the Colonel's kindneſs! O, my dear Amelia, he hath removed the whole gloom at once, hath driven all deſpair out of my mind, and hath filled it with the moſt ſanguine, and, at the ſame time, the moſt reaſonable hopes of making a comfortable proviſion for yourſelf and my dear children. In the firſt place, then, he will advance me a ſum of money to pay off all my debts; and this on a bond to be repaid only when I ſhall become Colonel of a regiment, and not before. In the next place, he is gone this very morning to aſk a company for me, which is now vacant in the Weſt-Indies; and as he intends to puſh this with all his intereſt, neither he nor I have any doubt of his ſucceſs. Now, my dear, comes the third, which, though perhaps it ought to give me the greateſt joy, ſuch is, I own, the weakneſs of my nature, it rends my very heart-ſtrings aſunder.——I cannot mention it: for I know it will give you equal pain——though I know on all proper occaſions you can exert a manly reſolution.——You will not, I am convinced, oppoſe it, whatever you muſt ſuffer in complying.——O, my dear Amelia, I muſt ſuffer likewiſe; yet I have reſolved to bear it.——You know not what my poor heart hath ſuffered ſince he made the propoſal.—It is love for you alone which could perſuade me to ſubmit to it—Conſider our ſituation; conſider that of our children; reflect but on thoſe poor babes, whoſe future happineſs is at ſtake, and it muſt arm your reſolution. It is your intereſt and theirs that reconciled me to a propoſal, which, when the Colonel firſt made it, ſtruck me with the utmoſt horror: he hath, indeed, from theſe motives, perſuaded me into a reſolution, which I thought impoſſible for any one to have perſuaded me into—O, my dear Amelia, let me intreat you to give me

up

Digitized by Google

'up to the good of your children; as I have promised 'the Colonel to give you up to their interest and your 'own. If you refuse these terms, we are still undone; 'for he insists absolutely upon them.——Think then, 'my love, however hard they may be, necessity com- 'pels us to submit to them. I know in what light a 'woman, who loves like you, must consider such a 'proposal; and yet how many instances have you of 'women, who, from the same motives, have submitted 'to the same!'

'What can you mean, Mr Booth?' cries Amelia trembling.

'Need I explain my meaning to you more?' answered Booth.——'Did I not say, I must give up my 'Amelia?'

'Give me up!' said she.

'For a time only, I mean,' answered he; 'for a 'short time perhaps. The Colonel himself will take 'care it shall not be long.——For I know his heart; I 'shall scarce have more joy in receiving you back, 'than he will have in restoring you to my arms. In 'the mean time, he will not only be a father to my 'children, but a husband to you.'

'A husband to me!' said Amelia.

'Yes, my dear; a kind, a fond, a tender, an af- 'fectionate husband. If I had not the most certain 'assurances of this, doth my Amelia think I could 'be prevailed on to leave her?——No, my Amelia, 'he is the only man on earth who could have pre- 'vailed on me; but I know his house, his purse, his 'protection will be all at your command.---And as 'for any dislike you have conceived to his wife, let 'not that be any objection: for I am convinced he 'will not suffer her to insult you; besides, she is ex- 'tremely well-bred, and how much soever she may 'hate you in her heart, she will at least treat you with 'civility.

'Nay, the invitation is not his, but her's; and I 'am convinced they will both behave to you with the 'greatest friendship: his I am sure will be sincere, as 'to the wife of a friend entrusted to his care; and 'her's will, from good breeding, have not only the 'appearances,

Digitized by Google

'appearances, but the effects, of the truest friend-'ship.

'I understand you, my dear, at last,' said she, (indeed she had rambled into very strange conceits from some parts of his discourse), 'and I will give 'you my resolution in a word—I will do the duty 'of a wife; and that is, to attend her husband 'where-ever he goes.'

Booth attempted to reason with her, but all to no purpose. She gave, indeed, a quiet hearing to all he said, and even to those parts which most displeased her ears; I mean, those in which he exaggerated the great goodness and disinterested generosity of his friend: but her resolution remained inflexible, and resisted the force of all his arguments with a steadiness of opposition, which it would have been almost excusable in him to have construed into stubbornness.

The Doctor arrived in the midst of the dispute; and, having heard the merits of the cause on both sides, delivered his opinion in the following words:

'I have always thought it, my dear children, a 'matter of the utmost nicety, to interfere in any 'differences between husband and wife; but, since 'you both desire me, with such earnestness, to give 'you my sentiments on the present contest between 'you, I will give you my thoughts as well as I am 'able. In the first place then, can any thing be 'more reasonable, than for a wife to desire to attend 'her husband? It is, as my favourite child ob-'serves, no more than a desire to do her duty; and 'I make no doubt but that is one great reason of 'her insisting on it. And how can you yourself 'oppose it? Can love be its own enemy? or can a 'husband, who is fond of his wife, content himself 'almost on any account with a long absence from 'her?'

'You speak like an angel, my dear Doctor Har-'rison,' answered Amelia; 'I am sure, if he loved 'as tenderly as I do, he could on no account submit 'to it.'

'Pardon me, child,' cries the Doctor, 'there 'are some reasons, which would not only justify his 'leaving

Digitized by Google

'leaving you, but which must force him, if he 'hath any real love for you, joined with common 'sense, to make that election. If it was necessary, 'for instance, either to your good, or to the good 'of your children, he would not deserve the name 'of a man, I am sure not that of a husband, if he 'hesitated a moment. Nay, in that case, I am 'convinced, you yourself would be an advocate for 'what you now oppose. I fancy therefore I mistook 'him, when I apprehended he said, that the Colonel 'made his leaving you behind as the condition of 'getting him the commission: for I know my dear 'child hath too much goodness, and too much sense, 'and too much resolution, to prefer any temporary 'indulgence of her own passions to the solid advan-'tages of her whole family.'

'There, my dear,' cries Booth, 'I knew what 'opinion the Doctor would be of. Nay, I am certain, 'there is not a wise man in the kingdom who would 'say otherwise.'

'Don't abuse me, young gentleman,' said the Doc-tor, 'with appellations I don't deserve.'

'I abuse you, my dear Doctor!' cries Booth.

'Yes, my dear Sir,' answered the Doctor; 'you 'insinuated slily that I was wise, which, as the world 'understands the phrase, I should be ashamed of; 'and my comfort is, that no one can accuse me 'justly of it; I have just given an instance of the 'contrary, by throwing away my advice.'

'I hope, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that will not be the 'case.'

'Yes, Sir,' answered the Doctor. 'I know it will 'be the case in the present instance; for either you 'will not go at all, or my little turtle here will go 'with you.'

'You are in the right, Doctor,' cries Amelia.

'I am sorry for it,' said the Doctor, 'for then, I 'assure you, you are in the wrong.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'if you knew all my 'reasons, you would say they were very strong 'ones.'

Digitized by Google

'Very probably,' cries the Doctor; 'the knowledge 'that they are in the wrong, is a very ſtrong reaſon 'to ſome women to continue ſo.'

'Nay, Doctor,' cries Amelia, 'you ſhall never 'perſuade me of that. I will not believe that any 'human being ever did an action merely becauſe they 'knew it to be wrong.'

'I am obliged to you, my dear child,' ſaid the Doctor, 'for declaring your reſolution of not being 'perſuaded. Your huſband would never call me a 'wiſe man again, if, after that declaration, I ſhould 'attempt to perſuade you.'

'Well, I muſt be content,' cries Amelia, 'to let 'you think as you pleaſe.'

'That is very gracious, indeed,' ſaid the Doctor. 'Surely, in a country where the church ſuffers others 'to think as they pleaſe, it would be very hard if they 'had not themſelves the ſame liberty. And yet, as 'unreaſonable as the power of controuling men's 'thoughts is repreſented, I will ſhew you how you 'ſhall controul mine, whenever you deſire it.'

'How, pray!' cries Amelia. 'I ſhould greatly 'eſteem that power.'

'Why, whenever you act like a wiſe woman,' cries the Doctor, 'you will force me to think you ſo; and, 'whenever you are pleaſed to act as you do now, I 'ſhall be obliged, whether I will or no, to think as I 'do now.'

'Nay, dear Doctor,' cries Booth, 'I am convinced 'my Amelia will never do any thing to forfeit your 'good opinion. Conſider but the cruel hardſhip of 'what ſhe is to undergo, and you will make allow-'ances for the difficulty ſhe makes in complying. 'To ſay the truth, when I examine my own heart, I 'have more obligations to her than appear at firſt 'ſight; for, by obliging me to find arguments to per-'ſuade her, ſhe hath aſſiſted me in conquering myſelf. 'Indeed, if ſhe had ſhewn more reſolution, I ſhould 'have ſhewn leſs.'

'So you think it neceſſary then,' ſaid the Doctor, 'that there ſhould be one fool at leaſt in every mar-'ried couple. A mighty reſolution truly! and well

Digitized by Google

'worth your valuing yourſelf upon, to part with your 'wife for a few months, in order to make the for- 'tune of her and your children: when you are to 'leave her too in the care and protection of a friend 'that gives credit to the old ſtories of friendſhip, and 'doth an honour to human nature. What, in the 'name of goodneſs, do either of you think that you 'have made an union to endure for ever? How will 'either of you bear that ſeparation which muſt ſome 'time or other, and perhaps very ſoon, be the lot of 'one of you? Have you forgot that you are both 'mortal?——As for Chriſtianity, I ſee you have re- 'ſigned all pretenſions to it: for I make no doubt 'but that you have ſo ſet your hearts on the happi- 'neſs you enjoy here together, that neither of you 'ever think a word of hereafter.'

Amelia now burſt into tears; upon which Booth begged the Doctor to proceed no farther Indeed, he would not have wanted the caution: for, however blunt he appeared in his diſcourſe, he had a tender- neſs of heart which is rarely found among men; for which I know no other reaſon, than that true good- neſs is rarely found among them: for I am firmly perſuaded that the latter never poſſeſſed any human mind in any degree, without being attended by as large a portion of the former.

Thus ended the converſation on this ſubject; what followed is not worth relating till the Doctor carried off Booth with him to take a walk in the Park.

CHAP. V.

A converſation between Amelia and Doctor Harriſon, with the reſult.

AMELIA being left alone, began to conſider ſeriouſly of her condition; ſhe ſaw it would be very difficult to reſiſt the importunities of her huſband, backed by the authority of the Doctor; eſpecially as ſhe well knew how unreaſonable her declarations muſt appear to every one who was ignorant of her real motives to perſevere in it. On the other hand, ſhe was fully

Digitized by Google

fully determined, whatever might be the conſequences, to adhere firmly to her reſolution of not accepting the Colonel's invitation.

When ſhe had turned the matter every way in her mind, and vexed and tormented herſelf with much uneaſy reflection upon it, a thought at laſt occurred to her, which immediately brought her ſome comfort. This was, to make a confidant of the Doctor, and to impart to him the whole truth. This method, indeed, appeared to her now to be ſo adviſeable, that ſhe wondered ſhe had not hit upon it ſooner; but it is the nature of deſpair to blind us all to the means of ſafety, however eaſy and apparent they may be.

Having fixed her purpoſe in her mind, ſhe wrote a ſhort note to the Doctor, in which ſhe acquainted him that ſhe had ſomething of great moment to impart to him, which muſt be an entire ſecret from her huſband, and begged that ſhe might have an opportunity of communicating it as ſoon as poſſible.

Doctor Harriſon received the letter that afternoon, and immediately complied with Amelia's requeſt in viſiting her. He found her drinking tea with her huſband and Mrs Atkinſon, and ſat down and joined the company.

Soon after the removal of the tea-table, Mrs Atkinſon left the room. The Doctor then turning to Booth, ſaid, 'I hope, Captain, you have a true ſenſe 'of the obedience due to the church, though our 'clergy do not often exact it. However, it is proper 'to exerciſe our power ſometimes, in order to remind 'the laity of their duty. I muſt tell you therefore, 'that I have ſome private buſineſs with your wife; 'and I expect your immediate abſence.'

'Upon my word, Doctor,' anſwered Booth, 'no 'popiſh confeſſor, I firmly believe, ever pronounced 'his will and pleaſure with more gravity and dignity; 'none therefore was ever more immediately obeyed 'than you ſhall be.' Booth then quitted the room, and deſired the Doctor to recall him when his buſineſs with the lady was over.

Doctor Harriſon promiſed he would, and then turning to Amelia, he ſaid, 'Thus far, Madam, I

Digitized by Google

'have obeyed your commands, and am now ready to 'receive the important secret which you mention in 'your note.'

Amelia now informed her friend of all she knew, all she had seen and heard, and all that she suspected of the Colonel. The good man seemed greatly shocked at the relation, and remained in a silent astonishment. Upon which Amelia said, 'Is villainy so rare a thing, 'Sir, that it should so much surprise you?' 'No, 'child,' cries he; 'but I am shocked at seeing it so 'artfully disguised under the appearance of so much 'virtue. And to confess the truth, I believe my own 'vanity is a little hurt in having been so grossly im-'posed upon. Indeed I had a very high regard for 'this man; for, besides the great character given 'him by your husband, and the many facts I have 'heard so much redounding to his honour, he hath 'the fairest and most promising appearance I have 'ever yet beheld—A good face, they say, is a letter 'of recommendation. O nature, nature, why art 'thou so dishonest, as ever to send men with these 'false recommendations into the world!'

'Indeed, my dear Sir, I begin to grow entirely sick 'of it,' cries Amelia, 'for sure all mankind almost 'are villains in their hearts.'

'Fie, child,' cries the Doctor, 'Do not make a 'conclusion so much to the dishonour of the great 'Creator. The nature of man is far from being in 'itself evil: it abounds with benevolence, charity, 'and pity, coveting praise and honour, and shunning 'shame and disgrace. Bad education, bad habits, 'and bad customs, debauch our nature, and drive it 'headlong as it were into vice. The governors of the 'world, and I am afraid the priesthood, are answer-'able for the badness of it. Instead of discouraging 'wickedness to the utmost of their power, both are 'apt to connive at it. In the great sin of adultery 'for instance; hath the government provided any law 'to punish it; or doth the priest take any care to 'correct it? on the contrary, is the most notorious 'practice of it any detriment to a man's fortune, or 'to his reputation in the world? doth it exclude him

'from

Digitized by Google

'from any preferment in the ſtate, I had almoſt ſaid, 'in the church? is it any blotch in his eſcutcheon? 'any bar to his honour? is he not to be found every 'day in the aſſemblies of women of the higheſt 'quality? in the cloſets of the greateſt men, and 'even at the tables of biſhops? What wonder then, 'if the community in general treat this monſtrous 'crime as matter of jeſt, and that men give way to 'the temptations of a violent appetite, when the in-'dulgence of it is protected by law and countenanced 'by cuſtom? I am convinced there are good ſtamina 'in the nature of this very man: for he hath done 'acts of friendſhip and generoſity to your huſband, 'before he could have any evil deſign on your chaſtity; 'and in a Chriſtian ſociety, which I no more eſteem 'this nation to be, than I do any part of Turkey, I 'doubt not but this very Colonel would have made a 'worthy and valuable member.'

'Indeed, my dear Sir,' cries Amelia, 'you are the 'wiſeſt as well as beſt man in the world.——'

'Not a word of my wiſdom,' cries the Doctor. 'I 'have not a grain——I am not the leaſt verſed in the 'Chrematiſtic* art, as an old friend of mine calls it. 'I know not how to get a ſhilling, nor how to keep it 'in my pocket, if I had it.'

'But you underſtand human nature to the bottom,' anſwered Amelia; 'and your mind is the treaſury of 'all ancient and modern learning.'

'You are a little flatterer,' cries the Doctor; 'but 'I diſlike you not for it. And to ſhow you I don't, I 'will return your flattery: and tell you, you have 'acted with great prudence in concealing this affair 'from your huſband; but you have drawn me into 'a ſcrape: for I have promiſed to dine with this fel-'low again to-morrow; and you have made it impoſ-'ſible for me to keep my word.'

'Nay but, dear Sir,' cries Amelia, 'for Heaven's 'ſake, take care: if you ſhew any kind of diſreſpect to 'the Colonel, my huſband may be led into ſome ſuſ-'picion——eſpecially after our conference.'

* The art of getting wealth is ſo called by Ariſtotle in his Politics.

Digitized by Google

'Fear nothing, child, I will give him no hint; 'and that I may be certain of not doing it, I will 'ſtay away. You do not think, I hope, that I will 'join in a chearful converſation with ſuch a man; 'that I will ſo far betray my character as to give any 'countenance to ſuch flagitious proceedings. Beſides, 'my promiſe was only conditional; and I do not 'know whether I could otherways have kept it; for I 'expect an old friend every day, who comes to town 'twenty miles on foot to ſee me; whom I ſhall not 'part with on any account: for, as he is very poor, 'he may imagine I treat him with diſreſpect.'

'Well, Sir,' cries Amelia, 'I muſt admire you, and 'love you for your goodneſs.'

'Muſt you love me?' cries the Doctor, 'I could 'cure you now in a minute, if I pleaſed.'

'Indeed, I defy you, Sir,' ſaid Amelia.

'If I could but perſuade you,' anſwered he, 'that 'I thought you not handſome, away would vaniſh all 'ideas of goodneſs in an inſtant. Confeſs honeſtly, 'would they not?'

'Perhaps I might blame the goodneſs of your 'eyes,' replied Amelia; 'and that is perhaps an ho-'neſter confeſſion than you expected. But do, pray, 'Sir, be ſerious; and give me your advice what to 'do. Conſider the difficult game I have to play: for 'I am ſure, after what I have told you, you would 'not even ſuffer me to remain under the roof of this 'Colonel.'

'No, indeed, would I not,' ſaid the Doctor, 'whilſt 'I have a houſe of my own to entertain you.'

'But how to diſſuade my huſband,' continued ſhe, 'without giving him any ſuſpicion of the real cauſe, 'the conſequences of his gueſſing at which, I tremble 'to think upon.'

'I will conſult my pillow upon it,' ſaid the Doctor, 'and in the morning you ſhall ſee me again. In the 'mean time be comforted, and compoſe the perturba-'tions of your mind.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I put my whole truſt in 'you.'

'I am

Digitized by Google

'I am sorry to hear it,' cries the Doctor. 'Your 'innocence may give you a very confident trust in 'a much more powerful assistance. However, I will 'do all I can to serve you; and now, if you please, 'we will call back your husband: for, upon my word, 'he hath shewn a good catholic patience. And where 'is the honest Serjeant and his wife? I am pleased 'with the behaviour of you both to that worthy fel-'low, in opposition to the custom of the world; 'which, instead of being formed on the precepts of 'our religion to consider each other as brethren, 'teaches us to regard those who are a degree below 'us, either in rank or fortune, as a species of beings 'of an inferior order in the creation.'

The Captain now returned into the room, as did the Serjeant and Mrs Atkinson; and the two couple, with the Doctor, spent the evening together in great mirth and festivity; for the Doctor was one of the best companions in the world; and a vein of chearfulness, good-humour and pleasantry, ran through his conversation, with which it was impossible to resist being pleased.

CHAP. VI.

Containing as surprising an accident as is perhaps recorded in history.

BOOTH had acquainted the Serjeant with the great goodness of Colonel James, and with the chearful prospects which he entertained from it. This Atkinson, behind the curtain, communicated to his wife. The conclusion, which she drew from it, need scarce be hinted to the reader. She made, indeed, no scruple of plainly and bluntly telling her husband that the Colonel had a most manifest intention to attack the chastity of Amelia.

This thought gave the poor Serjeant great uneasiness, and after having kept him long awake, tormented him in his sleep with a most horrid dream, in which he imagined that he saw the Colonel standing by the bed-side of Amelia, with a naked sword in his hand, and

Digitized by Google

and threatening to ſtab her inſtantly, unleſs ſhe complied with his deſires. Upon this, the Serjeant ſtarted up in his bed, and catching his wife by the throat, cried out, 'D—n you, put up your ſword this inſtant, 'and leave the room, or by Heaven I'll drive mine 'to your heart's blood.'

This rough treatment immediately rouſed Mrs Atkinſon from her ſleep, who no ſooner perceived the poſition of her huſband, and felt his hand graſping her throat, than ſhe gave a violent ſhriek, and preſently fell into a fit.

Atkinſon now waked likewiſe, and ſoon became ſenſible of the violent agitations of his wife. He immediately leaped out of bed, and running for a bottle of water, began to ſprinkle her very plentifully; but all to no purpoſe, ſhe neither ſpoke nor gave any ſymptoms of recovery. Atkinſon then began to roar aloud; upon which Booth, who lay under him, jumped from his bed, and ran up with the lighted candle in his hand. The Serjeant had no ſooner taken the candle, than he ran with it to the bed-ſide. Here he beheld a ſight which almoſt deprived him of his ſenſes. The bed appeared to be all over blood, and his wife weltering in the midſt of it. Upon this the Serjeant, almoſt in a frenzy, cried out, 'O Heavens! 'I have killed my wife! I have ſtabbed her! I have 'ſtabbed her!'—'What can be the meaning of all 'this?' ſaid Booth.—'O, Sir,' cries the Serjeant, 'I 'dreamed I was reſcuing your lady from the hands 'of Colonel James, and I have killed my poor wife.'—Here he threw himſelf upon the bed by her, caught her in his arms, and behaved like one frantic with deſpair.

By this time, Amelia had thrown on a wrapping-gown, and was come up into the room, where the Serjeant and his wife were lying on the bed, and Booth ſtanding like a motionleſs ſtatue by the bed ſide. Amelia had ſome difficulty to conquer the effects of her own ſurpriſe on this occaſion; for a more ghaſtly and horrible ſight than the bed preſented, could not be conceived.

Amelia

Amelia sent Booth to call up the maid of the house, in order to lend her assistance; but, before his return, Mrs Atkinson began to come to herself; and soon after, to the inexpressible joy of the serjeant, it was discovered she had no wound. Indeed the delicate nose of Amelia soon made that discovery, which the grosser smell of the serjeant, and perhaps his fright, had prevented him from making: for now it appeared that the red liquor with which the bed was stained, though it may, perhaps, sometimes run through the veins of a fine lady, was not what is properly called blood; but was, indeed, no other than cherry-brandy, a bottle of which Mrs Atkinson always kept in her room to be ready for immediate use, and to which she used to apply for comfort in all her afflictions. This the poor serjeant, in his extreme hurry, had mistaken for a bottle of water. Matters were now soon accommodated; and no other mischief appeared to be done, unless to the bed-cloaths, Amelia and Booth returned back to their room; and Mrs Atkinson rose from her bed, in order to equip it with a pair of clean sheets.

And thus the adventure would have ended without producing any kind of consequence, had not the words, which the Serjeant uttered in his frenzy, made some slight impression on Booth: so much, at least, as to awaken his curiosity; so that in the morning when he arose, he sent for the Serjeant, and desired to hear the particulars of his dream, since Amelia was concerned in it.

The Serjeant at first seemed unwilling to comply, and endeavoured to make excuses. This, perhaps, encreased Booth's curiosity, and he said, 'Nay, I am 'resolved to hear it. Why, you simpleton, do you 'imagine me weak enough to be affected by a dream, 'however terrible it may be?'

'Nay, Sir,' cries the Serjeant, 'as for that matter, 'dreams have sometimes fallen out to be true.—— 'One of my own, I know, did so, concerning your 'honour: for when you courted my young lady, I 'dreamed you was married to her; and yet it was 'at a time when neither I myself, nor any of the 'country,

Digitized by Google

'country, thought you would ever obtain her. 'But, Heaven forbid this dream ſhould ever come 'to paſs!'

'Why, what was this dream?' cries Booth. 'I 'inſiſt on knowing.'

'To be ſure, Sir,' cries the Serjeant, 'I muſt not 'refuſe you; but, I hope, you will never think any 'more of it. Why then, Sir, I dreamed that your 'honour was gone to the Weſt-Indies, and had left 'my lady in the care of Colonel James: and laſt 'night, I dreamed the Colonel came to my lady's bed-'ſide offering to raviſh her; and with a drawn ſword 'in his hand, threatened to ſtab her that moment, 'unleſs ſhe would comply with his deſires. How I 'came to be by, I know not; but I dreamed, I ruſhed 'upon him, caught him by the throat, and ſwore I 'would put him to death, unleſs he inſtantly left the 'room.—Here I waked, and this was my dream. 'I never paid any regard to a dream in my life—'but, indeed, I never dreamed any thing ſo very plain 'as this. It appeared downright reality. I am ſure, 'I have left the marks of my fingers in my wife's 'throat. I would not have taken a hundred pound 'to have uſed her ſo.'

'Faith,' cries Booth, 'it was an odd dream—and 'not ſo eaſy to be accounted for, as that you had 'formerly of my marriage; for, as Shakeſpeare ſays, '*Dreams denote a foregone concluſion.* Now it is im-'poſſible you ſhould ever have thought of any ſuch 'matter as this.'

'However, Sir,' cries the Serjeant, 'it is in your 'honour's power to prevent any poſſibility of this 'dream's coming to paſs, by not leaving my lady to 'the care of the Colonel: if you muſt go from her, 'certainly there are other places where ſhe may be 'with great ſafety; and ſince my wife tells me that 'my lady is ſo very unwilling, whatever reaſons ſhe 'may have, I hope your honour will oblige her.'

'Now I recollect it,' cries Booth, 'Mrs Atkinſon 'hath once or twice dropped ſome diſreſpectful words 'of the Colonel. He hath done ſomething to diſoblige 'her.'

'He

'He hath, indeed, Sir,' replied the ſerjeant: 'He 'hath ſaid that of her which ſhe doth not deſerve, 'and for which, if he had not been my ſuperior of-'ficer, I would have cut both his ears off.—Nay, for 'that matter, he can ſpeak ill of other people beſides 'her.'

'Do you know, Atkinſon,' cries Booth very gravely, 'that you are talking of the deareſt friend I 'have?'

'To be honeſt then,' anſwered the ſerjeant, 'I 'do not think ſo. If I did, I ſhould love him much 'better than I do.'

'I muſt and will have this explained,' cries Booth. 'I have too good an opinion of you, Atkinſon, to 'think you would drop ſuch things as you have, with-'out ſome reaſon——and I will know it.'

'I am ſorry I have dropt a word,' cries Atkinſon. 'I am ſure I did not intend it; and your honour hath 'drawn it from me unawares.'

'Indeed, Atkinſon,' cries Booth, 'you have made 'me very uneaſy, and I muſt be ſatisfied.'

'Then, Sir,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'you ſhall give me 'your word of honour; or I will be cut into ten 'thouſand pieces before I will mention another ſyl-'lable.'

'What ſhall I promiſe?' ſaid Booth.

'That you will not reſent any thing I ſhall lay to 'the Colonel,' anſwered Atkinſon.

'Reſent!——Well, I give you my honour,' ſaid Booth.

The ſerjeant made him bind himſelf over and over again; and then related to him the ſcene which formerly paſt between the Colonel and himſelf, as far as concerned Booth himſelf; but concealed all that more immediately related to Amelia.

'Atkinſon,' cries Booth, 'I cannot be angry with 'you; for I know you love me, and I have many ob-'ligations to you; but you have done wrong in cen-'ſuring the Colonel for what he ſaid of me. I de-'ſerve all that he ſaid; and his cenſures proceeded 'from his friendſhip.'

'But

Digitized by Google

'But it was not so kind, Sir,' said Atkinson, 'to 'say such things to me who am but a serjeant, and at 'such a time too.'

'I will hear no more,' cries Booth. 'Be assured 'you are the only man I would forgive on this occa- 'sion; and I forgive you only on condition you never 'speak a word more of this nature. This silly dream 'hath intoxicated you.'

'I have done, Sir,' cries the serjeant. 'I know my 'distance, and whom I am to obey; but I have one 'favour to beg of your honour, never to mention a 'word of what I have said to my lady; for I know 'she never would forgive me; I know she never 'would, by what my wife hath told me. Besides, 'you need not mention it, Sir, to my lady; for she 'knows it already, and a great deal more.'

Booth presently parted from the serjeant, having desired him to close his lips on this occasion, and repaired to his wife, to whom he related the serjeant's dream.

Amelia turned as white as snow, and fell into so violent a trembling, that Booth plainly perceived her emotion, and immediately partook of it himself.——'Sure, my dear,' said he, staring wildly, 'there is 'more in this than I know. A silly dream could not 'so discompose you. I beg you, I intreat you to tell 'me—hath ever Colonel James'———

At the very mention of the Colonel's name, Amelia fell on her knees, and begged her husband not to frighten her.

'What do I say, my dear love,' cried Booth, 'that 'can frighten you?'

'Nothing, my dear,' said she.—'But my spirits are 'so discomposed with the dreadful scene I saw last 'night, that a dream, which at another time I should 'have laughed at, hath shocked me. Do but promise 'me that you will not leave me behind you, and I 'am easy.'

'You may be so,' cries Booth; 'for I will never 'deny you any thing.—But make me easy too. I 'must know if you have seen any thing in Colonel 'James to displease you.'

Digitized by Google

'Why ſhould you ſuſpect it?' cries Amelia.

'You torment me to death,' cries Booth. 'By 'Heavens! I will know the truth. Hath he ever ſaid 'or done any thing which you diſlike?'

'How, my dear,' ſaid Amelia, 'can you imagine 'I ſhould diſlike a man who is ſo much your friend? 'Think of all the obligations you have to him, and 'then you may eaſily reſolve yourſelf. Do you think, 'becauſe I refuſe to ſtay behind you in this houſe, 'that I have any objection to him?—No, my dear, 'had he done a thouſand times more than he hath, 'was he an angel inſtead of a man, I would not quit 'my Billy. There's the ſore, my dear; there's the 'miſery, to be left by you.'

Booth embraced her with the moſt paſſionate raptures, and looking on her with inexpreſſible tenderneſs, cried, 'Upon my ſoul, I am not worthy of you——I 'am a fool, and yet you cannot blame me.——If the 'ſtupid miſer hoards, with ſuch care, his worthleſs 'treaſure; if he watches it with ſuch anxiety; if every 'apprehenſion of another's ſharing the leaſt part, fills 'his ſoul with ſuch agonies; O Amelia! what muſt 'be my condition, what terrors muſt I feel, while I am 'watching over a jewel of ſuch real, ſuch ineſtimable 'worth?'

'I can, with great truth, return the compliment,' cries Amelia. 'I have my treaſure too; and am 'ſo much a miſer, that no force ſhall ever tear me 'from it.'

'I am aſhamed of my folly,' cries Booth; 'and 'yet it is all from extreme tenderneſs. Nay, you 'yourſelf are the occaſion.—Why will you ever attempt to keep a ſecret from me! do you think I 'ſhould have reſented to my friend, his juſt cenſure of 'my conduct?'

'What cenſure, my dear love?' cries Amelia.

'Nay, the ſerjeant hath told me all,' cries Booth, '—Nay, and that he hath told it to you.—Poor ſoul! 'thou couldſt not endure to hear me accuſed, though 'never ſo juſtly, and by ſo good a friend. Indeed, 'my dear, I have diſcovered the cauſe of that reſentment to the Colonel, which you could not hide from

Digitized by Google

'me.—I love you, I adore you for it. Indeed, I could 'not forgive a ſlighting word on you.—But why do 'I compare things ſo unlike? what the Colonel ſaid of 'me was juſt and true; every reflection on my Amelia 'muſt be falſe and villainous.'

The diſcernment of Amelia was extremely quick; and ſhe now perceived what had happened, and how much her huſband knew of the truth. She reſolved therefore to humour him, and fell ſeverely on Colonel James for what he had ſaid to the ſerjeant, which Booth endeavoured all he could to ſoften; and thus ended this affair, which had brought Booth to the very brink of a diſcovery, which muſt have given him the higheſt torment, if it had not produced any of thoſe tragical effects which Amelia apprehended.

CHAP. VII.

In which the author appears to be maſter of that profound learning called The Knowledge of the Town.

MRS James now came to pay a morning's viſit to Amelia. She entered the room with her uſual gaiety, and after a ſlight preface, addreſſing herſelf to Booth, ſaid, ſhe had been quarreling with her huſband on his account. 'I know not,' ſaid ſhe, 'what he means by thinking of ſending you the Lord 'knows whither. I have inſiſted on his aſking ſome-'thing for you nearer home; and it would be the 'hardeſt thing in the world, if he ſhould not obtain 'it. Are we reſolved never to encourage merit; but 'to throw away all our preferments on thoſe who do 'not deſerve them? what a ſet of contemptible 'wretches do we ſee ſtrutting about the town in ſcar-'let!'

Booth made a very low bow, and modeſtly ſpoke in diſparagement of himſelf. To which ſhe anſwered, 'Indeed, Mr Booth, you have merit. I have 'heard it from my brother, who is a judge of thoſe 'matters, and I am ſure cannot be ſuſpected of flat-'tery. He is your friend as well as myſelf; and we 'will

Digitized by Google

'will never let Mr James rest till he hath got you a 'commission in England.'

Booth bowed again, and was offering to speak, but she interrupted him, saying, 'I will have no thanks, 'nor no fine speeches. If I can do you any service, I 'shall think I am only paying the debt of friendship 'to my dear Mrs Booth.'

Amelia, who had long since forgot the dislike she had taken to Mrs James at her first seeing her in town, had attributed it to the right cause, and had begun to resume her former friendship for her, expressed very warm sentiments of gratitude on this occasion. She told Mrs James, she should be eternally obliged to her if she could succeed in her kind endeavours: for that the thoughts of parting again with her husband had given her the utmost concern. 'Indeed,' added she, 'I cannot help saying, he hath some merit in 'the service: for he hath received two dreadful 'wounds in it, one of which very greatly endangered 'his life; and I am convinced, if his pretensions were 'backed with any interest, he would not fail of suc-'cess.'

'They shall be backed with interest,' cries Mrs James, 'if my husband hath any. He hath no fa-'vour to ask for himself, nor for any other friend 'that I know of; and indeed, to grant a man his just 'due, ought hardly to be thought a favour. Resume 'your old gaiety, therefore, my dear Emily. Lord! 'I remember the time when you was much the gayer 'creature of the two. But you make an arrant mope 'of yourself, by confining yourself at home. One 'never meets you any where. Come, you shall go 'with me to the Lady Betty Castleton's.'

'Indeed you must excuse me, my dear,' answered Amelia, 'I do not know Lady Betty.'

'Not know Lady Betty! how is that possible?—'But no matter, I will introduce you—She keeps a 'morning rout; hardly a rout, indeed; a little bit 'of a drum—only four or five tables—Come, take 'your capuchine; you positively shall go—Booth, 'you shall go with us too. Though you are with your 'wife, another woman will keep you in countenance.'

Digitized by Google

'La! child,' cries Amelia, 'how you rattle?'

'I am in ſpirits,' anſwered Mrs James, 'this 'morning: for I won four rubbers together laſt night; 'and betted the things, and won almoſt every bet. I 'am in luck, and we will contrive to be partners— 'Come.'

'Nay, child, you ſhall not refuſe Mrs James,' ſaid Booth.

'I have ſcarce ſeen my children to-day,' anſwered Amelia. 'Beſides, I mortally deteſt cards.'

'Deteſt cards!' cries Mrs James. 'How can you 'be ſo ſtupid? I would not live a day without them— 'Nay, indeed, I do not believe I ſhould be able to 'exiſt. Is there ſo delightful a ſight in the world, as 'the four honours in one's own hand, unleſs it be 'three natural aces at bragg—And you really hate 'cards!'

'Upon reflexion,' cries Amelia, 'I have ſome- 'times had great pleaſure in them—in ſeeing my 'children build houſes with them. My little boy is 'ſo dextrous, that he will ſometimes build up the 'whole pack.'

'Indeed, Booth,' cries Mrs James, 'this good 'woman of yours is ſtrangely altered ſince I knew her 'firſt; but ſhe will always be a good creature.'

'Upon my word, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'you 'are altered too very greatly; but I doubt not to live 'to ſee you alter again, when you come to have as 'many children as I have.'

'Children!' cries Mrs James, 'you make me ſhud- 'der. How can you envy me the only circumſtance 'which makes matrimony comfortable?'

'Indeed, my dear,' ſaid Amelia, 'you injure me: 'for I envy no woman's happineſs in marriage.' At theſe words, ſuch looks paſſed between Booth and his wife, as to a ſenſible by-ſtander, would have made all the airs of Mrs James appear in the higheſt degree contemptible, and would have rendered herſelf the object of compaſſion. Nor could that lady avoid looking a little ſilly on the occaſion.

Amelia now, at the earneſt deſire of her huſband, accoutred herſelf to attend her friend; but firſt ſhe inſiſted

Digitized by Google

ſiſted on viſiting her children, to whom ſhe gave ſeveral hearty kiſſes, and then recommending them to the care of Mrs Atkinſon, ſhe and her huſband accompanied Mrs James to the rout; where few of my fine readers will be diſpleaſed to make part of the company.

The two ladies and Booth then entered an apartment beſet with card-tables, like the rooms at Bath and Tunbridge. Mrs James immediately introduced her friends to lady Betty; who received them very civilly, and preſently engaged Booth and Mrs James in a party at whiſt: for, as to Amelia, ſhe ſo much declined playing, that, as the party could be filled without her, ſhe was permitted to ſit by.

And now, who ſhould make his appearance but the noble peer, of whom ſo much honourable mention hath already been made in this hiſtory. He walked directly up to Amelia, and addreſſed her with as perfect a confidence, as if he had not been in the leaſt conſcious of having in any manner diſpleaſed her; tho' the reader will hardly ſuppoſe that Mrs Elliſon had kept any thing a ſecret from him.

Amelia was not, however, ſo forgetful. She made him a very diſtant curteſy, would ſcarce vouchſafe an anſwer to any thing he ſaid; and took the firſt opportunity of ſhifting her chair, and retiring from him.

Her behaviour, indeed, was ſuch, that the peer plainly perceived, that he ſhould get no advantage by purſuing her any farther at preſent. Inſtead, therefore, of attempting to follow her, he turned on his heel, and addreſſed his diſcourſe to another lady; though he could not avoid often caſting his eyes towards Amelia as long as ſhe remained in the room.

Fortune, which ſeems to have been generally no great friend to Mr Booth, gave him no extraordinary marks of her favour at play. He loſt two full rubbers, which coſt him five guineas; after which Amelia, who was uneaſy at his lordſhip's preſence, begged him in a whiſper to return home; with which requeſt he directly complied.

Nothing, I think, remarkable happened to Booth, unleſs the renewal of his acquaintance with an officer

Digitized by Google

whom he had known abroad, and who made one of his party at the whist table.

The name of this gentleman, with whom the reader will hereafter be better acquainted, was Trent. He had formerly been in the same regiment with Booth, and there was some intimacy between them. Captain Trent expressed great delight in meeting his brother officer, and both mutually promised to visit each other.

The scenes which had past the preceding night and that morning had so confused Amelia's thoughts, that in the hurry in which she was carried off by Mrs James, she had entirely forgot her appointment with Doctor Harrison. When she was informed at her return home, that the Doctor had been to wait upon her, and had expressed some anger at her being gone out, she became greatly uneasy, and begged of her husband to go to the Doctor's lodgings, and make her apology.

But lest the reader should be as angry with the Doctor, as he had declared himself with Amelia, we think proper to explain the matter. Nothing then was farther from the Doctor's mind than the conception of any anger towards Amelia. On the contrary, when the girl answered him, that her mistress was not at home, the Doctor said with great good humour, 'How! not at home! then tell your mistress she is a 'giddy vagabond, and I will come to see her no more 'till she sends for me.'—This the poor girl, from misunderstanding one word, and half forgetting the rest, had construed into great passion, and several very bad words, and a declaration that he would never see Amelia any more.

CHAP. VIII.

In which two strangers make their appearance.

BOOTH went to the Doctor's lodgings, and found him engaged with his country friend and his son, a young gentleman who was lately in orders, both whom the Doctor had left, to keep his appointment with Amelia.

After what we mentioned at the end of the last chapter,

Digitized by Google

chapter, we need take little notice of the apology made by Booth, or the Doctor's reception of it, which was in his peculiar manner. 'Your wife,' ſaid he, 'is a vain huſſy to think herſelf worth my anger; but 'tell her, I have the vanity myſelf to think I cannot 'be angry without a better cauſe. And yet tell her 'I intend to puniſh her for her levity; for if you 'go abroad, I have determined to take her down 'with me into the country, and make her do pe-'nance there till your return.'

'Dear Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'I know not how to thank 'you, if you are in earneſt.'

'I aſſure you then I am in earneſt,' cries the Doctor; 'but you need not thank me, however, ſince you know 'not how.'——

'But would not that, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'be ſhew-'ing a ſlight to the Colonel's invitation? and you 'know I have ſo many obligations to him.'

'Don't tell me of the Colonel,' cries the Doctor, 'the church is to be firſt ſerved. Beſides, Sir, I have 'priority of right, even to you yourſelf. You ſtole 'my little lamb from me: for I was her firſt love.'

'Well, Sir,' cries Booth, 'if I ſhould be ſo un-'happy to leave her to any one, ſhe muſt herſelf de-'termine: and I believe, it will not be difficult to 'gueſs where her choice will fall; for of all men, next 'to her huſband, I believe, none can contend with Dr 'Harriſon in her favour.'

'Since you ſay ſo,' cries the Doctor,——'fetch her 'hither to dinner with us: for I am at leaſt ſo good 'a Chriſtian to love thoſe that love me——I will ſhew 'you my daughter, my old friend; for I am really 'proud of her—and you may bring my grand-children 'with you, if you pleaſe.'

Booth made ſome compliments, and then went on his errand. As ſoon as he was gone, the old gentle-man ſaid to the Doctor, 'Pray, my good friend, what 'daughter is this of yours! I never ſo much as heard 'that you was married.'

'And what then?' cries the Doctor, 'did you ever 'hear that a pope was married? and yet ſome of them

'have

'have had ſons and daughters, I believe; but, however, this young gentleman will abſolve me without obliging me to penance.'

'I have not yet that power,' anſwered the young clergyman: 'for I am only in deacon's orders.'

'Are you not?' cries the Doctor, 'why then, I will abſolve myſelf. You are to know then, my good friend, that this young lady was the daughter of a neighbour of mine, who is ſince dead, and whoſe ſins I hope are forgiven; for ſhe had too much to anſwer for on her child's account. Her father was my intimate acquaintance and friend; a worthier man, indeed, I believe, never lived. He died ſuddenly when his children were infants; and, perhaps, to the ſuddenneſs of his death it was owing, that he did not recommend any care of them to me. However, I, in ſome meaſure, took that charge upon me; and particularly of her whom I call my daughter. Indeed, as ſhe grew up, ſhe diſcovered ſo many good qualities, that ſhe wanted not the remembrance of her father's merit to recommend her. I do her no more than juſtice, when I ſay, ſhe is one of the beſt creatures I ever knew. She hath a ſweetneſs of temper, a generoſity of ſpirit, an openneſs of heart—in a word, ſhe hath a true Chriſtian diſpoſition. I may call her an Iſraelite indeed, in whom there is no guile.'

'I wiſh you joy of your daughter,' cries the old gentleman: 'for to a man of your diſpoſition, to find out an adequate object of your benevolence, is, I acknowledge, to find a treaſure.'

'It is, indeed, a happineſs,' cries the Doctor.

'The greateſt difficulty,' added the gentleman, 'which perſons of your turn of mind meet with, is in finding proper objects of their goodneſs: for nothing ſure can be more irkſome to a generous mind, than to diſcover, that it hath thrown away all its good offices on a ſoil that bears no other fruit than ingratitude.'

'I remember,' cries the Doctor, 'Phocylides ſaith,

Digitized by Google

Μὴ κακὸν εὖ ἔρξῃς· σπείρειν ἶσον ἐς ἰνὶ πόντῳ. *

'But he speaks more like a philosopher than a 'Christian. I am more pleased with a French writer, 'one of the best, indeed, that I ever read; who 'blames men for lamenting the ill return which is so 'often made to the best offices †. A true Christian 'can never be disappointed, if he doth not receive his 'reward in this world: the labourer might as well 'complain, that is not paid his hire in the middle of 'the day.'

'I own, indeed,' said the gentleman, 'if we see it 'in that light.'——

'And in what light should we see it?' answered the Doctor. 'Are we like Agrippa, only almost Christians? or, is Christianity a matter of bare theory, 'and not a rule for our practice?'

'Practical undoubtedly, undoubtedly practical,' cries the gentleman. 'Your example might indeed 'have convinced me long ago, that we ought to do 'good to every one.'

'Pardon me, father,' cries the young divine, 'that 'is rather a heathenish than a Christian doctrine. Homer, I remember, introduces in his Iliad one Axylus, of whom he says,

‡ Φίλος δ' ἦν ἀνθρώποισι
Πάντας γὰρ φιλέεσκεν,

'But Plato, who of all the heathens came nearest to 'the Christian philosophy, condemned this as impious doctrine; so Eustathius tells us, folio 574

'I know he doth,' cries the Doctor, 'and so Barnes 'tells us, in his note upon the place; but if you remember the rest of the quotation, as well as you do 'that from Eustathius, you might have added the observation which Mr Dryden makes in favour of this

* To do a kindness to a bad man, is like sowing your seed in the sea. † D'Esprit.

‡ He was a friend to mankind, for he loved them all.

'passage,

Digitized by Google

'passage, that he found not in all the Latin authors 'so admirable an instance of extensive humanity. You 'might likewise have remembered the noble senti- 'ment, with which Mr Barnes ends his note, the 'sense of which is taken from the fifth chapter of 'Matthew,

——ὃς ἡ φάος ἠελίοιο
Μιλδ' ἀγαθοῖσι κακοῖσί τ' ἐπ' ἀνδράσιν ἐξανατέλλει.

'It seems, therefore, as if this character rather be- 'came a Christian than a heathen; for Homer could 'not have transcribed it from any of his deities. 'Whom is it, therefore, we imitate by such extensive 'benevolence?'

'What a prodigious memory you have!' cries the old gentleman. 'Indeed, son, you must not contend 'with the Doctor in these matters.'

'I shall not give my opinion hastily,' cries the son. 'I know again what Mr Poole in his Anno- 'tations, says on that verse of St Matthew,—That it 'is only to *heap up coals of fire upon their heads*—How 'are we to understand, pray, the text immediately 'preceding? *Love your enemies, bless them that curse 'you, do good to them that hate you.*'

'You know, I suppose, young gentleman,' said the Doctor, 'how these words are generally understood— 'The commentator you mention, I think, tells us, 'That love is not here to be taken in the strict sense, 'so as to signify the complacency of the heart; you 'may hate your enemies as God's enemies, and seek 'due revenge of them for his honour; and for your 'own sakes too you may seek moderate satisfaction of 'them; but then, you are to love them with a love 'consistent with these things—that is to say, in plainer 'words, you are to love them and hate them, and 'bless and curse, and do them good and mischief.'

'Excellent! admirable!' said the old gentleman. 'You have a most inimitable turn to ridicule.'

'I do not approve ridicule,' said the son, 'on 'such subjects.'

'Nor

'Nor I neither,' cries the Doctor. 'I will give you 'my opinion, therefore, very ſeriouſly. The two 'verſes taken together contain a very poſitive precept, 'delivered in the plaineſt words, and yet illuſtrated 'by the cleareſt inſtance, in the conduct of the Su- 'preme Being; and laſtly, the practice of this pre- 'cept is moſt nobly inforced by the reward annexed— '*that ye may be the children*, and ſo forth. No man, 'who underſtands what it is to love, and to bleſs, and 'to do good, can miſtake the meaning. But if they 'required any comment, the ſcripture itſelf affords 'enow. *If thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirſt, 'give him drink: not rendering evil for evil, or railing 'for railing, but contrariewiſe, bleſſing.*—They do not, 'indeed, want the comments of men, who, when 'they cannot bend their minds to the obedience of 'ſcripture, are deſirous to wreſt ſcripture to a com- 'pliance with their own inclinations.'

'Moſt nobly and juſtly obſerved!' cries the old gen- tleman. 'Indeed, my good friend, you have ex- 'plained the text with the utmoſt perſpicuity.'

'But if this be the meaning,' cries the ſon, 'there 'muſt be an end of all law and juſtice——for I do 'not ſee how any man can proſecute his enemy in a 'court of juſtice.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' cries the Doctor. 'Indeed, as 'an enemy merely, and from a ſpirit of revenge, 'he cannot, and he ought not to proſecute him; but 'as an offender againſt the laws of his country, he 'may, and it is his duty ſo to do: is there any ſpirit 'of revenge in the magiſtrates or officers of juſtice, 'when they puniſh criminals? Why do ſuch, ordi- 'narily I mean, concern themſelves in inflicting pu- 'niſhments, but becauſe it is their duty? and why 'may not a private man deliver an offender into the 'hands of juſtice, from the ſame laudable motive? 'Revenge, indeed, of all kinds is ſtrictly prohibited; 'wherefore, as we are not to execute it with our own 'hands, ſo neither are we to make uſe of the law as 'the inſtrument of private malice, and to worry each 'other with inveteracy and rancour. And where is 'the great difficulty in obeying this wiſe, this gene-

'rous,

Digitized by Google

'rous, this noble precept? If revenge be, as a cer-
'tain divine, not greatly to his honour, calls it, the
'moſt luſcious morſel the devil ever dropped into the
'mouth of a ſinner, it muſt be allowed at leaſt to coſt
'us often extremely dear. It is a dainty, if indeed
'it be one, which we come at with great inquietude,
'with great difficulty, and with great danger. How-
'ever pleaſant it may be to the palate, while we are
'feeding on it, it is ſure to leave a bitter reliſh be-
'hind it; and ſo far, indeed, it may be called a lu-
'ſcious morſel, that the moſt greedy appetites are ſoon
'glutted, and the moſt eager longing for it is ſoon
'turned into loathing and repentance. I allow there
'is ſomething tempting in its outward appearance;
'but it is like the beautiful colour of ſome poiſons,
'from which, however they may attract our eyes, a
'regard to our own welfare commands us to abſtain.
'And this is an abſtinence to which wiſdom alone,
'without any divine command, hath been often found
'adequate; with inſtances of which, the Greek and
'Latin authors every where abound. May not a
'Chriſtian, therefore, be well aſhamed of making a
'ſtumbling-block of a precept, which is not only con-
'ſiſtent with his worldly intereſt, but to which ſo
'noble an incentive is propoſed?'

The old gentleman fell into raptures at this ſpeech, and after making many compliments to the Doctor upon it, he turned to his ſon, and told him, he had an opportunity now of learning more in one day, than he had learned at the univerſity in a twelve-month.

The ſon replied, that he allowed the doctrine to be extremely good in general, and that he agreed with the greater part; 'but I muſt make a diſtinction,' ſaid he. However, he was interrupted from his diſtinction at preſent; for now Booth returned with Amelia and the children.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

A scene of modern wit and humour.

IN the afternoon, the old gentleman proposed a walk to Vauxhall; a place of which, he said, he had heard much, but had never seen it.

The Doctor readily agreed to his friend's proposal, and soon after ordered two coaches to be sent for to carry the whole company. But when the servant was gone for them, Booth acquainted the Doctor that it was yet too early. 'Is it so?' said the Doctor; 'why 'then, I will carry you first to one of the greatest and 'highest entertainments in the world.'

The children pricked up their ears at this; nor did any of the company guess what he meant; and Amelia asked what entertainment he could carry them to at that time of the day.

'Suppose,' says the Doctor, 'I should carry you 'to court?'

'At five o'clock in the afternoon!' cries Booth.

'Ay, suppose I should have interest enough to in-'troduce you into the presence?'

'You are jesting, dear Sir,' cries Amelia.

'Indeed, I am serious,' answered the Doctor. 'I 'will introduce you into that presence, compared to 'whom the greatest emperor on the earth is many mil-'lions of degrees meaner than the most contemptible 'reptile is to him. What entertainment can there be 'to a rational being equal to this? was not the taste 'of mankind most wretchedly depraved, where would 'the vain man find an honour, or where would the 'love of pleasure propose so adequate an object as di-'vine worship? with what ecstasy must the contem-'plation of being admitted to such a presence fill the 'mind! The pitiful courts of princes are open to few, 'and to those only at particular seasons; but from 'this glorious and gracious presence, we are none of 'us, and at no time, excluded.

The Doctor was proceeding thus, when the servant returned, saying, the coaches were ready; and the

Digitized by Google

whole company with the greateſt alacrity attended the Doctor to St James's church.

When the ſervice was ended, and they were again got into their coaches, Amelia returned the Doctor many thanks for the light in which he had placed divine worſhip; aſſuring him, that ſhe had never before had ſo much tranſport in her devotion as at this time, and ſaying, ſhe believed ſhe ſhould be the better for this notion he had given her, as long as ſhe lived.

The coaches being come to the water ſide, they all alighted, and getting into one boat proceeded to Vauxhall.

The extreme beauty and elegance of this place is well known to almoſt every one of my readers: and happy is it for me that it is ſo; ſince, to give an adequate idea of it, would exceed my power of deſcription. To delineate the particular beauties of theſe gardens, would, indeed, require as much pains, and as much paper too, as to rehearſe all the good actions of their maſter; whoſe life proves the truth of an obſervation, which I have read in ſome ethic writer, that a truly elegant taſte is generally accompanied with an excellency of heart; or, in other words, that true virtue is, indeed, nothing elſe but true taſte.

Here our company diverted themſelves with walking an hour or two before the muſic began. Of all the ſeven, Booth alone had ever been here before; ſo that, to all the reſt, the place, with its other charms, had that of novelty. When the muſic played, Amelia, who ſtood next to the Doctor, ſaid to him in a whiſper, 'I hope I am not guilty of profaneneſs; but, in purſuance of that chearful chain of thoughts with 'which you have inſpired me this afternoon, I was 'juſt now loſt in a reverie, and fancied myſelf in thoſe 'bliſsful manſions which we hope to enjoy hereafter. 'The delicious ſweetneſs of the place, the enchanting charms of the muſic, and the ſatisfaction which 'appears in every one's countenance, carried my ſoul 'almoſt to heaven in its ideas. I could not have, indeed, imagined there had been any thing like this 'in this world.'

The

Digitized by Google

The Doctor ſmiled, and ſaid, 'You ſee, dear Ma-
'dam, there may be pleaſures of which you could
'conceive no idea, till you actually enjoyed them.'

And now the little boy, who had long withſtood the attraction of ſeveral cheeſe-cakes that paſſed to and fro, could contain no longer; but aſked his mother to give him one, ſaying, 'I am ſure, my ſiſter would be 'glad of another, though ſhe is aſhamed to aſk.' The Doctor, overhearing the child, propoſed that they ſhould all retire to ſome place where they might ſit down and refreſh themſelves, which they accordingly did. Amelia now miſſed her huſband; but as ſhe had three men in her company, and one of them was the Doctor, ſhe concluded herſelf and her children to be ſafe, and doubted not but that Booth would ſoon find her out.

They now ſat down, and the Doctor very gallantly deſired Amelia to call for what ſhe liked. Upon which the children were ſupplied with cakes; and ſome ham and chicken were provided for the reſt of the company. With which, while they were regaling themſelves with the higheſt ſatisfaction, two young fellows walking arm in arm came up, and when they came oppoſite to Amelia, ſtood ſtill, ſtaring Amelia full in the face, and one of them cried aloud to the other, 'D——n me, my Lord, if ſhe is not an angel!' My Lord ſtood ſtill ſtaring likewiſe at her, without ſpeaking a word—when two others of the ſame gang came up——and one of them cried——'Come along, 'Jack, I have ſeen her before; but ſhe is too well 'manned already. Three——are enough for one 'woman, or the devil is in it.'

'D—n me,' ſays he that ſpoke firſt, and whom they called Jack, 'I will have a bruſh at her, if ſhe 'belonged to the whole convocation.' And ſo ſaying, he went up to the young clergyman, and cried,—— 'Doctor, ſit up a little, if you pleaſe, and don't take 'up more room in a bed than belongs to you.' At which words, he gave the young man a puſh, and ſeated himſelf down directly over againſt Amelia; and leaning both his elbows on the table, he fixed his eyes on her in a manner with which modeſty can neither look, nor bear to be looked at.

Digitized by Google

Amelia seemed greatly shocked at this treatment; upon which the Doctor removed her within him, and then facing the gentleman, asked him what he meant by this rude behaviour——Upon which my Lord stept up, and said, 'Don't be impertinent, old gentleman. 'Do you think such fellows as you, are to keep, d—n 'me, such fine wenches, d—n me, to yourselves, d—n 'me.'

'No, no,' cries Jack, 'the old gentleman is more 'reasonable. Here's the fellow that eats up the tythe 'pig. Don't you see how his mouth waters at her? '——Where's your slabbering bib?' For though the gentleman had rightly guessed he was a clergyman, yet he had not any of those insignia on, with which it would have been improper to have appeared there.

'Such boys as you,' cries the young clergyman, 'ought to be well whipped at school, instead of being suffered to become nuisances in the society.'

'Boys, Sir!' says Jack, 'I believe I am as good a 'man as yourself, Mr ——, and as good a scholar 'too. *Bos fur fus quetque facerdos*——Tell me 'what's next. D—— n me, I'll hold you fifty pounds '——you don't tell me what's next.'

'You have him, Jack,' cries my Lord. 'It is over 'with him, d--n me. He can't strike another blow.'

'If I had you in a proper place,' cries the clergyman, 'you should find I would strike a blow, and a 'pretty hard one too.'

'There,' cries my Lord, 'there is the meekness of 'the clergyman——There spoke the wolf in sheep's 'cloathing. D——n me, how big he looks——You 'must be civil to him, faith! or else he will burst with 'pride.'

'Ay, ay,' cries Jack, 'let the clergy alone for 'pride; there is not a lord in the kingdom now hath 'half the pride of that fellow.'

'Pray, Sir,' cries the Doctor, turning to the other, 'are you a Lord?'

'Yes, Mr ——,' cries he, 'I have that honour, 'indeed.'

'And I suppose you have pride too,' said the Doctor.

'I hope

Digitized by Google

'I hope I have, Sir,' answered he, 'at your service.'

'If such a one as you, Sir,' cries the Doctor, 'who 'are not only a scandal to the title you bear as a lord, 'but even as a man, can pretend to pride, why will 'you not allow it to a clergyman? I suppose, Sir, by 'your dress, you are in the army; and, by the rib-'band in your hat, you seem to be proud of that too. 'How much greater and more honourable is the ser-'vice in which that gentleman is enlisted than your's! 'Why, then, should you object to the pride of the 'clergy, since the lowest of the function is in reality 'every way so much your superior?'

'Tida, Tidu, Tidum!'—cries my Lord.

'However, gentlemen,' cries the Doctor, 'if you 'have the least pretension to that name, I beg you 'will put an end to your frolic; since you see it gives 'so much uneasiness to the lady. Nay, I intreat you, 'for your own sakes; for here is one coming, who 'will talk to you in a very different stile from ours.'

'One coming!' cries my Lord—'what care I who 'is coming?'

'I suppose it is the devil,' cries Jack; 'for here 'are two of his livery servants already.'

'Let the devil come as soon as he will,' cries my Lord, 'D—n me if I have not a kiss.'

Amelia now fell a trembling; and her children, perceiving her fright, both hung on her, and began to cry—when Booth and Captain Trent both came up.

Booth seeing his wife disordered, asked eagerly what was the matter. At the same time, the Lord and his companion seeing Captain Trent, whom they well knew, said both together,—'What! doth this 'company belong to you?' When the Doctor, with great presence of mind, as he was apprehensive of some fatal consequence if Booth should know what had past, said, 'So, Mr Booth, I am glad you are re-'turned; your poor lady here began to be frighted 'out of her wits:—but now you have him again,' said he to Amelia, 'I hope you will be easy.'

Digitized by Google

Amelia, frighted as she was, presently took the hint, and greatly chid her husband for leaving her. But the little boy was not so quick-sighted, and cried—'Indeed, papa, those naughty men there have frighted 'my mamma out of her wits.'

'How!' cries Booth, a little moved, 'frighten'd! 'hath any one frighten'd you, my dear?'

'No, my love, answered she, 'nothing. I know 'not what the child means. Every thing is well; 'now I see you safe.'

Trent had been all the while talking aside with the young sparks; and now, addressing himself to Booth, said, 'Here hath been some little mistake; I believe 'my Lord mistook Mrs Booth for some other lady.'

'It is impossible,' cries my Lord, 'to know every 'one.——I am sure, if I had known the lady to be a 'woman of fashion, and acquaintance of Captain 'Trent, I should have said nothing disagreeable to 'her; but, if I have, I ask her pardon, and the com'pany's.'

'I am in the dark,' cries Booth. 'Pray, what is 'all this matter?'

'Nothing of any consequence,' cries the Doctor, 'nor worth your enquiring into——You hear it was 'a mistake of the person; and I really believe his 'Lordship, that all proceeded from his not knowing 'to whom the lady belonged.'

'Come, come,' says Trent, 'there is nothing in 'the matter I assure you. I will tell you the whole 'another time.'

'Very well, since you say so,' cries Booth, 'I am 'contented.' So ended the affair, and the two sparks made their congee and sneaked off.

'Now they are gone,' said the young gentleman, 'I must say, I never saw two worse-bred jackanapes, 'nor fellows that deserved to be kicked more. If I 'had had them in another place, I would have taught 'them a little more respect to the church.'

'You took rather a better way,' answered the Doctor, 'to teach them that respect.'

Booth now desired his friend Trent to sit down with them, and proposed to call for a fresh bottle of wine: but

Digitized by Google

but Amelia's ſpirits were too much diſconcerted to give her any proſpect of pleaſure that evening. She therefore laid hold of the pretence of her children, for whom ſhe ſaid the hour was already too late; with which the Doctor agreed. So they paid their reckoning, and departed; leaving to the two rakes the triumph of having totally diſſipated the mirth of this little innocent company, who were before enjoying complete ſatisfaction.

CHAP. X.

A curious converſation between the Doctor, the young clergyman, and the young clergyman's father.

THE next morning, when the Doctor and his two friends were at breakfaſt, the young clergyman, in whoſe mind the injurious treatment he had received the evening before was very deeply impreſſed, renewed the converſation on that ſubject. 'It is a 'ſcandal,' ſaid he, 'to the government, that they 'do not preſerve more reſpect to the clergy, by puniſhing all rudeneſs to them with the utmoſt ſeve'rity. It was very juſtly obſerved of you, Sir,' ſays he to the Doctor, 'that the loweſt clergyman in Eng'land is in real dignity ſuperior to the higheſt noble'man. What can then be ſo ſhocking, as to ſee that 'gown, which ought to entitle us to the veneration 'of all we meet, treated with contempt and ridicule! 'Are we not in fact ambaſſadors from Heaven to 'the world? and do they not, therefore, in denying 'us our due reſpect, deny it in reality to him that 'ſent us?'

'If that be the caſe,' ſays the Doctor, 'it behoves 'them to look to themſelves; for he who ſent us, is 'able to exact moſt ſevere vengeance for the ill treat'ment of his miniſters.'

'Very true, Sir,' cries the young one; 'and I 'heartily hope he will: but thoſe puniſhments are at 'too great a diſtance to infuſe terror into wicked 'minds. The government ought to interfere with 'its immediate cenſures. Fines and impriſonments

'and

'and corporal punishments operate more forcibly on 'the human mind than all the fears of damnation.'

'Do you think so?' cries the Doctor; 'then I am 'afraid men are very little in earnest in those fears.'

'Most justly observed,' says the old gentleman. 'In- 'deed, I am afraid that is too much the case.'

'In that,' said the son, 'the government is to blame. 'Are not books of infidelity, treating our holy reli- 'gion as a mere imposture, nay, sometimes, as a 'mere jest, published daily, and spread abroad amongst 'the people with perfect tranquillity?'

'You are certainly in the right,' says the Doctor, 'there is a most blameable remissness with regard to 'these matters: but the whole blame doth not lie 'there; some little share of the fault is, I am afraid, 'to be imputed to the clergy themselves.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries the young one, 'I did not ex- 'pect that charge from a gentleman of your cloth. 'Do the clergy give any encouragement to such 'books? Do they not, on the contrary, cry loudly 'out against the suffering them? This is the invidious 'aspersion of the laity; and I did not expect to hear 'it confirmed by one of our own cloth.'

'Be not too impatient, young gentleman,' said the Doctor, 'I do not absolutely confirm the charge of 'the laity: it is much too general, and too severe; 'but even the laity themselves do not attack them in 'that part to which you have applied your defence. 'They are not supposed such fools as to attack that 'religion to which they owe their temporal welfare; 'they are not taxed with giving any other support to 'infidelity, than what it draws from the ill examples 'of their lives; I mean of the lives of some of them. 'Here too the laity carry their censures too far: for 'there are very few or none of the clergy, whose lives, 'if compared with those of the laity, can be called 'profligate: but such, indeed, is the perfect purity 'of our religion, such is the innocence and virtue 'which it exacts to entitle us to its glorious rewards, 'and to screen us from its dreadful punishments, that 'he must be a very good man indeed who lives up to 'it. Thus then these persons argue. This man is

'educated

Digitized by Google

'educated in a perfect knowledge of religion, is 'learned in its laws, and is by his profession obliged 'in a manner to have them always before his eyes: 'The rewards which it promises to the obedience of 'these laws are so great, and the punishments threat-'ened on disobedience so dreadful, that it is impos-'sible but all men must fearfully fly from the one, 'and as eagerly pursue the other. If, therefore, such 'a person lives in direct opposition to, and in a con-'stant breach of these laws, the inference is obvious. 'There is a pleasant story in Matthew Paris, which 'I will tell you as well as I can remember it. Two 'young gentlemen, I think they were priests, agreed 'together, that, whosoever died first, should return 'and acquaint his friend with the secrets of the other 'world. One of them died soon after, and fulfilled 'his promise. The whole relation he gave is not very 'material; but among other things, he produced one 'of his hands, which Satan had made use of, to write 'upon, as the moderns do on a card, and had sent his 'compliments to the priests, for the number of souls 'which the wicked examples of their lives daily sent 'to hell. This story is the more remarkable, as it 'was written by a priest, and a great favourer of his 'order.'

'Excellent!' cried the old gentleman, 'what a me-'mory you have!'

'But, Sir,' cries the young one, 'a clergyman is 'a man as well as another; and, if such perfect puri-'ty be expected,'----

'I do not expect it,' cries the Doctor; 'and I hope 'it will not be expected of us. The Scripture itself 'gives us this hope, where the best of us are said to 'fall twenty times a-day. But sure we may not al-'low the practice of any of those grosser crimes which 'contaminate the whole mind. We may expect an 'obedience to the ten commandments, and an absti-'nence from such notorious vices; as, in the first 'place, avarice, which indeed can hardly subsist with-'out the breach of more commandments than one: 'indeed it would be excessive candour to imagine, 'that a man, who so visibly sets his whole heart not

'only

Digitized by Google

'only on this world, but on one of the moſt worthleſs 'things in it (for ſo is money, without regard to its 'uſes), ſhould be at the ſame time laying up his trea-'ſure in heaven. Ambition is a ſecond vice of this 'ſort: we are told we cannot ſerve God and Mam-'mon. I might have applied this to avarice; but I 'choſe rather to mention it here. When we ſee a man 'ſneaking about in courts and levees, and doing the 'dirty work of great men, from the hopes of prefer-'ment; can we believe, that a fellow, whom we ſee 'to have ſo many hard taſkmaſters upon earth, ever 'thinks of his Maſter which is in heaven? Muſt he 'not himſelf think, if he ever reflects at all, that ſo 'glorious a Maſter will diſdain and diſown a ſervant, 'who is the dutiful tool of a court-favourite; and 'employed either as the pimp of his pleaſure, or ſome-'times perhaps made a dirty channel, to aſſiſt in the 'conveyance of that corruption, which is clogging 'up and deſtroying the very vitals of his country?

'The laſt vice which I ſhall mention, is Pride. 'There is not in the univerſe a more ridiculous nor 'a more contemptible animal, than a proud clergy-'man; a turkey-cock, or a jackdaw, are objects of 'veneration, when compared with him. I don't mean, 'by Pride, that noble dignity of mind to which good-'neſs can only adminiſter an adequate object, which 'delights in the teſtimony of its own conſcience, and 'could not, without the higheſt agonies, bear its own 'condemnation. By Pride, I mean, that ſaucy paſſion, 'which exults in every little eventual pre-eminence 'over other men; ſuch are the ordinary gifts of na-'ture, and the paultry preſents of fortune, wit, know-'ledge, birth, ſtrength, beauty, riches, titles and 'rank. That paſſion which is ever-aſpiring, like a 'ſilly child, to look over the heads of all about them; 'which, while it ſervilely adheres to the great, flies 'from the poor, as if afraid of contamination; de-'vouring greedily every murmur of applauſe, and 'every look of admiration; pleaſed and elated with 'all kind of reſpect; and hurt and enflamed with the 'contempt of the loweſt and moſt deſpicable of fools, 'even with ſuch as treated you laſt night diſreſpect-

'fully

Digitized by Google

'fully at Vauxhall. Can such a mind as this be 'fixed on things above? Can such a man reflect that 'he hath the ineffable honour to be employed in the 'immediate service of his great Creator? or, can he 'please himself with the heart-warming hope, that 'his ways are acceptable in the sight of that glorious, 'that incomprehensible Being?'

'Hear, child, hear,' cries the old gentleman, 'hear 'and improve your understanding. Indeed, my good 'friend, no one retires from you without carrying 'away some good instructions with him. Learn of 'the Doctor, Tom, and you will be the better man as 'long as you live.'

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' answered Tom, 'the Doctor 'hath spoken a great deal of excellent truth; and, 'without a compliment to him, I was always a great 'admirer of his sermons, particularly of their oratory. 'But,

'*Nec tamen hoc tribuens dederim quoque cætera.*

'I cannot agree that a clergyman is obliged to put up 'with an affront any more than another man, and 'more especially when it is paid to the order.'

'I am very sorry, young gentleman,' cries the Doctor, 'that you should be ever liable to be affronted as 'a clergyman; and, I do assure you, if I had known 'your disposition formerly, the order should never 'have been affronted through you.'

The old gentleman now began to check his son, for his opposition to the Doctor; when a servant delivered the latter a note from Amelia, which he read immediately to himself, and it contained the following words.

My

Digitized by Google

" My Dear Sir,

" Something hath happened ſince I ſaw you, which " gives me great uneaſineſs, and I beg the favour of " ſeeing you as ſoon as poſſible, to adviſe with you " upon it.

" I am,

" Your moſt obliged

" and dutiful daughter,

" AMELIA BOOTH."

The Doctor's anſwer was, that he would wait on the lady directly; and then turning to his friend, he aſked him if he would not take a walk in the Park before dinner. 'I muſt go,' ſays he, 'to the lady who 'was with us laſt night; for I am afraid, by her letter, ſome bad accident hath happened to her. Come, 'young gentleman, I ſpoke a little too haſtily to you 'juſt now; but I aſk your pardon. Some allowance 'muſt be made to the warmth of your blood. I hope, 'we ſhall in time both think alike.'

The old gentleman made his friend another compliment; and the young one declared, he hoped he ſhould always think, and act too, with the dignity becoming his cloth. After which the Doctor took his leave for a while, and went to Amelia's lodgings.

As ſoon as he was gone, the old gentleman fell very ſeverely on his ſon. 'Tom,' ſays he, 'how can you 'be ſuch a fool, to undo by your perverſeneſs all that 'I have been doing? Why will you not learn to 'ſtudy mankind with the attention which I have em'ployed to that purpoſe? Do you think, if I had af'fronted this obſtinate old fellow as you do, I ſhould 'ever have engaged his friendſhip?'

'I cannot help it, Sir,' ſaid Tom; 'I have not ſtu'died ſix years at the univerſity, to give up my ſen'timents to every one. It is true, indeed, he put to'gether a ſet of ſounding words; but, in the main, 'I never heard any one talk more fooliſhly.'

'What of that?' cries the father; 'I never told you 'he was a wiſe man, nor did I ever think him ſo. If 'he had any underſtanding, he would have been a

Digitized by Google

'bishop along ago, to my certain knowledge. But, 'indeed, he hath been always a fool in private life; 'for I question whether he is worth 100 *l.* in the 'world, more than his annual income. He hath given 'away above half his fortune to the Lord knows who, 'I believe I have had above 200 *l.* of him, first and 'last; and would you lose such a milch-cow as this 'for want of a few compliments? indeed, Tom, thou 'art as great a simpleton as himself. How do you 'expect to rise in the church, if you cannot tempo-'rise, and give into the opinion of your superiors?'

'I don't know, Sir,' cries Tom, 'what you mean 'by my superiors. In one sense, I own a doctor of 'divinity is superior to a batchelor of arts, and so far 'I am ready to allow his superiority; but I under-'stand Greek and Hebrew as well as he, and will 'maintain my opinion against him, or any other in 'the schools.'

'Tom,' cries the old gentleman, 'till thou getteſt 'the better of thy conceit, I shall never have any 'hopes of thee. If thou art wise, thou wilt think 'every man thy superior, of whom thou canst get any 'thing; at least, thou wilt persuade him that thou 'thinkest so, and that is sufficient. Tom, Tom, thou 'hast no policy in thee.'

'What have I been learning these seven years,' answered he, 'in the university? However, father, I 'can account for your opinion. It is the common 'failing of old men to attribute all wisdom to them-'selves. Nestor did it long ago; but, if you will en-'quire my character at college, I fancy you will not, 'think I want to go to school again.'

The father and son then went to take their walk, during which the former repeated many good lessons of policy to his son, not greatly perhaps to his edification. In truth, if the old gentleman's fondness had not in a great measure blinded him to the imperfections of his son, he would have soon perceived that he was sowing all his instructions in a soil so choaked with self-conceit, that it was utterly impossible they should ever bear any fruit.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK X.

CHAP. I.

To which we will prefix no preface.

THE Doctor found Amelia alone, for Booth was gone to walk, with his new-revived acquaintance, Captain Trent, who seemed so pleased with the renewal of his intercourse with his old brother-officer, that he had been almost continually with him from the time of their meeting at the drum.

Amelia acquainted the Doctor with the purport of her message, as follows: 'I ask your pardon, my 'dear Sir, for troubling you so often with my affairs; 'but I know your extreme readiness, as well as ability, 'to assist any one with your advice. The fact is, that 'my husband hath been presented by Colonel James 'with two tickets for a masquerade, which is to be in 'a day or two; and he insists so strongly on my going 'with him, that I really do not know how to refuse, 'without giving him some reason; and I am not able 'to invent any other than the true one, which you 'would not, I am sure, advise me to communicate to 'him. Indeed, I had a most narrow escape the other 'day; for I was almost drawn in inadvertently, by 'a very strange accident, to acquaint him with the 'whole matter.' She then related the Serjeant's dream, with all the consequences that attended it.

The Doctor considered a little with himself, and then said, 'I am really, child, puzzled as well

'as

Digitized by Google

'as you about this matter. I would by no means have 'you go to the maſquerade: I do not indeed like the 'diverſion itſelf, as I have heard it deſcribed to me: 'not that I am ſuch a prude to ſuſpect every woman 'who goes there of any evil intentions; but it is a 'pleaſure of too looſe and diſorderly a kind for the 'recreation of a ſober mind. Indeed, you have a 'ſtill ſtronger and more particular objection. I will 'try myſelf to reaſon him out of it.'

'Indeed, it is impoſſible,' anſwered ſhe; 'and there-'fore I would not ſet you about it. I never ſaw him 'more ſet on any thing. There is a party, as they 'call it, made on the occaſion; and he tells me my 'refuſal will diſappoint all.'

'I really do not know what to adviſe you,' cries the Doctor: 'I have told you I do not approve theſe 'diverſions; but yet, as your huſband is ſo very de-'ſirous, I cannot think there will be any harm in 'going with him. However, I will conſider of it, and 'do all in my power for you.'

Here Mrs Atkinſon came in, and the diſcourſe on this ſubject ceaſed; but ſoon after Amelia renewed it, ſaying, 'there was no occaſion to keep any thing a ſe-'cret from her friend. They then fell to debating on the ſubject; but could not come to any reſolution. But Mrs Atkinſon, who was in an unuſual flow of ſpirits, cried out, 'Fear nothing, my dear Amelia, 'two women ſurely will be too hard for one man. I 'think, Doctor, it exceeds Virgil.

¶ *Una dolo divum ſi fœmina victor duorum eſt.*'

'Very well repeated, indeed,' cries the Doctor. 'Do you underſtand all Virgil as well as you ſeem to 'do that line?'

'I hope I do, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'and Horace too; or 'elſe my father threw away his time to very little 'purpoſe in teaching me.'

'I aſk your pardon, Madam,' cries the Doctor. 'I 'own it was an impertinent queſtion.'

'Not at all, Sir,' ſays ſhe; 'and, if you are one 'of thoſe who imagine women incapable of learning,

'I shall not be offended at it. I know the common 'opinion; but

'*Interdum vulgus rectum videt, est ubi peccat.*'

'If I was to profess such an opinion, Madam,' said the Doctor, 'Madam Dacier and yourself would 'bear testimony against me. The utmost indeed that 'I should venture, would be to question the utility of 'learning in a young lady's education.'

'I own,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'as the world is 'constituted, it cannot be as serviceable to her for-'tune, as it will be to that of a man; but you will 'allow, Doctor, that learning may afford a woman 'at least a reasonable and an innocent entertain-'ment.'

'But I will suppose,' cried the Doctor, 'it may 'have its inconveniencies. As for instance, if a learn-'ed lady should meet with an unlearned husband, 'might she not be apt to despise him?'

'I think not,' cried Mrs Atkinson——'and if I 'may be allowed the instance—I think I have shewn 'myself, that women who have learning themselves, 'can be contented without that qualification in a 'man.'

'To be sure,' cries the Doctor, 'there may be 'other qualifications, which may have their weight in 'the balance. But let us take the other side of the 'question, and suppose the learned of both sexes to 'meet in the matrimonial union, may it not afford 'one excellent subject of disputation, which is the most 'learned?'

'Not at all,' cries Mrs Atkinson; 'for if they had 'both learning and good sense, they would soon see 'on which side the superiority lay.'

'But if the learned man,' said the Doctor, 'should 'be a little unreasonable in his opinion, are you sure 'that the learned woman would preserve her duty to 'her husband, and submit?'

'But why,' cries Mrs Atkinson, 'must we neces-'sarily suppose that a learned man would be unrea-'sonable?'

'Nay,

Digitized by Google

'Nay, Madam,' said the Doctor, 'I am not your husband; and you shall not hinder me from supposing what I please. Surely it is not such a paradox, to conceive that a man of learning would be unreasonable. Are there no unreasonable opinions in very learned authors, even among the critics themselves? For instance, what can be a more strange, and indeed unreasonable opinion, than to prefer the Metamorphoses of Ovid to the Æneid of Virgil?'

'It would be indeed so strange,' cries the lady, 'that you shall not persuade me it was ever the opinion of any man.'

'Perhaps not,' cries the Doctor; 'and I believe you and I shall not differ in our judgments of any person who maintained such an opinion.——What a taste must he have!'

'A most contemptible one indeed,' cries Mrs Atkinson.

'I am satisfied,' cries the Doctor. 'And in the words of your own Horace, *Verbum non amplius addam.*'

'But how provoking is this!' cries Mrs Atkinson, 'to draw one in in such a manner. I protest, I was so warm in the defence of my favourite Virgil, that I was not aware of your design; but all your triumph depends on a supposition that one should be so unfortunate as to meet with the silliest fellow in the world.'

'Not in the least,' cries the Doctor, 'Doctor Bentley was not such a person; and yet he would have quarrelled, I am convinced, with any wife in the world, in behalf of one of his corrections. I don't suppose he would have given up his *Ingentia Fata* to an angel.'

'But do you think,' said she, 'if I had loved him, I would have contended with him?'

'Perhaps you might sometimes,' said the Doctor, 'be of these sentiments; but you remember your own Virgil——*Varium at mutabile semper fœmina.*'

'Nay, Amelia,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'you are now concerned as well as I am; for he hath now

'abuſed the whole ſex, and quoted the ſevereſt thing 'that ever was ſaid againſt us, though I allow it is one 'of the fineſt.'

'With all my heart, my dear,' cries Amelia. 'I 'have the advantage of you, however, for I don't un-'derſtand him.'

'Nor doth ſhe underſtand much better than your-'ſelf,' cries the Doctor, 'or ſhe would not admire 'nonſenſe, though in Virgil.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' ſaid ſhe.

'And pardon me, Madam,' cries the Doctor with a feigned ſerioufneſs: 'I ſay a boy in the fourth form 'at Eton would be whipped, or would deſerve to be 'whipped at leaſt, who made the neuter gender agree 'with the feminine. You have heard, however, that 'Virgil left his Æneid incorrect; and, perhaps, had he 'lived to correct it, we ſhould not have ſeen the faults 'we now ſee in it.'

'Why, it is very true, as you ſay, Doctor,' cries Mrs Atkinſon — 'There ſeems to be a falſe concord. 'I proteſt I never thought of it before.'

'And yet this is the Virgil,' anſwered the Doctor, 'that you are ſo fond of, who hath made you all of 'the neuter gender; or, as we ſay in Engliſh, he 'hath made mere animals of you: for, if we tranſlate 'it thus,

'Woman is a various and changeable animal,'

'there will be no fault, I believe, unleſs in point of ci-'vility to the ladies.'

Mrs Atkinſon had juſt time to tell the Doctor he was a provoking creature, before the arrival of Booth and his friend put an end to that learned diſcourſe, in which neither of the parties had greatly recommended themſelves to each other, the Doctor's opinion of the lady being not at all heightened by her progreſs in the claſſics; and ſhe, on the other hand, having conceived a great diſlike in her heart towards the Doctor, which would have raged, perhaps, with no leſs fury from the conſideration that he had been her huſband.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

What happened at the maſquerade.

FROM this time to the day of the maſquerade, nothing happened of conſequence enough to have a place in this hiſtory.

On that day Colonel James came to Booth's about nine in the evening, where he ſtayed for Mrs James, who did not come till near eleven. The four maſques then ſet out together in ſeveral chairs; and all proceeded to the Hay-Market.

When they arrived at the Opera-Houſe, the Colonel and Mrs James preſently left them; nor did Booth and his lady remain long together, but were ſoon divided from each other by different maſques.

A domino ſoon accoſted the lady, and had her away to the upper end of the furtheſt room on the right hand, where both the maſques ſat down: nor was it long before the he domino began to make very fervent love to the ſhe. It would perhaps be tedious to the reader to run through the whole proceſs, which was not indeed in the moſt romantic ſtyle. The lover ſeemed to conſider his miſtreſs as a mere woman of this world, and ſeemed rather to apply to her avarice and ambition, than to her ſofter paſſions.

As he was not ſo careful to conceal his true voice as the lady was, ſhe ſoon diſcovered that this lover of hers was no other than her old friend the peer, and preſently a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to her of making an advantage of this accident. She gave him therefore an intimation that ſhe knew him, and expreſſed ſome aſtoniſhment at his having found her out: I ſuſ-'pect,' ſays ſhe, 'My Lord, that you have a friend in 'the woman where I now lodge, as well as you had 'in Mrs Elliſon.' My Lord proteſted the contrary ——To which ſhe anſwered, 'Nay, my Lord, do 'not defend her ſo earneſtly, till you are ſure I ſhould 'have been angry with her.'

At theſe words, which were accompanied with a very bewitching ſoftneſs, my Lord flew into raptures

rather

Digitized by Google

rather too ſtrong for the place he was in. Theſe the lady gently checked, and begged him to take care they were not obſerved; for that her huſband, for ought ſhe knew, was then in the room.

Colonel James came now up, and ſaid, 'So, Madam, I have the good fortune to find you again; I have been extremely miſerable ſince I loſt you.' The lady anſwered in her maſquerade voice, that ſhe did not know him. 'I am Colonel James,' ſaid he, in a whiſper. 'Indeed, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'you are miſtaken, I have no acquaintance with any Colonel James.' 'Madam,' anſwered he, in a whiſper likewiſe, 'I am poſitive I am not miſtaken, you are certainly Mrs Booth.'—'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'you are very impertinent, and I beg you will leave me.' My Lord then interpoſed, and ſpeaking in his own voice, aſſured the Colonel that the lady was a woman of quality, and that they were engaged in a converſation together; upon which, the Colonel aſked the lady's pardon; for as there was nothing remarkable in her dreſs, he really believed he had been miſtaken.

He then went again a-hunting through the rooms, and ſoon after found Booth walking without his maſk between two ladies, one of whom was in a blue domino, and the other in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs. 'Will,' cries the Colonel, 'do you know what is become of our wives; for I have ſeen neither of them ſince we have been in the room?' Booth anſwered, that he ſuppoſed they were both together, and they ſhould find them both by and by. 'What,' cries the lady in the blue domino, 'are you both come upon duty then with your wives? as for your's, Mr Alderman,' ſaid ſhe to the Colonel, 'I make no queſtion but ſhe is got into much better company than her huſband's.' 'How can you be ſo cruel, Madam!' ſaid the ſhepherdeſs, 'you will make him beat his wife by and by, for he's a military man I aſſure you.' 'In the trained bands, I preſume,' cries the domino, 'for he is plainly dated from the city.' '—I own indeed,' cries the other, 'the gentleman ſmells ſtrongly of Thames-ſtreet, and, if I may venture

'venture to guess, of the honourable calling of a 'tailor.'

'Why, what the devil hast thou picked up here?' cries James.

'Upon my soul, I don't know,' answered Booth; 'I wish you would take one of them at least.'

'What say you, Madam,' cries the domino, 'will 'you go with the Colonel? I assure you, you have 'mistaken your man, for he is no less a person than 'the great Colonel James himself.'

'No wonder, then, that Mr Booth gives him his 'choice of us; it is the proper office of a caterer, 'in which capacity Mr Booth hath, I am told, the 'honour to serve the noble Colonel.'

'Much good may it do you with your ladies,' said James, 'I will go in pursuit of better game.' At which words he walked off.

'You are a true sportsman,' cries the shepherdess; 'for your only pleasure, I believe, lies in the 'pursuit.'

'Do you know the gentleman, Madam?' cries the domino.

'Who doth not know him?' answered the shepherdess.

'What is his character?' cries the domino; 'for, 'though I have jested with him, I only know him by 'sight.'

'I know nothing very particular in his character,' cries the shepherdess. 'He gets every handsome wo'man he can, and so they do all.'

'I suppose then he is not married,' said the domino.

'O yes, and married for love too,' answered the other; 'but he hath loved away all his love for 'her long ago, and now, he says, she makes as fine 'an object of hatred——I think, if the fellow ever ap'pears to have any wit, it is when he abuses his 'wife; and, luckily for him, that is his favourite 'topic.——I don't know the poor wretch, but as 'he describes her, it is a miserable animal.'

'I know her very well,' cries the other, 'and I am 'much mistaken if she is not even with him; but 'hang him, what is become of Booth?'

At

Digitized by Google

At this instant a great noise arose near that part where the two ladies were. This was occasioned by a large assembly of young fellows, whom they call bucks, who were got together, and were enjoying, as the phrase is, a letter, which one of them had found in the room.

Curiosity hath its votaries among all ranks of people; whenever therefore an object of this appears, it is as sure of attracting a croud in the assemblies of the polite, as in those of their inferiors.

When this croud was gathered together, one of the bucks, at the desire of his companions, as well as of all present, performed the part of a public orator, and read out the following letter, which we shall give the reader, together with the comments of the orator himself, and all his audience.

The orator then, being mounted on a bench, began as follows:

'Here beginneth the third chapter of ——saint '—Pox on't, Jack, what is the saint's name? I have 'forgot.'

'Timothy, you blockhead,' answered another—— 'Timothy.'

'Well, then,' cries the orator, 'of Saint Timo-'thy.

'Sir, I am very sorry to have any occasion of 'writing on the following subject, in a country that 'is honoured with the name of Christian; much 'more am I concerned to address myself to a man 'whose many advantages, derived both from Nature 'and fortune, should demand the highest return of 'gratitude to the great Giver of all those good things. 'Is not such a man guilty of the highest ingratitude 'to that most beneficent Being, by a direct and a-'vowed disobedience of his most positive laws and 'commands?

'I need not tell you that adultery is forbid in the 'laws of the decalogue; nor need I, I hope, men-'tion that it is as expressly forbid in the New Testa-'ment.'

"You see therefore," said the orator, "what "the law is, and therefore none of you will be "able.

Digitized by Google

" able to plead ignorance, when you come to the " Old Baily in the other world.—But here goes " again.——

' If it had not been ſo expreſsly forbidden in ſcrip-
' ture, ſtill the law of nature would have yielded light
' enough for us to have diſcovered the great horror
' and atrociouſneſs of this crime.

' And accordingly we find, that nations where the
' ſun of righteouſneſs hath yet never ſhined, have
' puniſhed the adulterer with the moſt exemplary
' pains and penalties; not only the polite heathens, but
' the moſt barbarous nations have concurred in theſe;
' in many places the moſt ſevere and ſhameful corpo-
' ral puniſhments, and in ſome, and thoſe not a few,
' death itſelf hath been inflicted on this crime.

' And ſure, in a human ſenſe, there is ſcarce any
' guilt which deſerves to be more ſeverely puniſhed.
' It includes in it almoſt every injury and every miſchief
' which one man can do to, or can bring on another.
' It is robbing him of his property.

" Mind that, ladies," ſaid the orator, " you are all " the property of your huſbands;" ' and of that pro-
' perty, which, if he is a good man, he values above
' all others. It is poiſoning that fountain whence he
' hath a right to derive the ſweeteſt and moſt innocent
' pleaſure, the moſt cordial comfort, the moſt ſolid
' friendſhip, and moſt faithful aſſiſtance in all his
' affairs, wants and diſtreſſes. It is the deſtruction
' of his peace of mind, and even of his reputation.
' The ruin of both wife and huſband, and ſometimes
' of the whole family, are the probable conſequences
' of this fatal injury. Domeſtic happineſs is the end
' of almoſt all our purſuits, and the common reward
' of all our pains. When men find themſelves for
' ever debarred from this delightful fruition, they are
' loſt to all induſtry, and grow careleſs of all their
' worldly affairs. Thus they become bad ſubjects, bad
' relations, bad friends, and bad men. Hatred and re-
' venge are the wretched paſſions which boil in their
' minds. Deſpair and madneſs very commonly enſue,
' and murder and ſuicide often cloſe the dreadful ſcene.

" Thus,

Digitized by Google

" Thus, gentlemen, and ladies, you see the scene is " closed. So here ends the first act—and thus begins " the second."

' I have here attempted to lay before you a picture ' of this vice, the horror of which no colours of mine ' can exaggerate. But what pencil can delineate the ' horrors of that punishment which the scripture de- ' nounces against it!

' And for what will you subject yourself to this ' punishment? or for what reward will you inflict all ' this misery on another? I will add, on your friend? ' for the possession of a woman; for the pleasure of a ' moment. But if neither virtue nor religion can re- ' strain your inordinate appetites, are there not many ' women as handsome as your friend's wife, whom, ' though not with innocence, your may possess with a ' much less degree of guilt? What motive then can ' thus hurry you on to the destruction of yourself and ' your friend? doth the peculiar rankness of the guilt ' add any zest to the sin? doth it enhance the plea- ' sure as much as we may be assured it will the punish- ' ment?

' But if you can be so lost to all sense of fear, and ' of shame, and of goodness, as not to be debarred by ' the evil which you are to bring on yourself, by the ' extreme baseness of the action, nor by the ruin in ' which you are to involve others, let me still urge the ' difficulty, I may say the impossibility, of the suc- ' cess. You are attacking a fortress on a rock; a ' chastity so strongly defended, as well by a happy ' natural disposition of mind as by the strongest prin- ' ciples of religion and virtue, implanted by educa- ' tion, and nourished and improved by habit, that ' the woman must be invincible even without that ' firm and constant affection of her husband, which ' would guard a much looser and worse-disposed heart. ' What therefore are you attempting but to introduce ' distrust, and perhaps disunion, between an innocent ' and a happy couple, in which too you cannot suc- ' ceed without bringing, I am convinced, certain ' destruction on your own head?

Digitized by Google

'Desist, therefore, let me advise you, from this 'enormous crime; retreat from the vain attempt of 'climbing a precipice, which it is impossible you 'should ever ascend, where you must probably soon 'fall into utter perdition, and can have no other hope 'but of dragging down your best friend into perdition 'with you.

'I can think of but one argument more, and that, 'indeed, a very bad one; you throw away that time 'in an impossible attempt, which might, in other pla-'ces, crown your sinful endeavours with success.

"And so ends the dismal ditty."

'D—n me,' cries one, 'did ever mortal hear such 'd——n'd stuff?'

'Upon my soul,' said another, 'I like the last ar-'gument well enough. There is some sense in that: 'for d—n me if I had not rather go to D- —g——s's 'at any time, than to follow a virtuous b—— for a 'fortnight.'

'Tom,' says one of them, 'let us set the ditty to 'music; let us subscribe to have it set by Handel; it 'will make an excellent oratorio.'

'D—n me, Jack,' says another, 'we'll have it 'set to a psalm tune, and we'll sing it next Sun-'day at St James's church, and I'll bear a bob, d—n 'me.'

'Fie upon it, gentlemen, fie upon it,' said a friar who came up, 'do you think there is any wit and 'humour in this ribaldry; or, if there were, would 'it make any atonement for abusing religion and 'virtue?'

'Hey-dey!' cries one, 'this is a friar in good 'earnest.'

'Whatever I am,' said the friar, 'I hope at least, 'you are what you appear to be. Heaven forbid, 'for the sake of our posterity, that you should be 'gentlemen.'

'Jack,' cries one, 'let us toss the friar in a blan-'ket.'

'Me in a blanket!' said the friar, 'by the dignity 'of man, I will twist the neck of every one of you as 'sure as ever the neck of a dunghill-cock was twisted.'

Digitized by Google

At which words he pulled off his maſque, and the tremendous majeſty of Colonel Bath appeared, from which the bucks fled away as faſt as the Trojans heretofore from the face of Achilles. The Colonel did not think it worth while to purſue any other of them except him who had the letter in his hand, which the Colonel deſired to ſee, and the other delivered, ſaying it was very much at his ſervice.

The Colonel, being poſſeſſed of the letter, retired as privately as he could, in order to give it a careful peruſal; for badly as it had been read by the orator, there were ſome paſſages in it which had pleaſed the Colonel. He had juſt gone through it, when Booth paſſed by him; upon which the Colonel called to him, and delivering him the letter, bid him put it in his pocket, and read it at his leiſure. He made many encomiums upon it, and told Booth it would be of ſervice to him, and was proper for all young men to read.

Booth had not yet ſeen his wife; but as he concluded ſhe was ſafe with Mrs James, he was not uneaſy. He had been prevented from ſearching farther after her, by the lady of the blue domino, who had joined him again. Booth had now made theſe diſcoveries; that the lady was pretty well acquainted with him; that ſhe was a woman of faſhion; and that ſhe had a particular regard for him. But though he was a gay man, he was in reality ſo fond of his Amelia, that he thought of no other woman; wherefore, though not abſolutely a Joſeph, as we have already ſeen, yet could he not be guilty of premeditated inconſtancy. He was indeed ſo very cold and inſenſible to the hints which were given him, that the lady began to complain of his dulneſs. When the ſhepherdeſs again came up, and heard this accuſation againſt him, ſhe confirmed it, ſaying: 'I do aſſure 'you, Madam, he is the dulleſt fellow in the world. 'Indeed, I ſhould almoſt take you for his wife, by 'finding you a ſecond time with him; for I do aſſure 'you the gentleman very ſeldom keeps any other com-'pany.' 'Are you ſo well acquainted with him, 'Madam?' ſaid the domino. 'I have had that ho-

'nour

'nour longer than your Ladyſhip, I believe,' anſwered the ſhepherdeſs. 'Poſſibly you may, Madam,' cries the domino, 'but I with you would not interrupt us 'at preſent; for we have ſome buſineſs together.' 'I believe, Madam,' anſwered the ſhepherdeſs, 'my 'buſineſs with the gentleman is altogether as impor-'tant as yours; and therefore your Ladyſhip may 'withdraw if you pleaſe.'—'My dear ladies,' cries Booth, 'I beg you will not quarrel about me.'—— 'Not at all,' anſwered the domino, 'ſince you are ſo 'indifferent, I reſign my pretenſions with all my 'heart. If you had not been the dulleſt fellow upon 'earth, I am convinced you muſt have diſcovered 'me.'—She then went off muttering to herſelf, that ſhe was ſatisfied the ſhepherdeſs was ſome wretched creature whom nobody knew.

The ſhepherdeſs overheard the ſarcaſm, and anſwered it, by aſking Booth what contemptible wretch he had picked up. 'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid he, 'you 'know as much of her as I do; ſhe is a maſquerade 'acquaintance like yourſelf.' 'Like me!' repeated ſhe: 'Do you think if this had been our firſt ac-'quaintance, I ſhould have waſted ſo much time with 'you as I have? for your part, indeed, I believe a 'woman will get very little advantage by her having 'been formerly intimate with you.' 'I do not know, 'Madam,' ſaid Booth, 'that I deſerve that character, 'any more than I know the perſon that now gives it 'me.' 'And you have the aſſurance then,' ſaid ſhe in her own voice, 'to affect not to remember me.' 'I think,' cries Booth, 'I have heard that voice 'before; but, upon my ſoul, I do not recollect it.' 'Do you recollect,' ſaid ſhe, 'no woman that you 'have uſed with the higheſt barbarity? I will not 'ſay ingratitude.' 'No, upon my honour,' anſwered Booth.——'Mention not honour,' ſaid ſhe, 'thou 'wretch; for hardened as thou art, I could ſhew thee 'a face, that, in ſpite of thy conſummate impudence, 'would confound thee with ſhame and horror. Doſt 'thou not yet know me?' 'I do, Madam, indeed,' anſwered Booth; 'and I confeſs, that of all women

Digitized by Google

'in the world you have the moſt reaſon for what you 'ſay.'

Here a long dialogue enſued between the gentleman and the lady, whom, I ſuppoſe, I need not mention to have been Miſs Matthews; but as it conſiſted chiefly of violent upbraidings on her ſide, and excuſes on his, I deſpair of making it entertaining to the reader; and ſhall therefore return to the Colonel, who having ſearched all the rooms with the utmoſt diligence, without finding the woman he looked for, began to ſuſpect that he had before fixed on the right perſon, and that Amelia had denied herſelf to him, being pleaſed with her paramour, whom he had diſcovered to be the noble peer.

He reſolved therefore, as he could have no ſport himſelf, to ſpoil that of others; accordingly he found out Booth, and aſked him again what was become of both their wives; for that he had ſearched all over the rooms, and could find neither of them.

Booth was now a little alarmed at this account, and parting with Miſs Matthews, went along with the Colonel in ſearch of his wife. As for Miſs Matthews, he had at length pacified her with a promiſe to make her a viſit; which promiſe ſhe extorted from him, ſwearing bitterly in the moſt ſolemn manner, unleſs he made it to her, ſhe would expoſe both him and herſelf at the maſquerade.

As he knew the violence of the lady's paſſions, and to what heights they were capable of riſing, he was obliged to come into theſe terms; for he had, I am convinced, no fear upon earth equal to that of Amelia's knowing what it was in the power of Miſs Matthews to communicate to her, and which to conceal from her, he had already undergone ſo much uneaſineſs.

The Colonel led Booth to the place where he had ſeen the peer and Amelia (ſuch he was now well convinced ſhe was) ſitting together. Booth no ſooner ſaw her, than he ſaid to the Colonel, 'Sure that is my wife 'in converſation with that maſk.'—'I took her for 'your lady myſelf,' ſaid the Colonel, 'but I found I 'was miſtaken.—Hark ye, that is my Lord—— and 'I have ſeen that very lady with him all this night.'

This

Digitized by Google

This converſation paſt at a little diſtance, and out of the hearing of the ſuppoſed Amelia; when Booth looking ſtedfaſtly at the lady, declared with an oath, that he was poſitive the Colonel was in the right. She then beckoned to him with her fan; upon which he went directly to her; and ſhe aſked him to go home, which he very readily conſented to. The peer then walked off; the Colonel went in purſuit of his wife, or of ſome other woman; and Booth and his lady returned in two chairs to their lodgings.

CHAP. III.

Conſequences of the maſquerade, not uncommon nor ſurpriſing.

THE lady getting firſt out of her chair, ran haſtily up into the nurſery to the children; for ſuch was Amelia's conſtant method at her return home, at whatever hour. Booth then walked into the dining-room, where he had not been long before Amelia came down to him, and with a moſt chearful countenance, ſaid, 'My dear, I fancy we have neither of 'us ſupped; ſhall I go down and ſee whether there is 'any cold meat in the houſe?'

'For yourſelf, if you pleaſe,' anſwered Booth; 'but I ſhall eat nothing.'

'How, my dear,' ſaid Amelia, 'I hope you have 'not loſt your appetite at the maſquerade?' For ſupper was a meal at which he generally ate very heartily.

'I know not well what I have loſt,' ſaid Booth; 'I 'find myſelf diſordered. My head aches. I know 'not what is the matter with me.'

'Indeed, my dear, you frighten me,' ſaid Amelia, 'you look indeed diſordered. I wiſh the maſquerade 'had been far enough, before you had gone thither.'

'Would to Heaven it had!' cries Booth; 'but 'that is over now. But pray, Amelia, anſwer me one 'queſtion, who was the gentleman with you, when I 'came up to you?'

'The gentleman, my dear?' ſaid Amelia, 'what 'gentleman?'

Digitized by Google

'The gentleman, the nobleman, when I came up; 'sure I speak plain.'

'Upon my word, my dear, I don't understand you,' answered she; 'I did not know one person at the 'masquerade.'

'How!' said he, 'what, spend the whole evening 'with a masque without knowing him?'

'Why, my dear,' said she, 'you know we were not 'together.'

'I know we were not,' said he; 'but what is that 'to the purpose? sure you answer me strangely. I 'know we were not together; and therefore I ask you 'whom you were with?'

'Nay, but, my dear,' said she, 'can I tell people 'in masques?'

'I say again, Madam,' said he, 'would you con-'verse two hours or more with a masque whom you 'did not know?'

'Indeed, child,' says she, 'I knew nothing of the 'methods of a masquerade; for I never was at one in 'my life.'

'I wish to Heaven you had not been at this!' cries Booth. 'Nay, you will wish so yourself, if you tell 'me truth —What have I said? do I, can I, suspect 'you of not speaking truth?—Since you are ignorant 'then I will inform you, the man you have conver-'sed with was no other than Lord——.'

'And is that the reason,' said she, 'you wish I 'had not been there?'

'And is not that reason,' answered he, 'sufficient? 'Is he not the last man upon earth with whom I 'would have you converse?'

'So you really wish then that I had not been at 'the masquerade?'

'I do,' cried he, 'from my soul.'

'So may I ever be able,' cried she, 'to indulge you 'in every wish as in this.—I was not there.'

'Do not trifle, Amelia,' cried he; 'you would not 'jest with me, if you knew the situation of my mind.'

'Indeed, I do not jest with you,' said she. 'Upon 'my honour, I was not there. Forgive me this first 'deceit I ever practised, and, indeed, it shall be the 'last;

Digitized by Google

'laſt; for I have paid ſeverely for this by the uneaſi-'neſs it hath given me.' She then revealed to him the whole ſecret, which was thus:

I think it hath been already mentioned in ſome part of this hiſtory, that Amelia and Mrs Atkinſon were exactly of the ſame make and ſtature, and that there was likewiſe a very near reſemblance between their voices. When Mrs Atkinſon, therefore, found that Amelia was ſo extremely averſe to the maſquerade, ſhe propoſed to go thither in her ſtead, and to paſs upon Booth for his own wife.

This was afterwards very eaſily executed; for when they left Booth's lodgings, Amelia, who went laſt to her chair, ran back to fetch her maſque, as ſhe pretended, which ſhe had purpoſely left behind. She then whipped off her domino, and threw it over Mrs Atkinſon, who ſtood ready to receive it, and ran immediately down ſtairs, and ſtepping into Amelia's chair, proceeded with the reſt to the maſquerade.

As her ſtature exactly ſuited that of Amelia, ſhe had very little difficulty to carry on the impoſition; for, beſides the natural reſemblance of their voices, and the opportunity of ſpeaking in a feigned one, ſhe had ſcarce an intercourſe of ſix words with Booth during the whole time; for the moment they got into the croud, ſhe took the firſt opportunity of ſlipping from him. And he, as the reader may remember, being ſeized by other women, and concluding his wife to be ſafe with Mrs James, was very well ſatisfied, till the Colonel ſet him upon the ſearch, as we have ſeen before.

Mrs Atkinſon, the moment ſhe came home, ran up ſtairs to the nurſery, where ſhe found Amelia, and told her in haſte that ſhe might very eaſily carry on the deceit with her huſband; for that ſhe might tell him what ſhe pleaſed to invent, as they had not been a minute together during the whole evening.

Booth was no ſooner ſatisfied that his wife had not been from home that evening, than he fell into raptures with her, gave her a thouſand tender careſſes, blamed his own judgment, acknowledged the goodneſs of

Digitized by Google

of hers, and vowed never to oppose her will more in any one instance during his life.

Mrs Atkinson, who was still in the nursery with her masquerade dress, was then summoned down stairs; and when Booth saw her and heard her speak in her mimic tone, he declared he was not surprised at his having been imposed upon; for that if they were both in the same disguise, he should scarce be able to discover the difference between them.

They then sat down to half an hour's chearful conversation; after which, they retired all in the most perfect good humour.

CHAP. IV.

Consequences of the masquerade.

WHEN Booth rose in the morning, he found in his pocket that letter which had been delivered to him by Colonel Bath, which, had not chance brought to his remembrance, he might possibly have never recollected.

He had now, however, the curiosity to open the letter, and beginning to read it, the matter of it drew him on, till he perused the whole; for, notwithstanding the contempt cast upon it by those learned critics the bucks, neither the subject, nor the manner in which it was treated, was altogether contemptible.

But there was still another motive which induced Booth to read the whole letter; and this was, that he presently thought he knew the hand. He did, indeed, immediately conclude it was Dr Harrison; for the Doctor wrote a very remarkable one; and this letter contained all the particularities of the Doctor's character.

He had just finished a second reading of this letter, when the Doctor himself entered the room. The good man was impatient to know the success of Amelia's stratagem; for he bore towards her all that love which esteem can create in a good mind, without the assistance of those selfish considerations, from which the love of wives and children may be ordinarily deduced.

The

Digitized by Google

The latter of which nature, by very subtle and refined reasoning, suggests to us to be part of our dear selves; and the former, as long as they remain the objects of our liking, that same nature is furnished with very plain and fertile arguments to recommend to our affections. But to raise that affection in the human breast, which the Doctor had for Amelia, nature is forced to use a kind of logic, which is no more understood by a bad man, than Sir Isaac Newton's doctrine of colours is by one born blind. And yet in reality it contains nothing more abstruse than this, that an injury is the object of anger, danger of fear, and praise of vanity; for in the same simple manner, it may be asserted, that goodness is the object of love.

The Doctor enquired immediately for his child (for so he often called Amelia); Booth answered, that he had left her asleep; for that she had had but a restless night. 'I hope she is not disordered by the masque-'rade,' cries the Doctor. Booth answered, he believed she would be very well when she waked. 'I fan-'cy,' said he, 'her gentle spirits were a little too 'much fluttered last night; that is all.'

'I hope then,' said the Doctor, 'you will never 'more insist on her going to such places, but know 'your own happiness in having a wife that hath the 'discretion to avoid those places, which, though per-'haps they may not be, as some represent them, such 'brothels of vice and debauchery, as would impeach 'the character of every virtuous woman who was seen 'at them, are certainly however scenes of riot, disor-'der and intemperance, very improper to be frequent-'ed by a chaste and sober Christian matron.'

Booth declared that he was very sensible of his error; and that so far from soliciting his wife to go to another masquerade, he did not intend ever to go thither any more himself.

The Doctor highly approved the resolution; and then Booth said: 'And I thank you, my dear friend, 'as well as my wife's discretion, that she was not at 'the masquerade last night.' He then related to the Doctor the discovery of the plot; and the good man

was

was greatly pleaſed with the ſucceſs of the ſtratagem, and that Booth took it in ſuch good part.

'But, Sir,' ſays Booth, 'I had a letter given me by 'a noble Colonel there, which is written in a hand ſo 'very like yours, that I could almoſt ſwear to it. Nor 'is the ſtile, as far as I can gueſs, unlike your own. 'Here it is, Sir. Do you own the letter, Doctor, or 'do you not?'

The Doctor took the letter, and having looked at it a moment, ſaid—'And did the Colonel himſelf give 'you this letter?'

'The Colonel himſelf,' anſwered Booth.

'Why then,' cries the Doctor, 'he is ſurely the moſt 'impudent fellow that the world ever produced. What, 'did he deliver it with an air of triumph?'

'He delivered it to me with air enough,' cries Booth, 'after his own manner, and bid me read it for my 'edification. To ſay the truth, I am a little ſurpriſed 'that he ſhould ſingle me out of all mankind to deli-'ver the letter to; I do not think I deſerve the cha-'racter of ſuch a huſband. It is well I am not ſo very 'forward to take an affront as ſome folks.'

'I am glad to ſee you are not,' ſaid the Doctor; 'and your behaviour in this affair becomes both the 'man of ſenſe and the Chriſtian: for it would be 'ſurely the greateſt folly, as well as the moſt daring 'impiety, to riſk your own life for the impertinence 'of a fool. As long as you are aſſured of the virtue 'of your own wife, it is wiſdom in you to deny the 'efforts of ſuch a wretch. Not indeed that your wife 'accuſes him of any downright attack, though ſhe 'hath obſerved enough in his behaviour to give of-'fence to her delicacy.'

'You aſtoniſh me, Doctor,' ſaid Booth. 'What 'can you mean? my wife diſlike his behaviour! hath 'the Colonel ever offended her?'

'I do not ſay he hath ever offended her by any 'open declarations. Nor hath he done any thing, 'which, according to the moſt romantic notion of ho-'nour, you can or ought to reſent; but there is ſome-'thing extremely nice in the chaſtity of a truly virtu-'ous woman.'

'And

Digitized by Google

'And hath my wife really complained of any thing 'of that kind in the Colonel?'

'Look ye, young gentleman,' cries the Doctor, 'I 'will have no quarrelling or challenging; I find I 'have made some mistake, and therefore I insist upon 'it, by all the rights of friendship, that you give me 'your word of honour you will not quarrel with the 'Colonel on this account.'

'I do with all my heart,' said Booth; 'for if I 'did not know your character, I should absolutely 'think you was jesting with me. I do not think you 'have mistaken my wife, but I am sure she hath mis-'taken the Colonel; and hath misconstrued some 'overstrained point of gallantry, something of the 'Quixotte kind, into a design against her chastity; 'but I have that opinion of the Colonel, that I hope 'you will not be offended, when I declare I know not 'which of you two I should be the sooner jealous of.'

'I would by no means have you jealous of any one,' cries the Doctor; 'for I think my child's virtue may 'be firmly relied on; but I am convinced she would 'not have said what she did to me, without a cause; 'nor should I, without such a conviction, have writ-'ten that letter to the Colonel, as I own to you I did. 'However, nothing, I say, hath yet past, which even 'in the opinion of false honour, you are at liberty to 'resent; but as to declining any great intimacy, if 'you will take my advice, I think that would be pru-'dent.'

'You will pardon me, my dearest friend,' said Booth; 'but I have really such an opinion of the Colonel, 'that I would pawn my life upon his honour; and as 'for women, I do not believe he ever had an attach-'ment to any.'

'Be it so,' said the Doctor. 'I have only two 'things to insist on. The first is, that if ever you 'change your opinion, this letter may not be the sub-'ject of any quarrelling or fighting; the other is, that 'you never mention a word of this to your wife. By 'the latter I shall see whether you can keep a secret; 'and if it is no otherwise material, it will be a whole-

Digitized by Google

'some exercise to your mind; for the practice of any 'virtue is a kind of mental exercise, and serves to 'maintain the health and vigour of the soul.'

'I faithfully promise both,' cries Booth. And now the breakfast entered the room, as did soon after Amelia and Mrs Atkinson.

The conversation ran chiefly on the masquerade; and Mrs Atkinson gave an account of several adventures there; but whether she told the whole truth with regard to herself, I will not determine; for certain it is, she never once mentioned the name of the noble peer. Amongst the rest, she said there was a young fellow that had preached a sermon there upon a stool, in praise of adultery, she believed; for she could not get near enough to hear the particulars.

During that transaction, Booth had been engaged with the blue domino in another room, so that he knew nothing of it; so that what Mrs Atkinson had now said, only brought to his mind the Doctor's letter to Colonel Bath; for to him he supposed it was written; and the idea of the Colonel being a lover to Amelia, struck him in so ridiculous a light, that it threw him into a violent fit of laughter.

The Doctor, who, from the natural jealousy of an author, imputed the agitation of Booth's muscles to his own sermon, or letter on that subject, was a little offended, and said gravely: 'I shall be glad to know 'the reason of this immoderate mirth. Is adultery a 'matter of jest in your opinion?'

'Far otherwise,' answered Booth. 'But how is it 'possible to refrain from laughter at the idea of a 'fellow preaching a sermon in favour of it at such a 'place?'

'I am very sorry,' cries the Doctor, 'to find the 'age is grown to so scandalous a degree of licentious-'ness, that we have thrown off not only virtue, but 'decency. How abandoned must be the manners of 'any nation where such insults upon religion and mo-'rality can be committed with impunity! No man is 'fonder of true wit and humour than myself; but to 'profane sacred things with jest and scoffing is a sure 'sign of a weak and a wicked mind. It is the very

'vice

Digitized by Google

'vice which Homer attacks in the odious character of 'Therſites. The ladies muſt excuſe my repeating 'the paſſage to you, as I know you have Greek 'enough to underſtand it.'

'Ος ῥ' ἔπεα φρεσὶν ἦσιν ἄκοσμά τε, πολλά τε ἤδη.
Μάψ, ἀτὰρ οὐ κατὰ κόσμον ἐριζέμεναι βασιλεῦσιν,
'Αλλ' ὅτι οἱ εἰσαῖτο γελοῖον Ἀργείοισιν
Ἔμμεναι.'

And immediately adds,

'————αἰσχιστος δὲ ἀνὴρ ὑπὸ Ἴλιον ἦλθε †.'

'Horace again deſcribes ſuch a raſcal:

'*Soluto*
'*Qui captat riſus hominum famamque dicacis* ‡.

'And ſays of him,

'—*Hic niger eſt, hunc tu, Romane, caveto* §.

'O charming Homer,' ſaid Mrs Atkinſon, 'how 'much above all other writers!'

'I aſk your pardon, Madam,' ſaid the Doctor, 'I 'forgot you was a ſcholar; but, indeed, I did not 'know you underſtood Greek as well as Latin.'

'I do not pretend,' ſaid ſhe, 'to be a critic in the 'Greek; but I think I am able to read a little of 'Homer, at leaſt with the help of looking now and 'then into the Latin.'

'Pray, Madam,' ſaid the Doctor, 'how do you 'like this paſſage in the ſpeech of Hector to Andro-'mache?

* Thus paraphraſed by Mr Pope.
"Aw'd by no ſhame, by no reſpect controul'd,
"In ſcandal buſy, in reproaches bold:
"With witty malice ſtudious to deſame,
"Scorn all his joy, and laughter all his aim."

† "He was the greateſt ſcoundrel in the whole army."

‡ "Who trivial burſts of laughter ſtrives to raiſe,
"And courts of prating petulance the praiſe."
FRANCIS.

§ "This man is black, do thou, O Roman, ſhun this man."

" ——Εἰς οἶκον ἰοῦσα τὰ σαυτῆς ἔργα κόμιζε,
" Ἰσόν τ' ἠλακάτην τε, καὶ ἀμφιπόλοισιν κέλευε
" Ἔργον ἐποίχεσθαι *.

'Or how do you like the character of Hippodamia, who, by being the prettieſt girl, and beſt workwoman of her age, got one of the beſt huſbands in all Troy?—I think, indeed, Homer enumerates her diſcretion with her other qualifications; but I do not remember he gives us one character of a woman of learning.——— Don't you conceive this to be a great omiſſion in that charming poet? However Juvenal makes you amends, for he talks very abundantly of the learning of the Roman ladies in his time.'

'You are a provoking man, Doctor,' ſaid Mrs Atkinſon. 'Where is the harm in a woman's having learning as well as a man?'

'Let me aſk you another queſtion,' ſaid the Doctor, 'Where is the harm of a man's being a fine performer with a needle as well as a woman? And yet, anſwer me honeſtly, would you greatly chuſe to marry a man with a thimble upon his finger? Would you in earneſt think a needle became the hand of your huſband as well as a halberd?'

'As to war, I am with you,' ſaid ſhe. 'Homer himſelf, I well remember, makes Hector tell his wife, that warlike works—— What is the Greek word?——— Polemy———-—ſomething———be-longed to men only; and I readily agree to it. I hate a maſculine woman, an Amazon, as much as you can do: but what is there maſculine in learning?'

'Nothing ſo maſculine, take my word for it. As for your Polemy, I look upon it to be the true cha-

* "Go home and mind your own buſineſs. Follow your ſpinning, and keep your maids to their work."

racteriſtic

'racteriſtic of a devil. So Homer every where cha-
'racteriſes Mars.'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the Serjeant, 'you had
'better not diſpute with the Doctor: for upon my
'word he will be too hard for you.'

'Nay, I beg you will not interfere,' cries Mrs Atkinſon. 'I am ſure you can be no judge in theſe
'matters.'

At which the Doctor and Booth burſt into a loud laugh; and Amelia, though fearful of giving her friend offence, could not forbear a gentle ſmile.

'You may laugh, gentlemen, if you pleaſe,' ſaid Mrs Atkinſon; 'but I thank Heaven, I have mar-
'ried a man who is not jealous of my underſtanding.
'I ſhould have been the moſt miſerable woman upon
'earth with a ſtarched pedant, who was poſſeſſed of
'that nonſenſical opinion, that the difference of ſexes
'cauſes any difference in the mind. Why don't you
'honeſtly avow the Turkiſh notion, that women have
'no ſouls? for you ſay the ſame thing in effect.'

'Indeed, my dear,' cries the Serjeant, greatly concerned to ſee his wife ſo angry, 'you have miſta-
'ken the Doctor.'

'I beg, my dear,' cries ſhe, 'you will ſay nothing
'upon theſe ſubjects.—I hope you at leaſt do not de-
'ſpiſe my underſtanding.'

'I aſſure you, I do not,' ſaid the Serjeant, 'and I
'hope you will never deſpiſe mine; for a man may
'have ſome underſtanding, I hope, without learning.'

Mrs Atkinſon reddened extremely at theſe words; and the Doctor, fearing he had gone too far, began to ſoften matters, in which Amelia aſſiſted him. By theſe means, the ſtorm riſing in Mrs Atkinſon before was in ſome meaſure laid, at leaſt ſuſpended from burſting at preſent; but it fell afterwards upon the poor Serjeant's head in a torrent; who had learned perhaps one maxim from his trade, that a cannon ball always doth miſchief in proportion to the reſiſtance it meets with; and that nothing ſo effectually deadens its force as a wool-pack. The Serjeant therefore bore all with patience; and the idea of a wool-pack, perhaps, bringing that of a feather bed into his head, he

Digitized by Google

at last not only quieted his wife; but she cried out with great sincerity, 'Well, my dear, I will say 'one thing for you, that I believe from my soul, 'though you have no learning, you have the best 'understanding of any man upon earth; and I must 'own I think the latter far more profitable of the 'two.'

Far different was the idea she entertained of the Doctor, whom, from this day, she considered as a conceited pedant; nor could all Amelia's endeavours ever alter her sentiments.

The Doctor now took his leave of Booth and his wife for a week, he intending to set out within an hour or two with his old friend, with whom our readers were a little acquainted at the latter end of the ninth book, and of whom, perhaps, they did not then conceive the most favourable opinion.

Nay, I am aware that the esteem which some readers before had for the Doctor, may here be lessened; since he may appear to have been too easy a dupe to the gross flattery of the old gentleman. If there be any such critics, we are heartily sorry as well for them as for the Doctor; but it is our business to discharge the part of a faithful historian, and to describe human nature as it is, not as we would wish it to be.

CHAP. V.

In which Colonel Bath appears in great glory.

THAT afternoon, as Booth was walking in the Park, he met with Colonel Bath, who presently asked him for the letter which he had given him the night before; upon which Booth immediately returned it.

'Don't you think,' cries Bath, 'it is writ with 'great dignity of expression and emphasis of—of—of 'judgment?'

'I am surprised, though,' cries Booth, 'that any 'one should write such a letter to you, Colonel.'

'To me?' said Bath.—'What do you mean, Sir? 'I hope you don't imagine any man durst write 'such

Digitized by Google

'such a letter to me? d—n me, if I knew a man who 'thought me capable of debauching my friend's wife, 'I would— d—n me.'

'I believe, indeed, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that no man 'living dares put his name to such a letter: but you 'see it is anonymous.'

'I don't know what you mean by ominous,' cries the Colonel; 'but blast my reputation, if I had re-'ceived such a letter, if I would not have searched 'the world to have found the writer. D—n me, I 'would have gone to the East-Indies to have pulled 'off his nose.'

'He would, indeed, have deserved it,' cries Booth. —'But pray, Sir, how came you by it?'

'I took it,' said the Colonel, 'from a set of idle 'young rascals, one of whom was reading it aloud 'upon a stool, while the rest were attempting to make 'a jest, not only of the letter, but of all decency, 'virtue and religion: a set of fellows that you must 'have seen or heard of about town, that are, d—n 'me, a disgrace to the dignity of manhood; puppies 'that mistake noise and impudence, rudeness and pro-'faneness, for wit. If the drummers of my company 'had not more understanding than twenty such fel-'lows, I'd have them both whipped out of the regi-'ment.'

'So then you do not know the person to whom it 'was writ?' said Booth.

'Lieutenant,' cries the Colonel, 'your question 'deserves no answer. I ought to take time to con-'sider whether I ought not to resent the supposition. 'Do you think, Sir, I am acquainted with a rascal?'

'I do not suppose, Colonel,' cries Booth, 'that 'you would willingly cultivate any intimacy with such 'a person; but a man must have good luck, who hath 'any acquaintance, if there are not some rascals 'among them.'

'I am not offended with you, child,' says the Colonel. 'I know you did not intend to offend me.'

'No man, I believe, dares intend it,' said Booth.

'I believe so too,' said the Colonel, 'd—n me, I 'know it. But you know, child, how tender I am on

Digitized by Google

'this subject. If I had been ever married myself, I 'should have cleft the man's skull who had dared 'look wantonly at my wife.'

'It is certainly the most cruel of all injuries,' said Booth. 'How finely doth Shakespeare express it in 'his Othello!

"But there, where I had treasured up my soul."

'That Shakespeare,' cries the Colonel, 'was a fine 'fellow. He was a very pretty poet indeed. Was it 'not Shakespeare that wrote the play about Hotspur? 'you must remember these lines. I got them almost 'by heart at the playhouse; for I never missed that 'play whenever it was acted, if I was in town.

"By Heaven it was an easy leap,
"To pluck bright honour into the full moon,
"Or drive into the bottomless deep."

'And—and—faith, I have almost forgot them; 'but I know it is something about saving your ho- 'nour from drowning. ——O it is very fine! I say, 'd—n me, the man who wrote those lines was the 'greatest poet the world ever produced. There is 'dignity of expression and emphasis of thinking, d—n 'me.'

Booth assented to the Colonel's criticism, and then cried, 'I wish, Colonel, you would be so kind to give 'me that letter.' The Colonel answered, 'If he had any particular use for it, he would give it him with all his heart, and presently delivered it; and soon afterwards they parted.

Several passages now struck all at once upon Booth's mind, which gave him great uneasiness. He became confident now that he had mistaken one Colonel for another; and though he could not account for the letter's getting into those hands from whom Bath had taken it (indeed James had dropped it out of his pocket) yet a thousand circumstances left him no room to doubt the identity of the person, who was a man much more liable to raise the suspicion of a husband than honest Bath,

Digitized by Google

Bath, who would at any time have rather fought with a man than lain with a woman.

The whole behaviour of Amelia now rushed upon his memory. Her resolution not to take up her residence at the Colonel's house; her backwardness even to dine there, her unwillingness to go to the masquerade, many of her unguarded expressions, and some where she had been more guarded, all joined together to raise such an idea in Mr Booth, that he had almost taken a resolution to go and cut the Colonel to pieces in his own house. Cooler thoughts, however, suggested themselves to him in time. He recollected the promise he had so solemnly made to the Doctor. He considered, moreover, that he was yet in the dark, as to the extent of the Colonel's guilt. Having nothing therefore to fear from it, he contented himself to postpone a resentment, which he nevertheless resolved to take of the Colonel hereafter, if he found he was in any degree a delinquent.

The first step he determined to take, was, on the first opportunity, to relate to Colonel James the means by which he came possessed of the letter, and to read it to him. On which occasion, he thought, he should easily discern, by the behaviour of the Colonel, whether he had been suspected, either by Amelia or the Doctor, without a cause: but as for his wife, he fully resolved not to reveal the secret to her till the Doctor's return.

While Booth was deeply engaged by himself in these meditations, Captain Trent came up to him, and familiarly slapped him on the shoulder.

They were soon joined by a third gentleman, and presently afterwards by a fourth, both acquaintances of Mr Trent; and all having walked twice the length of the Mall together, it being now past nine in the evening, Trent proposed going to the tavern, to which the strangers immediately consented; and Booth himself, after some resistance, was at length persuaded to comply.

To the King's-arms then they went, where the bottle went very briskly round till after eleven; at which time, Trent proposed a game at cards, to which proposal

Digitized by Google

propoſal likewiſe Booth's conſent was obtained, though not without much difficulty; for though he had naturally ſome inclination to gaming, and had formerly a little indulged it, yet he had entirely left it off for many years.

Booth and his friend were partners, and had at firſt ſome ſucceſs; but Fortune, according to her uſual conduct, ſoon ſhifted about, and perſecuted Booth with ſuch malice, that in about two hours he was ſtripped of all the gold in his pocket, which amounted to twelve guineas, being more than half the caſh which he was at that time worth.

How eaſy it is for a man, who is at all tainted with the itch of gaming, to leave off play in ſuch a ſituation, eſpecially when he is likewiſe heated with liquor, I leave to the gameſters to determine. Certain it is, that Booth had no inclination to deſiſt; but, on the contrary, was ſo eagerly bent on playing on, that he called his friend out of the room, and aſked him for ten pieces, which he promiſed punctually to pay the next morning.

Trent chid him for uſing ſo much formality on the occaſion: 'You know,' ſaid he, 'dear Booth, you 'may have what money you pleaſe of me. Here is 'a twenty pound note at your ſervice, and if you 'want five times the ſum, it is at your ſervice. We 'will never let theſe fellows go away with our money 'in this manner; for we have ſo much the advan'tage, that if the knowing ones were here, they 'would lay odds of our ſide.'

But if this was really Mr Trent's opinion, he was very much miſtaken: for the other two honourable gentlemen were not only greater maſters of the game, and ſomewhat ſoberer than poor Booth, having with all the art in their power evaded the bottle; but they had moreover another ſmall advantage over their adverſaries, both of them, by means of ſome certain private ſigns, previouſly agreed upon between them, being always acquainted with the principal cards in each other's hands. It cannot be wondered therefore, that Fortune was on their ſide; for however ſhe may be reported to favour fools, ſhe never, I believe, ſhews them

Digitized by Google

them any countenance, when they engage in play with knaves.

The more Booth loſt, the deeper he made his bets; the conſequence of which was, that about two in the morning, beſides the loſs of his own money, he was fifty pounds indebted to Trent. A ſum, indeed, which he would not have borrowed, had not the other, like a very generous friend, puſhed it upon him.

Trent's pockets became at laſt dry, by means of theſe loans. His own loſs indeed was trifling; for the ſtakes of the games were no higher than crowns; and betting (as it is called) was that to which Booth owed his ruin. The gentlemen, therefore, pretty well knowing Booth's circumſtances, and being kindly unwilling to win more of a man than he was worth, declined playing any longer: nor did Booth once aſk them to perſiſt; for he was aſhamed of the debt which he had already contracted to Trent, and very far from deſiring to encreaſe it.

The company then ſeparated. The two victors and Trent went off in their chairs to their ſeveral houſes near Groſvenor-ſquare; and poor Booth, in a melancholy mood, walked home to his lodgings. He was indeed in ſuch a fit of deſpair, that it more than once came into his head to put an end to his miſerable being.

But, before we introduce him to Amelia, we muſt do her the juſtice to relate the manner in which ſhe ſpent this unhappy evening. It was about ſeven when Booth left her to walk in the Park: from this time, till paſt eight, ſhe was employed with her children, in playing with them, in giving them their ſupper, and in putting them to-bed.

When theſe offices were performed, ſhe employed herſelf another hour in cooking up a little ſupper for her huſband, this being, as we have already obſerved, his favourite meal, as indeed it was her's; and in a moſt pleaſant and delightful manner, they generally paſſed their time at this ſeaſon, though their fare was very ſeldom of the ſumptuous kind.

It now grew dark, and her haſhed mutton was ready for the table; but no Booth appeared. Having

Digitized by Google

ing waited therefore for him a full hour, she gave him over for that evening; nor was she much alarmed at his absence, as she knew he was, in a night or two, to be at the tavern with some brother-officers; she concluded therefore that they had met in the Park, and had agreed to spend this evening together.

At ten then she sat down to supper by herself; for Mrs Atkinson was then abroad. And here we cannot help relating a little incident, however trivial it may appear to some. Having sat some time alone reflecting on their distressed situation, her spirits grew very low; and she was once or twice a going to ring the bell, to send her maid for half a pint of white-wine; but checked her inclination, in order to save the little sum of sixpence; which she did the more resolutely, as she had before refused to gratify her children with tarts for their supper, from the said motive. And this self-denial she was very probably practising to save sixpence, while her husband was paying a debt of several guineas, incurred by the ace of trumps being in the hands of his adversary.

Instead therefore of this cordial, she took up one of the excellent Farquhar's comedies, and read it half through, when the clock striking twelve, she retired to bed, leaving the maid to set up for her master. She would, indeed, have much more willingly have sat up herself; but the delicacy of her own mind assured her, that Booth would not thank her for the compliment. This is indeed a method which some wives take of upbraiding their husbands for staying abroad till too late an hour, and of engaging them through tenderness and good-nature, never to enjoy the company of their friends too long, when they must do this at the expence of their wives rest.

To bed then she went, but not to sleep. Thrice indeed she told the dismal clock, and as often heard the more dismal watchman, till her miserable husband found his way home, and stole silently, like a thief, to bed to her; at which time, pretending then first to wake, she threw her snowy arms around him; though perhaps, the more witty property of snow, according to

Digitized by Google

to Addiſon, that is to ſay, its coldneſs rather belonged to the poor Captain.

CHAP. VI.

Read, gameſter, and obſerve.

BOOTH could not ſo well diſguiſe the agitations of his mind from Amelia, but that ſhe perceived ſufficient ſymptoms to aſſure her that ſome misfortune had befallen him. This made her in her turn ſo uneaſy, that Booth took notice of it, and after breakfaſt ſaid, 'Sure, my dear Emily, ſomething hath 'fallen out to vex you.'

Amelia, looking tenderly at him, anſwered, 'Indeed, 'my dear, you are in the right. I am indeed extremely vexed.' 'For Heaven's ſake,' ſaid he, 'what is 'it?' 'Nay, my love,' cries ſhe, 'that you muſt anſwer 'yourſelf. Whatever it is which hath given you all 'that diſturbance which you in vain endeavour to con'ceal from me, that it is which cauſes all my affliction.'

'You gueſs truly, my ſweet.' replied Booth; 'I 'am indeed afflicted, and I will not, nay, I cannot, 'conceal the truth from you. I have undone myſelf, 'Amelia.'

'What have you done, child?' ſaid ſhe, in ſome conſternation, 'pray tell me.'

'I have loſt my money at play,' anſwered he.

'Pugh!' ſaid ſhe, recovering herſelf,—'what ſig'nifies the trifle you had in your pocket? Reſolve 'never to play again, and let it give you no further 'vexation; I warrant you, we will contrive ſome me'thod to repair ſuch a loſs.'

'Thou heavenly angel, thou comfort of my ſoul!' cries Booth, tenderly embracing her——Then ſtarting a little from her arms, and looking with eager fondneſs in her eyes, he ſaid, 'Let me ſurvey thee; 'art thou really human, or art thou not rather an 'angel in a human form?——O, no,' cries he, flying again

Digitized by Google

again into her arms, 'thou art my dearest woman, 'my best, my beloved wife.'

Amelia, having returned all his caresses with equal kindness, told him, she had near eleven guineas in her purse, and asked how much she should fetch him. ——'I would not advise you, Billy, to carry too 'much in your pocket, for fear it should be a temp-'tation to you to return to gaming, in order to re-'trieve your past losses. Let me beg you on all 'accounts, never to think more, if possible, on the 'trifle you have lost, any more than if you had never 'possessed it.'

Booth promised her faithfully he never would, and refused to take any of the money. He then hesitated a moment, and cried——'You say, my dear, you 'have eleven guineas; you have a diamond ring like-'wise, which was your grandmother's, I believe that 'is worth twenty pound; and your own and the child's 'watch are worth as much more.'

'I believe they would sell for as much,' cried Amelia; 'for a pawnbroker of Mrs Atkinson's acquain-'tance offered to lend me thirty-five pounds upon 'them, when you was in your last distress.—But why 'are you computing their value now?'

'I was only considering,' answered he, 'how much 'we could raise in any case of exigency.'

'I have computed it myself,' said she; 'and I be-'lieve all we have in the world, besides our bare ne-'cessary apparel, would produce about sixty pounds: 'and suppose, my dear, said she, 'while we have 'that little sum, we should think of employing it 'some way or other, to procure some small subsistence 'for ourselves and our family. As for your depen-'dence on the Colonel's friendship, it is all vain, I 'am afraid, and fallacious; nor do I see any hopes 'you have, from any other quarter, of providing for 'yourself again in the army. And though the sum 'which is now in our power is very small; yet we 'may possibly contrive with it to put ourselves into 'some mean way of livelihood. I have a heart, my 'Billy, which is capable of undergoing any thing 'for your sake; and I hope my hands are as able to

Digitized by Google

'work as those which have been more inured to it. 'But think, my dear, think what must be our wretched 'condition, when the very little we now have is all 'mouldered away, as it will soon be in this town.'

When poor Booth heard this, and reflected that the time which Amelia foresaw was already arrived (for that he had already lost every farthing they were worth), it touched him to the quick; he turned pale, gnashed his teeth, and cried out, 'Damnation! this 'is too much to bear.'

Amelia was thrown into the utmost consternation by this behaviour; and, with great terror in her countenance cried out, 'Good Heavens! my dear love, 'what is the reason of this agony?'

'Ask me no questions,' cried he, 'unless you 'would drive me to madness.'

'My Billy, my love,' said she, 'what can be the 'meaning of this?—I beg you will deal openly with 'me, and tell me all your griefs.'

'Have you dealt fairly with me, Amelia?' said he.

'Yes surely,' said she; 'Heaven is my witness how 'fairly.'

'Nay, do not call Heaven,' cried he, 'to witness 'a falsehood. You have not dealt openly with me, 'Amelia. You have concealed secrets from me; se-'crets which I ought to have known, and which, if 'I had known, it had been better for us both.'

'You astonish me as much as you shock me,' cried she. 'What falsehood, what treachery, have I 'been guilty of?'

'You tell me,' said he, 'that I can have no re-'liance on James; why did you not tell me so be-'fore?'

'I call Heaven again,' said she, 'to witness; nay, 'I appeal to yourself for the truth of it; I have 'often told you so. I have told you I disliked the 'man, notwithstanding the many favours he had 'done you. I desired you not to have too absolute a 'reliance upon him. I own, I had once an extreme 'good opinion of him; but I changed it, and I 'acquainted you that I had so.

Digitized by Google

'But not,' cries he, 'with the reaſons why you had 'changed it.'

'I was really afraid, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'of going 'too far. I knew the obligations you had to him; 'and if I ſuſpected that he acted rather from vanity 'than true friendſhip—'

'Vanity!' cries he, 'take care, Amelia, you 'know his motive to be much worſe than vanity— 'A motive, which, if he had piled obligations on me 'till they had reached the ſkies, would tumble all down 'to hell. It is in vain to conceal it longer—I know 'all—your confident hath told me all.'

'Nay, then,' cries ſhe, 'on my knees I intreat you 'to be pacified, and hear me out. It was, my dear, 'for you, my dread of your jealous honour, and the 'fatal conſequences.'

'Is not Amelia, then,' cried he, 'equally jealous 'of my honour? Would ſhe, from a weak tenderneſs 'for my perſon, go privately about to betray, to un- 'dermine, the moſt invaluable treaſure of my ſoul? 'Would ſhe have me pointed at as the credulous 'dupe, the eaſy fool, the tame, the kind cuckold 'of a raſcal, with whom I converſed as a friend?'

'Indeed, you injure me,' ſaid Amelia. 'Heaven 'forbid I ſhould have the trial; but, I think, I could 'ſacrifice all I hold moſt dear, to preſerve your ho- 'nour. I think I have ſhewn I can. But I will—— 'when you are cool, I will—ſatisfy you I have done 'nothing you ought to blame.'

'I am cool then,' cries he—'I will with the 'greateſt coolneſs hear you.—But do not think, 'Amelia, I have the leaſt jealouſy, the leaſt ſuſpi- 'cion, the leaſt doubt, of your honour. It is your 'want of confidence in me alone which I blame.'

'When you are calm,' cried ſhe, 'I will ſpeak, 'and not before.'

He aſſured her he was calm; and then ſhe ſaid— 'You have juſtified my conduct, by your preſent paſ- 'ſion, in concealing from you my ſuſpicions; for 'they were no more, nay it is poſſible they were unjuſt: 'for ſince the Doctor, in betraying the ſecret to you, 'hath ſo far falſified my opinion of him, why may I not

'be

Digitized by Google

'be as well deceived in my opinion of the Colonel; 'since it was only formed on ſome particulars in his 'behaviour which I diſliked? for, upon my honour, 'he never ſpoke a word to me, nor hath been ever 'guilty of any direct action which I could blame.' She then went on, and related moſt of the circumſtances which ſhe had mentioned to the Doctor, omitting one or two of the ſtrongeſt, and giving ſuch a turn to the reſt, that, if Booth had not had ſome of Othello's blood in him, his wife would have almoſt appeared a prude in his eyes. Even he, however, was pretty well pacified by this narrative, and ſaid he was glad to find a poſſibility of the Colonel's innocence; but that he greatly commended the prudence of his wife, and only wiſhed ſhe would for the future make him her only confident.

Amelia, upon that, expreſſed ſome bitterneſs againſt the Doctor for breaking his truſt; when Booth, in his excuſe, related all the circumſtances of the letter, and plainly convinced her, that the ſecret had dropped by mere accident from the mouth of the Doctor.

Thus the huſband and wife became again reconciled; and poor Amelia generouſly forgave a paſſion, of which the ſagacious reader is better acquainted with the real cauſe, than was that unhappy lady.

CHAP. VII.

In which Booth receives a viſit from Captain Trent.

WHEN Booth grew perfectly cool, and began to reflect that he had broken his word to the Doctor, in having made the diſcovery to his wife, which we have ſeen in the laſt chapter, that thought gave him great uneaſineſs; and now, to comfort him, Captain Trent came to make him a viſit. This was, indeed, almoſt the laſt man in the world, whoſe company he wiſhed for; for he was the only man he was aſhamed to ſee, for a reaſon well known to the gameſters; among whom, the moſt diſhonourable of all things is, not to pay a debt contracted at the gaming-table, the next day, or the next time at leaſt that you ſee the party.

Digitized by Google

Booth made no doubt but that Trent was come on purpose to receive this debt; the latter had been therefore scarce a minute in the room, before Booth began in an awkward manner, to apologize; but Trent immediately stopped his mouth, and said, 'I do not 'want the money, Mr Booth, and you may pay it me 'whenever you are able; and, if you are never able, 'I assure you I will never ask you for it.'

This generosity raised such a tempest of gratitude in Booth (if I may be allowed the expression) that the tears burst from his eyes, and it was some time before he could find any utterance for those sentiments with which his mind overflowed; but, when he began to express his thankfulness, Trent immediately stopped him, and gave a sudden turn to their discourse.

Mrs Trent had been to visit Mrs Booth on the masquerade evening, which visit Mrs Booth had not yet returned. Indeed this was only the second day since she had received it. Trent therefore now told his friend, that he should take it extremely kind if he and his lady would wave all ceremony, and sup at their house the next evening. Booth hesitated a moment—but presently said, 'I am pretty certain my 'wife is not engaged, and I will undertake for her. 'I am sure she will not refuse any thing Mr Trent 'can ask.' And soon after Trent took Booth with him to walk in the Park.

There were few greater lovers of a bottle than Trent; he soon proposed therefore to adjourn to the King's-arms tavern, where Booth, tho' much against his inclination, accompanied him. But Trent was very importunate, and Booth did not think himself at liberty to refuse such a request to a man from whom he had so lately received such obligations.

When they came to the tavern, however, Booth recollected the omission he had been guilty of the night before. He wrote a short note therefore to his wife, acquainting her, that he should not come home to supper; but comforted her with a faithful promise that he would on no account engage himself in gaming.

The first bottle passed in ordinary conversation; but, when they had tapped the second, Booth, on some

Digitized by Google

ſome hints which Trent gave him, very fairly laid open to him his whole circumſtances, and declared he almoſt deſpaired of mending them. 'My chief relief,' ſaid he, 'was in the intereſt of Colonel James; but 'I have given up thoſe hopes.'

'And very wiſely too,' ſaid Trent. 'I ſay nothing 'of the Colonel's good will. Very likely he may be 'your ſincere friend; but I do not believe he hath 'the intereſt he pretends to. He hath had too many 'favours in his own family, to aſk any more yet a 'while. But I am miſtaken if you have not a much 'more powerful friend than the Colonel; one who 'is both able and willing to ſerve you. I dined at 'his table within theſe two days; and I never heard 'kinder nor warmer expreſſions from the mouth of 'man, than he made uſe of towards you. I make no 'doubt, you know whom I mean.'

'Upon my honour, I do not,' anſwered Booth; 'nor did I gueſs that I had ſuch a friend in the world 'as you mention.'

'I am glad then,' cries Trent, 'that I have the 'pleaſure of informing you of it.' He then named the noble peer, who hath been already ſo often mentioned in this hiſtory.

Booth turned pale, and ſtarted at his name. 'I for-'give you, my dear Trent,' cries Booth, 'for men-'tioning his name to me, as you are a ſtranger to 'what hath paſſed between us.'

'Nay, I know nothing that hath paſſed between 'you,' anſwered Trent. 'I am ſure if there is any 'quarrel between you of two days ſtanding, all is 'forgiven on his part.'

'D—n his forgiveneſs,' ſaid Booth. 'Perhaps I 'ought to bluſh at what I have forgiven.'

'You ſurpriſe me,' cries Trent. 'Pray, what can 'be the matter?'

'Indeed, my dear Trent,' cries Booth, very grave-ly, 'he would have injured me in the tendereſt part. 'I know not how to tell it you; but he would have 'diſhonoured me with my wife.'

'Sure, you are not in earneſt,' anſwered Trent;

Digitized by Google

'but, if you are, you will pardon me for thinking 'that impoſſible.'

'Indeed, cries Booth, 'I have ſo good an opinion 'of my wife, as to believe it impoſſible for him to 'ſucceed; but that he ſhould intend me the favour, 'you will not, I believe, think an impoſſibility.'

'Faith! not in the leaſt,' ſaid Trent. 'Mrs Booth 'is a very fine woman; and if I had the honour to 'be her huſband, I ſhould not be angry with any man 'for liking her.'

'But you would be angry,' ſaid Booth, 'with a 'man who ſhould make uſe of ſtratagems and con-'trivances to ſeduce her virtue; eſpecially if he did 'this under the colour of entertaining the higheſt 'friendſhip for yourſelf.'

'Not at all,' cries Trent. 'It is human nature.'

'Perhaps it is,' cries Booth; 'but it is human na-'ture depraved, ſtripped of all its worth and lovelineſs, and dignity, and degraded down to a level with 'the vileſt brutes.'

'Look ye, Booth,' cries Trent, 'I would not be 'miſunderſtood. I think, when I am talking to you, 'I talk to a man of ſenſe, and to an inhabitant of this 'country; not to one who dwells in a land of ſaints. 'If you have really ſuch an opinion as you expreſs 'of this noble Lord, you have the fineſt opportunity 'of making a complete fool and bubble of him that 'any man can deſire, and of making your own for-'tune at the ſame time. I do not ſay that your ſu-'ſpicions are groundleſs; for, of all men upon earth, 'I know, my Lord is the greateſt bubble to women, 'though I believe he hath had very few. And this I 'am confident of, that he hath not the leaſt jealouſy 'of theſe ſuſpicions. Now, therefore, if you will act 'the part of a wiſe man, I will undertake that you 'ſhall make your fortune, without the leaſt injury to 'the chaſtity of Mrs Booth.'

'I do not underſtand you, Sir,' ſaid Booth.

'Nay,' cries Trent, 'if you will not underſtand me, 'I have done. I meant only your ſervice; and I 'thought I had known you better.'

Booth

Booth begged him to explain himself. 'If you 'can,' said he, 'shew me any way to improve such 'circumstances as I have opened to you, you may de- 'pend on it I shall readily embrace it, and own my ob- 'ligations to you.'

'That is spoken like a man,' cries Trent. 'Why, 'what is it more than this? Carry your suspicions in 'your own bosom. Let Mrs Booth, in whose virtue 'I am sure you may be justly confident, go to the pub- 'lic places; there let her treat my Lord with common 'civility only; I am sure he will bite. And thus, 'without suffering him to gain his purpose, you will 'gain yours. I know several who have succeeded 'with him in this manner.'

'I am very sorry, Sir,' cries Booth, 'that you are 'acquainted with any such rascals. I do assure you, 'rather than I would act such a part, I would submit 'to the hardest sentence that fortune could pronounce 'against me.'

'Do as you please, Sir,' said Trent; 'I have only 'ventured to advise you as a friend. But do you not 'think your nicety is a little over-scrupulous?'

'You will excuse me, Sir,' said Booth; 'but I 'think no man can be too scrupulous in points which 'concern his honour.'

'I know many men of very nice honour,' answered Trent, 'who have gone much farther; and no man, 'I am sure, had ever a better excuse for it than your- 'self.——You will forgive me, Booth, since what I 'speak proceeds from my love to you; nay, indeed, by 'mentioning your affairs to me, which I am heartily 'sorry for, you have given me a right to speak. You 'know best what friends you have to depend upon; 'but if you have no other pretensions than your merit, 'I can assure you you would fail, if it was possible you 'could have ten times more merit than you have. 'And if you love your wife, as I am convinced you 'do, what must be your condition, in seeing her want 'the necessaries of life?'

'I know my condition is very hard,' cries Booth; 'but I have one comfort in it, which I will never part 'with; and that is innocence. As to the mere ne-

'cessaries

'ceſſaries of life, however, it is pretty difficult to de-
'prive us of them; this I am ſure of, no one can want
'them long.'

'Upon my word, Sir,' cries Trent, 'I did not
'know you had been ſo great a philoſopher. But,
'believe me, theſe matters look much leſs terrible at
'a diſtance, than when they are actually preſent. You
'will then find, I am afraid, that honour hath no
'more ſkill in cookery, than Shakeſpeare tells us it
'hath in ſurgery.——D—n me, if I don't wiſh his
'Lordſhip loved my wife as well as he doth yours, I
'promiſe you I would truſt her virtue; and if he
'ſhould get the better of it, I ſhould have people of
'faſhion enough to keep me in countenance.'

Their ſecond bottle being now almoſt out, Booth, without making any anſwer, called for a bill. Trent preſſed very much the drinking of another bottle; but Booth abſolutely refuſed, and preſently afterwards they parted, not extremely well ſatisfied with each other. They appeared indeed one to the other in diſadvantageous lights of a very different kind. Trent concluded Booth to be a very ſilly fellow; and Booth began to ſuſpect, that Trent was very little better than a ſcoundrel.

CHAP. VIII.

Contains a letter, and other matters.

WE will now return to Amelia; to whom, immediately upon her huſband's departure to walk with Mr Trent, a porter brought the following letter; which ſhe immediately opened and read.

"MADAM,

"THE quick diſpatch, which I have given to
"your firſt commands, will, I hope, aſſure you of
"the diligence with which I ſhall always obey every
"command that you are pleaſed to honour me with.
"I have indeed, in this trifling affair, acted as if
"my life itſelf had been at ſtake; nay, I know not
"but it may be ſo: for this inſignificant matter you
"was

Digitized by Google

" was pleaſed to tell me, would oblige the charming " perſon in whoſe power is not only my happineſs, " but, as I am well perſuaded, my life too. Let me " reap therefore ſome little advantage in your eyes, as " you have in mine, from this trifling occaſion: for if " any thing could add to the charms of which you are " miſtreſs, it would be perhaps that amiable zeal with " which you maintain the cauſe of your friend. I " hope, indeed, ſhe will be my friend and advocate " with the moſt lovely of her ſex, as I think ſhe hath " reaſon, and as you was pleaſed to inſinuate ſhe had " been. Let me beſeech you, Madam, let not that " dear heart, whoſe tenderneſs is ſo inclined to com- " paſſionate the miſeries of others, be hardened only " againſt the ſufferings which itſelf occaſions. Let not " that man alone have reaſon to think you cruel, who, " of all others, would do the moſt to procure your " kindneſs. How often have I lived over in my re- " flexions, in my dreams, thoſe two ſhort minutes we " were together? But alas! how faint are theſe mi- " mickrics of the imagination! What would I not " give to purchaſe the reality of ſuch another bleſſing! " This, Madam, is in your power to beſtow on the " man who hath no wiſh, no will, no fortune, no " heart, no life, but what are at your diſpoſal. Grant " me only the favour to be at Lady ——'s aſſembly. " ——You can have nothing to fear from indulging " me with a moment's ſight, a moment's converſa- " tion: I will aſk no more. I know your delicacy, " and had rather die than offend it. Could I have ſeen " you ſometimes, I believe the fear of offending you " will have kept my love for ever buried in my own " boſom; but, to be totally excluded even from the " ſight of what my ſoul doats on, is what I cannot " bear. It is that alone which hath extorted the fatal " ſecret from me. Let that obtain your forgiveneſs for " me. I need not ſign this letter, otherwiſe than " with that impreſſion of my heart which I hope it " bears; and, to conclude it in any form, no lan- " guage hath words of devotion ſtrong enough to tell " you with what truth, what anguiſh, what zeal, what " adoration, I love you."

Amelia

Digitized by Google

Amelia had juſt ſtrength to hold out to the end, when her trembling grew ſo violent, that ſhe dropped the letter, and had probably dropped herſelf, had not Mrs Atkinſon come timely in to ſupport her.

'Good Heavens!' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'what is 'the matter with you, Madam?'

'I know not what is the matter,' cries Amelia; 'but I have received a letter at laſt from that infa-'mous Colonel.'

'You will take my opinion again then, I hope, 'Madam,' cries Mrs Atkinſon. 'But don't be ſo af-'fected; the letter cannot eat you, or run away with 'you.—Here it lies, I ſee; will you give me leave to 'read it?'

'Read it with all my heart,' cries Amelia, 'and 'give me your advice how to act; for I am almoſt 'diſtracted.'

'Hey day!' ſays Mrs Atkinſon, 'here is a piece of 'parchment too——What is that?' In truth, this parchment had dropped from the letter when Amelia firſt opened it; but her attention was ſo fixed by the contents of the letter itſelf, that ſhe had never read the other. Mrs Atkinſon had now opened the parchment firſt; and, after a moment's peruſal, the fire flaſhed from her eyes, and the blood fluſhed into her cheek, and ſhe cried out in a rapture, 'It is a com-'miſſion for my huſband! upon my ſoul, it is a com-'miſſion for my huſband!' and at the ſame time began to jump about the room, in a kind of frantic fit of joy.

'What can be the meaning of all this?' cries Amelia, under the higheſt degree of aſtoniſhment.

'Do not I tell you, my dear Madam,' cried ſhe, 'that it is a commiſſion for my huſband; and can you 'wonder at my being overjoyed at what I know will 'make him ſo happy?—And now it is all out. The 'letter is not from the Colonel, but from that noble 'Lord of whom I have told you ſo much. But in-'deed, Madam, I have ſome pardons to aſk of you.—'However, I know your goodneſs, and I will tell you 'all.

'You

Digitized by Google

'You are to know then, Madam, that I had not 'been in the opera-houſe ſix minutes before a maſque 'came up, and taking me by the hand, led me aſide. 'I gave the maſque my hand: and ſeeing a lady at 'that time lay hold on Captain Booth, I took that op- 'portunity of ſlipping away from him: for though by 'the help of the ſqueaking voice, and by attempting 'to mimic yours, I had pretty well diſguiſed my 'own, I was ſtill afraid, if I had much converſation 'with your huſband, he would diſcover me. I walk- 'ed therefore away with this maſque to the upper end 'of the fartheſt room, where we ſat down in a corner 'together. He preſently diſcovered to me, that he 'took me for you; and I ſoon after found out who he 'was: indeed, ſo far from attempting to diſguiſe him- 'ſelf, he ſpoke in his own voice, and in his own per- 'ſon. He now began to make very violent love to 'me; but it was rather in the ſtyle of a great man of 'the preſent age, than of an Arcadian ſwain. In 'ſhort, he laid his whole fortune at my feet, and bade 'me make whatever terms I pleaſed, either for my- 'ſelf or for others. By others, I ſuppoſe, he meant 'your huaſband. This, however, put a thought into 'my head, of turning the preſent occaſion to ad- 'vantage. I told him, there were two kinds of per- 'ſons, the fallaciouſneſs of whoſe promiſes had be- 'come proverbial in the world; theſe were lovers, 'and great men. What reliance then could I have 'on the promiſe of one, who united in himſelf both 'thoſe characters? That I had ſeen a melancholy in- 'ſtance, in a very worthy woman of my acquaintance '(meaning myſelf, Madam) of his want of genero- 'ſity. I ſaid, I knew the obligations that he had to 'this woman, and the injuries he had done her: all 'which I was convinced ſhe forgave; for that ſhe had 'ſaid the handſomeſt things in the world of him to me. 'He anſwered, that he thought he had not been defi- 'cient in generoſity to this lady (for I explained to 'him whom I meant); but that indeed, if ſhe had 'ſpoke well of him to me (meaning yourſelf, Ma- 'dam) he would not fail to reward her for ſuch an ob- 'ligation. I then told him ſhe had married a very

'deſerving

Digitized by Google

'deſerving man, who had ſerved long in the army 'abroad as a private man, and who was a ſerjeant in 'the guards; that I knew it was ſo very eaſy for him 'to get him a commiſſion, that I ſhould not think he 'had any honour or goodneſs in the world, if he ne-'gleƈted it. I declared this ſtep muſt be a preliminary 'to any good opinion he muſt ever hope for of mine. 'I then profeſſed the greateſt friendſhip to that lady '(in which I am convinced you will think me ſerious) 'and aſſured him he would give me one of the high-'eſt pleaſures, in letting me be the inſtrument of doing 'her ſuch a ſervice. He promiſed me in a moment to 'do what you ſee, Madam, he hath ſince done. And 'to you I ſhall always think myſelf indebted for it.'

'I know not how you are indebted to me,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, I am very glad of any good for-'tune that can attend poor Atkinſon: but I wiſh it 'had been obtained ſome other way. Good Heavens! 'what muſt be the conſequence of this? What muſt 'this lord think of me, for liſtening to his mention 'of love; nay, for making any terms with him? for 'what muſt he ſuppoſe thoſe terms mean? Indeed, 'Mrs Atkinſon, you carried it a great deal too far. 'No wonder he had the aſſurance to write to me in 'the manner he hath done. It is too plain what he 'conceives of me, and who knows what he may ſay 'to others? You may have blown up my reputation 'by your behaviour.

'How is that poſſible?' anſwered Mrs Atkinſon. 'Is it not in my power to clear up all matters? If 'you will but give me leave to make an appointment 'in your name, I will meet him myſelf, and declare 'the whole ſecret to him.'

'I will conſent to no ſuch appointment,' cries Amelia. 'I am heartily ſorry I ever conſented to 'praƈtiſe any deceit. I plainly ſee the truth of what 'Dr Harriſon hath often told me, that if one ſteps 'ever ſo little out of the ways of virtue and innocence, 'we know not how we may ſlide; for all the ways of 'are a ſlippery deſcent.'

'That ſentiment,' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'is much 'older than Dr Harriſon. *Omne vitium in proclivi eſt.*'

Digitized by Google

'However new or old it is, I find it is true,' cries Amelia.——'But pray, tell me all, tho' I tremble to 'hear it.'

'Indeed, my dear friend,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'you 'are terrified at nothing—Indeed, indeed, you are 'too great a prude.'

'I do not know what you mean by prudery,' answered Amelia. 'I shall never be ashamed of the 'strictest regard to decency, to reputation, and to 'that honour in which the dearest of all human creatures hath his share. But pray give me the letter; 'there is an expression in it which alarmed me when 'I read it ——Pray, what doth he mean by his two 'short minutes, and by purchasing the reality of such 'another blessing?'

'Indeed, I know not what he means by two minutes,' cries Mrs Atkinson, 'unless he calls two 'hours so; for we were not together much less.—— 'And as for any blessing he had—I am a stranger to 'it. Sure, I hope you have a better opinion of me, 'than to think I granted him the last favour.'

'I don't know what favours you granted him, Madam,' answered Amelia, peevishly; 'but I am sorry 'you granted him any in my name.'

'Upon my word,' cries Mrs Atkinson, 'you use 'me unkindly—and it is an usage I did not expect at 'your hands; nor do I know that I have deserved it. 'I am sure I went to the masquerade with no other 'view than to oblige you; nor did I say or do any 'thing there which any woman, who is not the most 'confounded prude upon earth, would have started 'at on a much less occasion than what induced me. 'Well, I declare upon my soul then, that, if I was a 'man, rather than be married to a woman who makes 'such a fuss with her virtue, I would wish my wife 'was without such a troublesome companion.'

'Very possibly, Madam, these may be your sentiments,' cries Amelia; 'and I hope they are the sentiments of your husband.'

'I desire, Madam,' cries Mrs Atkinson, 'you 'would not reflect on my husband. He is as worthy

Digitized by Google

'man, and as brave a man as yours: yes, Madam, 'and he is now as much a captain.'

She ſpoke theſe words with ſo loud a voice, that Atkinſon, who was going accidentally up ſtairs, heard them; and, being ſurpriſed at the angry tone of his wife's voice, he entered the room, and with a look of much aſtoniſhment, begged to know what was the matter.

'The matter, my dear,' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'is, 'that I have got a commiſſion for you, and your good 'old friend here is angry with me for getting it.'

'I have not ſpirits enough,' cries Amelia, 'to anſwer you as you deſerve; and, if I had, you are be'low my anger.'

'I do not know, Mrs Booth,' anſwered the other, 'whence this great ſuperiority over me is derived: 'but, if your virtue gives it you, I would have you 'to know, Madam, that I deſpiſe a prude as much 'as you can do a ——.'

'Though you have ſeveral times,' cries Amelia, 'inſulted me with that word, I ſcorn to give you any 'ill language in return. If you deſerve any bad appellation, you know it, without my telling it you.'

Poor Atkinſon, who was more frightened than he had ever been in his life, did all he could to procure peace. He fell upon his knees to his wife, and begged her to compoſe herſelf; for, indeed, ſhe ſeemed to be in a moſt furious rage.

While he was in this poſture, Booth, who had knocked ſo gently at the door, for fear of diſturbing his wife, that he had not been heard in the tempeſt, came into the room. The moment Amelia ſaw him, the tears, which had been gathering for ſome time, burſt in a torrent from her eyes, which, however, ſhe endeavoured to conceal with her handkerchief. The entry of Booth turned all in an inſtant into a ſilent picture; in which, the firſt figure that ſtruck the eyes of the Captain, was the Serjeant on his knees to his wife.

Booth immediately cried, 'What's the meaning 'of this?'---but received no anſwer. He then caſt his eyes towards Amelia; and plainly diſcerning her condition,

Digitized by Google

dition, he ran to her, and in a very tender phraſe, begged to know what was the matter. To which ſhe anſwered, 'Nothing, my dear; nothing, my dear, 'nothing of any conſequence.' He replied, that he would know; and then turned to Atkinſon, and aſked the ſame queſtion.

Atkinſon anſwered, 'Upon my honour, Sir, I 'know nothing of it.——Something hath paſſed 'between Madam and my wife; but what it is, I 'know no more than your honour.'

'Your wife,' ſaid Mrs Atkinſon, 'hath uſed me 'cruelly ill, Mr Booth. If you muſt be ſatisfied, that 'is the whole matter.'

Booth rapt out a great oath, and cried, 'It is 'impoſſible; my wife is not capable of uſing any one 'ill.'

Amelia then caſt herſelf upon her knees to her huſband, and cried, 'For Heaven's ſake, do not throw 'yourſelf into a paſſion—Some few words have paſt--- 'Perhaps I may be in the wrong.'

'Damnation ſeize me, if I think ſo,' cries Booth. 'And I wiſh whoever hath drawn theſe tears from 'your eyes, may pay it with as many drops of their 'heart's blood.'

'You ſee, Madam,' cries Mrs Atkinſon, 'you 'have your bully to take your part; ſo, I ſuppoſe, 'you will uſe your triumph.'

Amelia made no anſwer; but ſtill kept hold of Booth; who, in a violent rage, cried out, 'My 'Amelia triumph over ſuch a wretch as thee!—— 'What can lead thy inſolence into ſuch preſumption? 'Serjeant, I deſire you'll take that monſter out of the 'room, or I cannot anſwer for myſelf.'

The Serjeant was beginning to beg his wife to retire, (for he perceived very plainly, that ſhe had, as the phraſe is, taken a ſip too much that evening), when with a rage little ſhort of madneſs, ſhe cried out,--- 'And do you tamely ſee me inſulted in ſuch a manner, now that you are a gentleman, and upon a footing with him?'

'It is lucky for us all, perhaps,' anſwered Booth, 'that he is not my equal.'

Digitized by Google

'You lie, sirrah,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'he is every 'way your equal; he is as good a gentleman as your-'self, and as much an officer.——No, I retract what 'I say, he hath not the spirit of a gentleman, nor of 'a man neitheir, or he would not bear to see his wife 'insulted.'

'Let me beg of you, my dear,' cries the Serjeant, 'to go with me and compose yourself.'

'Go with thee, thou wretch!' cries she, looking with the utmost disdain upon him, 'no, nor ever 'speak to thee more.'——At which words she burst out of the room; and the Serjeant, without saying a word, followed her.

A very tender and pathetic scene now passed between Booth and his wife, in which, when she was a little composed, she related to him the whole story. For besides that it was not possible for her otherwise to account for the quarrel which he had seen, Booth was now possessed of the letter that lay on the floor.

Amelia having emptied her mind to her husband, and obtained his faithful promise that he would not resent the affair to my Lord, was pretty well composed, and began to relent a little towards Mrs Atkinson; but Booth was so highly incensed with her, that he declared he would leave her house the next morning; which they both accordingly did, and immediately accommodated themselves with convenient apartments within a few doors of their friend the Doctor.

CHAP. IX.

Containing some things worthy observation.

NOTWITHSTANDING the exchange of his lodgings, Booth did not forget to send an excuse to Mr Trent, of whose conversation he had taken a full surfeit the preceding evening.

That day, in his walks, Booth met with an old brother officer, who had served with him at Gibraltar, and was on half-pay as well as himself. He had not, indeed, had the fortune of being broke with his regiment, as was Booth; but had gone out, as they call it,

on

Digitized by Google

on half-pay as a lieutenant; a rank to which he had riſen in five-and-thirty years.

This honeſt gentleman, after ſome diſcourſe with Booth, deſired him to lend him half a crown; which he aſſured him he would faithfully pay the next day, when he was to receive ſome money for his ſiſter. This ſiſter was the widow of an officer that had been killed in the ſea-ſervice; and ſhe and her brother lived together, on their joint ſtock, out of which they maintained likewiſe an old mother, and two of the ſiſter's children, the eldeſt of which was about nine years old.

'You muſt know,' ſaid the old lieutenant, 'I have 'been diſappointed this morning by an old ſcoundrel, 'who wanted fifteen per cent. for advancing my ſi'ſter's penſion; but I have now got an honeſt fellow, 'who hath promiſed it me to-morrow, at ten per'cent.'

'And enough too, of all conſcience,' cries Booth.

'Why, indeed, I think ſo too,' anſwered the other, 'conſidering it is ſure to be paid one time or other. 'To ſay the truth, it is a little hard the government 'doth not pay thoſe penſions better; for my ſiſter's 'hath been due almoſt theſe two years; that is my 'way of thinking.'

Booth anſwered, he was aſhamed to refuſe him ſuch a ſum; but, 'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid he, 'I have not a 'ſingle halfpenny in my pocket; for I am in a worſe 'condition, if poſſible, than yourſelf; for I have loſt 'all my money, and what is worſe, I owe Mr Trent, 'whom you remember at Gibraltar, fifty pounds.'

'Remember him! yes, d—n him, I remember him 'very well,' cries the old gentleman, 'though he 'will nor remember me. He is grown ſo great now, 'that he will not ſpeak to his old acquaintance: and 'yet I ſhould be aſhamed of myſelf to be great in ſuch 'a manner.'

'What manner do you mean?' cries Booth, a little eagerly.

'Why, pimping,' anſwered the other: 'He is 'pimp in ordinary to my Lord ——, who keeps his 'family: or how the devil he lives elſe I don't know; 'for his place is not worth three hundred pounds a

year, and he and his wife ſpend a thouſand at leaſt. But ſhe keeps an aſſembly, which I believe, if you was to call a baudy-houſe, you would not miſ-name it. But d—n me, if I had not rather be an honeſt man, and walk on foot, with holes in my ſhoes, as I do now, or go without a dinner, as I and all my family will to-day, than ride in a chariot, and feaſt by ſuch means. I am honeſt Bob Bound, and always will be; that's my way of thinking; and there's no man ſhall call me otherwiſe; for if he doth, I will knock him down for a lying raſcal; that is my way of thinking.'

'And a very good way of thinking too,' cries Booth. 'However, you ſhall not want a dinner to-day; for if you will go home with me, I will lend you a crown with all my heart.'

'Lookee,' ſaid the old man, 'if it be any ways inconvenient to you, I will not have it; for I will never rob another man of his dinner, to eat myſelf — that is my way of thinking.'

'Pooh,' ſaid Booth, 'never mention ſuch a trifle twice between you and me. Beſides, you ſay you can pay it me to-morrow; and I promiſe you that will be the ſame thing.'

They then walked together to Booth's lodgings, where Booth, from Amelia's pocket, gave his friend double the little ſum he had aſked. Upon which the old gentleman ſhook him heartily by the hand, and repeating his intention of paying him the next day, made the beſt of his way to a butcher's, whence he carried off a leg of mutton to a family that had lately kept Lent without any religious merit.

When he was gone, Amelia aſked her huſband who that old gentleman was. Booth anſwered, he was one of the ſcandals of his country: that the Duke of Marlborough had about thirty years before made him an enſign from a private man, for very particular merit; and that he had not long ſince gone out of the army with a broken heart, upon having ſeveral boys put over his head. He then gave her an account of his family, which he had heard from the old gentleman

Digitized by Google

man in their way to his house, and with which we have already in a concise manner acquainted the reader.

'Good Heavens!' cries Amelia, 'what are our 'great men made of? are they in reality a distinct 'species from the rest of mankind? are they born 'without hearts?'

'One would indeed sometimes,' cries Booth, 'be 'inclined to think so. In truth, they have no perfect 'idea of those common distresses of mankind which 'are far removed from their own sphere. Compassion, 'if thoroughly examined, will, I believe, appear to be 'the fellow-feeling only of men of the same rank and 'degree of life for one another, on account of the 'evils to which they themselves are liable. Our sen-'sations are, I am afraid, very cold towards those 'who are at a great distance from us, and whose ca-'lamities can consequently never reach us.'

'I remember,' cries Amelia, 'a sentiment of Dr 'Harrison's, which he told me was in some Latin book; "I am a man myself, and my heart is interested in "whatever can befal the rest of mankind." That is 'the sentiment of a good man, and whoever thinks 'otherwise is a bad one.'

'I have often told you, my dear Emily,' cries Booth, 'that all men, as well the best as the worst, act alike 'from the principles of self-love. Where benevolence 'therefore is the uppermost passion, self-love directs 'you to gratify it by doing good, and by relieving the 'distresses of others; for they are then in reality your 'own. But where ambition, avarice, pride, or any 'other passion, governs the man, and keeps his bene-'volence down, the miseries of all other men affect 'him no more than they would a stock or a stone. 'And thus the man and his statue have often the 'same degree of feeling or compassion.'

'I have often wished, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'to 'hear you converse with Dr Harrison on this subject; 'for I am sure he would convince you, tho' I can't, 'that there are really such things as religion and vir-'tue.'

This was not the first hint of this kind which Amelia had given; for she sometimes apprehended from his discourse

Digitized by Google

discourse that he was little better than an atheist: a consideration which did not diminish her affection for him, but gave her great uneasiness. On all such occasions, Booth immediately turned the discourse to some other subject; for though he had in other points a great opinion of his wife's capacity, yet as a divine or a philosopher, he did not hold her in a very respectable light, nor did he lay any great stress on her sentiments in such matters. He now therefore gave a speedy turn to the conversation, and began to talk of affairs below the dignity of this history.

AMELIA.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK XI.

CHAP. I.

Containing a very polite ſcene.

WE will now look back to ſome perſonages, who, though not the principal characters in this hiſtory, have yet made too conſiderable a figure in it to be abruptly dropped; and theſe are Colonel James and his lady.

This fond couple never met till dinner the day after the maſquerade, when they happened to be alone together in an antichamber before the arrival of the reſt of the company.

The converſation began with the Colonel's ſaying, 'I hope, Madam, you got no cold laſt night at the 'maſquerade?' To which the lady anſwered by much the ſame kind of queſtion.

They then ſat together near five minutes without opening their mouths to each other. At laſt Mrs James ſaid, 'Pray, Sir, who was that maſque with 'you in the dreſs of a ſhepherdeſs? How could you 'expoſe yourſelf by walking with ſuch a trollop in 'public; for certainly no woman of any figure would 'appear there in ſuch a dreſs. You know, Mr James, 'I never interfere in your affairs; but I would, me-'thinks, for my own ſake, if I was you, preſerve a 'little decency in the face of the world.'

'Upon my word,' ſaid James, 'I do not know 'whom you mean. A woman in ſuch a dreſs might 'ſpeak to me for ought I know—A thouſand people

'ſpeak

Digitized by Google

'speak to me at a masquerade. But I promise you, I 'spoke to no woman acquaintance there that I know 'of——Indeed I now recollect there was a woman in 'a dress of a shepherdess; and there was another auk-'ward thing in a blue domino that plagued me a 'little; but I soon got rid of them.'

'And I suppose you do not know the lady in the 'blue domino neither?'

'Not I, I assure you,' said James. 'But pray, why 'do you ask me these questions? It looks so like jea-'lousy.'

'Jealousy!' cries she, 'I jealous! No, Mr James, 'I shall never be jealous, I promise you, especially of 'the lady in the blue domino; for to my knowledge, 'she despises you of all human race.'

'I am heartily glad of it,' said James, 'for I never 'saw such a tall aukward monster in my life.'

'That is a very cruel way of telling me you knew 'me.'

'You, Madam!' said James,——'you was in a 'black domino.'

'It is not so unusual a thing, I believe, you your-'self know, to change dresses,—I own I did it to dis-'cover some of your tricks. I did not think you 'could have distinguished the tall aukward monster 'so well.'

'Upon my soul,' said James, 'if it was you, I did 'not even suspect it; so you ought not to be offended 'at what I have said ignorantly.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries she, 'you cannot offend me 'by any thing you can say to my face—no, by my 'soul, I despise you too much. But I wish, Mr 'James, you would not make me the subject of your 'conversation amongst your wenches. I desire I may 'not be afraid of meeting them for fear of their in-'sults: that I may not be told by a dirty trollop, 'you make me the subject of your wit amongst 'them, of which, it seems, I am the favourite to-'pic. Though you have married a tall aukward 'monster, Mr James, I think she hath a right to 'be treated as your wife, with respect at least——'Indeed I shall never require any more: indeed

'Mr

Digitized by Google

'Mr James, I never ſhall.'—I think a wife hath a 'title to that.'

'Who told you this, Madam? ſaid James.

'Your ſlut,' ſaid ſhe, 'your wench, your ſhep-'herdeſs.'

'By all that's ſacred,' cries James, 'I do not 'know who the ſhepherdeſs was.'

'By all that's ſacred then,' ſays ſhe,—'ſhe told me 'ſo—and I am convinced ſhe told me truth.—But I 'do not wonder at your denying it; for that is equally 'conſiſtent with honour as to behave in ſuch a man-'ner to a wife who is a gentlewoman.—I hope you 'will allow me that, Sir.——Becauſe I had not quite 'ſo great a fortune, I hope you do not think me be-'neath you, or that you did me any honour in mar-'rying me. I am come of as good a family as your-'ſelf, Mr James; and if my brother knew how you 'treated me, he would not bear it.'

'Do you threaten me with your brother, Madam?' ſaid James.

'I will not be ill treated, Sir,' anſwered ſhe.

'Nor I neither, Madam,' cries he; 'and therefore 'I deſire you will prepare to go into the country to-'morrow morning.'

'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall not.'

'By Heavens, Madam, but you ſhall,' anſwered he; 'I will have my coach at the door to-morrow morn-'ing by ſeven; and you ſhall either go into it or be 'carried.'

'I hope, Sir, you are not in earneſt,' ſaid ſhe.

'Indeed, Madam,' anſwered he, 'but I am in 'earneſt, and reſolved; and into the country you go 'to-morrow.'

'But why into the country,' ſaid ſhe, 'Mr James? 'Why will you be ſo barbarous to deny me the plea-'ſures of the town?'

'Becauſe you interfere with my pleaſures,' cried James; 'which I have told you long ago I would 'not ſubmit to. It is enough for fond couples to have 'theſe ſcenes together. I thought we had been upon 'a better footing, and had cared too little for each 'other to become mutual plagues. I thought you had

'been

Digitized by Google

'been satisfied with the full liberty of doing what 'you please.'

'So I am; I defy you to say I have ever given 'you any uneasiness.'

'How,' cries he, 'have you not just now upbraided 'me with what you heard at the masquerade?'

'I own,' said she, 'to be insulted by such a creature 'to my face stung me to the soul. I must have had no 'spirit to bear the insults of such an animal. Nay, 'she spoke of you with equal contempt. Whoever she 'is, I promise you, Mr Booth is her favourite. But 'indeed she is unworthy any one's regard: for she 'behaved like an errant dragoon.'

'Hang her,' cries the Colonel, 'I know nothing 'of her.'

'Well, but, Mr James——I am sure you will not 'send me into the country. Indeed, I will not go 'into the country.'

'If you was a reasonable woman,' cries James, 'perhaps I should not desire it.——And on one 'consideration—'

'Come, name your consideration,' said she.

'Let me first experience your discernment,' said he '———Come, Molly, let me try your judgment. 'Can you guess at any woman of your acquaintance 'that I like?'

'Sure,' said she, 'it cannot be Mrs Booth!'

'And why not Mrs Booth?' answered he, 'Is she 'not the finest woman in the world?'

'Very far from it,' replied she, 'in my opinion.'

'Pray what faults,' said he, 'can you find in her?'

'In the first place,' cries Mrs James, 'her eyes 'are too large; and she hath a look with them that 'I don't know how to describe; but I know I don't 'like it. Then her eye-brows are too large; there-'fore, indeed, she doth all in her power to remedy 'this with her pincers: for if it was not for those, her 'eye-brows would be preposterous.—Then her nose, 'as well proportioned as it is, has a visible scar on one 'side———Her neck likewise is too protuberant for 'the genteel size, especially as she laces herself: for 'no woman, in my opinion, can be genteel, who is not

Digitized by Google

'entirely flat before. And laſtly, ſhe is both too 'ſhort and too tall.——Well, you may laugh, Mr 'James, I know what I mean, though I cannot well 'expreſs it.——I mean, that ſhe is too tall for a 'pretty woman, and too ſhort for a fine woman—'There is ſuch a thing as a kind of inſipid medium—'a kind of ſomething that is neither one thing or an-'other. I know not how to expreſs it more clearly; 'but when I ſay ſuch a one is a pretty woman, a pret-'ty thing, a pretty creature, you know very well I 'mean a little woman; and when I ſay ſuch a one is a 'very fine woman, a very fine perſon of a woman, to 'be ſure I muſt mean a tall woman. Now a woman 'that is between both, is certainly neither the one 'nor the other.'

'Well, I own,' ſaid he, 'you have explained your-'ſelf with great dexterity; but with all theſe imper-'fections, I cannot help liking her.'

'That you need not tell me, Mr James,' anſwered the lady; 'for that I knew before you deſired me 'to invite her to your houſe. And nevertheleſs, did 'not I, like an obedient wife, comply with your de-'ſires? did I make any objection to the party you 'propoſed for the maſquerade, though I knew very 'well your motive? what can the beſt of wives do 'more? to procure you ſucceſs is not in my power; 'and if I may give you my opinion, I believe you 'never will ſucceed with her.'

'Is her virtue ſo very impregnable?' ſaid he, with a ſneer.

'Her virtue,' anſwered Mrs James, 'hath the beſt 'guard in the world, which is a moſt violent love for 'her huſband.'

'All pretence and affectation,' cries the Colonel. 'It is impoſſible ſhe ſhould have ſo little taſte, or in-'deed, ſo little delicacy, as to like ſuch a fellow.'

'Nay, I do not much like him myſelf,' ſaid ſhe. —'He is not indeed at all ſuch a ſort of man as I 'ſhould like; but I thought he had been generally 'allowed to be handſome.'

'He handſome!' cries James. 'What, with a noſe like the proboſcis of an elephant, with the ſhoulders

Digitized by Google

'of a porter, and the legs of a chairman! The fellow has not in the leaſt the look of a gentleman; 'and one would rather think he had followed the 'plough than the camp all his life.'

'Nay, now I proteſt,' ſaid ſhe, 'I think you do him 'injuſtice. He is genteel enough, in my opinion. 'It is true, indeed, he is not quite of the moſt delicate make; but whatever he is, I am convinced ſhe 'thinks him the fineſt man in the world.'

'I cannot believe it,' anſwered he peeviſhly——— 'but will you invite her to dinner here to-morrow?'

'With all my heart, and as often as you pleaſe,' anſwered ſhe — 'But I have ſome favours to aſk 'of you.—— Firſt, I muſt hear no more of going out 'of town till I pleaſe.

'Very well,' cried he.

'In the next place,' ſaid ſhe, 'I muſt have two hundred guineas within theſe two or three days.'

'Well, I agree to that too,' anſwered he. 'And 'when I do go out of town, too, I go to Tunbridge— 'I inſiſt upon that; and from Tunbridge I go to Bath '——poſitively to Bath. And I promiſe you faithfully I will do all in my power to carry Mrs Booth 'with me.'

'On that condition,' anſwered he, 'I promiſe you 'you ſhall go where ever you pleaſe.—And to ſhew 'you, I will even prevent your wiſhes by my generoſity, as ſoon as I receive the five thouſand pounds, 'which I am going to take up on one of my eſtates, 'you ſhall have two hundred more.'

She thanked him with a low curteſie; and he was in ſuch good humour, that he offered to kiſs her. To this kiſs ſhe coldly turned her cheek—and then flirting her fan, ſaid———'Mr James, there is one thing 'I forgot to mention to you—I think you intended to 'get a commiſſion in ſome regiment abroad for this 'young man.——Now, if you would take my advice, 'I know this will not oblige his wife; and beſides, I 'am poſitive ſhe reſolves to go with him.——But if 'you can provide for him in ſome regiment at home, 'I know ſhe will dearly love you for it; and when he 'is ordered to quarters, ſhe will be left behind—and

'Yorkſhire

Digitized by Google

'Yorkshire or Scotland, I think, is as good a distance 'as either of the Indies.'

'Well, I will do what I can,' answered James; 'but 'I cannot ask any thing yet; for I got two places of 'a hundred a year each for two of my footmen, within 'this fortnight.'

At this instant a violent knock at the door signified the arrival of their company; upon which, both husband and wife put on their best looks to receive their guests; and, from their behaviour to each other during the rest of the day, a stranger might have concluded he had been in company with the fondest couple in the universe.

CHAP. II.

Matters political.

BEFORE we return to Booth, we will relate a scene in which Dr Harrison was concerned.

This good man, whilst in the country, happened to be in the neighbourhood of a nobleman of his acquaintance, and whom he knew to have very considerable interest with the ministers at that time.

The Doctor, who was very well known to this nobleman, took this opportunity to pay him a visit in order to recommend poor Booth to his favour. Nor did he much doubt of his success, the favour he was to ask being a very small one, and to which he thought the service of Booth gave him so just a title.

The Doctor's name soon gained him an admission to the presence of this great man, who, indeed, received him with much courtesy and politeness; not so much perhaps from any particular regard to the sacred function, nor from any respect to the Doctor's personal merit, as from some considerations which the reader will perhaps guess anon. After many ceremonials and some previous discourse on different subjects, the Doctor opened his business, and told the great man, that he was come to him to solicit a favour for a young gentleman who had been an officer in the army, and was now on half pay. 'All the favour I ask, my

Digitized by Google

'Lord,' said he, 'is, that this gentleman may be again 'admitted *ad eundem*. I am convinced your Lordship 'will do me the justice to think I would not ask for a 'worthless person; but, indeed, the young man I 'mean hath very extraordinary merit. He was at 'the siege of Gibraltar, in which he behaved with 'distinguished bravery; and was dangerously wound-'ed at two several times in the service of his country. 'I will add, that he is at present in great necessity, 'and hath a wife and several children, for whom he 'hath no other means of providing; and if it will re-'commend him further to your Lordship's favour, his 'wife, I believe, is one of the best and worthiest of all 'her sex.'

'As to that, my dear Doctor,' cries the nobleman, 'I shall make no doubt. Indeed, any service I shall 'do the gentleman will be upon your account: as to 'necessity, it is the plea of so many, that it is impos-'sible to serve them all.——And with regard to the 'personal merit of these inferior officers, I believe, I 'need not tell you that it is very little regarded. But 'if you recommend him, let the person be what he 'will, I am convinced it will be done: for I know it 'is in your power at present to ask for a greater mat-'ter than this.'

'I depend entirely upon your lordship,' answered the Doctor.

'Indeed, my worthy friend,' replied the lord, 'I 'will not take a merit to myself, which will so little 'belong to me. You are to depend on yourself. It 'falls out very luckily at this time too, when you have 'it in your power so greatly to oblige us.'

'What, my Lord, is in my power?' cries the Doctor.

'You certainly know,' answered his lordship, 'how 'hard Colonel Tremptington is run at your town, in 'the election of a mayor; they tell me, it will be a 'very near thing, unless you join us. But we know 'it is in your power to do the business, and turn the 'scale. I heard your name mentioned the other day 'on that account; and I know you may have any 'thing in reason, if you will give us your interest.'

'Sure,

Digitized by Google

'Sure, my Lord,' cries the Doctor, 'you are not 'in earneſt in aſking my intereſt for the Colonel.'

'Indeed, I am,' anſwered the peer. 'Why ſhould 'you doubt it?'

'For many reaſons,' anſwered the Doctor. 'Firſt, 'I am an old friend and acquaintance of Mr Fair-'field, as your Lordſhip, I believe, very well knows. 'The little intereſt, therefore, that I have, you may 'be aſſured, will go in his favour. Indeed, I do not 'concern myſelf deeply in theſe affairs; for I do not 'think it becomes my cloth ſo to do. But as far as 'I think it decent to intereſt myſelf, it will certainly 'be on the ſide of Mr Fairfield. Indeed, I ſhould do 'ſo, if I was acquainted with both the gentlemen, 'only by reputation: the one being a neighbouring 'gentleman, of a very large eſtate, a very ſober and 'ſenſible man, of known probity and attachment to 'the true intereſt of his country. The other is a mere 'ſtranger, a boy, a ſoldier of fortune, and, as far as I 'can diſcern from the little converſation I have had 'with him, of a very ſhallow capacity, and no educa-'tion.'

'No education! my dear friend,' cries the noble-man, 'why, he hath been educated in half the courts 'of Europe.'

'Perhaps ſo, my Lord,' anſwered the Doctor; 'but 'I ſhall always be ſo great a pedant as to call a man 'of no learning, a man of no education.———And 'from my own knowledge, I can aver, that I am 'perſuaded there is ſcarce a foot ſoldier in the army 'who is more illiterate than the Colonel.'

'Why, as to Latin and Greek, you know,' replied the lord, 'they are not much required in the army.'

'It may be ſo,' ſaid the Doctor. 'Then let ſuch 'perſons keep to their own profeſſion. It is a very low 'civil capacity indeed for which an illiterate man can 'be qualified. And to ſpeak a plain truth, if your 'Lordſhip is a friend to the Colonel, you would do 'well to adviſe him to decline an attempt, in which 'I am certain he hath no probability of ſucceſs.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid the Lord, 'if you are reſolved againſt 'us, I muſt deal as freely with you, and tell you

Digitized by Google

'plainly I cannot ſerve you in your affair. Nay, it 'will be the beſt thing I can do, to hold my tongue: 'for if I ſhould mention his name with your recom-'mendation, after what you have ſaid, he would per-'haps never get provided for as long as he lives.'

'Is his own merit then, my Lord, no recommen-'dation?' cries the Doctor.

'My dear, dear Sir,' cries the other—'what is the 'merit of a ſubaltern officer?'

'Surely, my Lord,' cries the Doctor, 'it is the merit 'which ſhould recommend him to the poſt of a ſub-'altern officer; and it is a merit which will hereafter 'qualify him to ſerve his country in a higher capa-'city. And I do aſſure you of this young man, that 'he hath not only a good heart, but a good head too; 'and I have been told by thoſe who are judges, that 'he is for his age an excellent officer.'

'Very probably!' cries my Lord—'And there are 'abundance with the ſame merit, and the ſame quali-'fications, who want a morſel of bread for themſelves 'and their families.'

'It is an infamous ſcandal on the nation,' cries the Doctor; 'and I am heartily ſorry it can be ſaid even 'with a colour of truth.'

'How can it be otherwiſe?' ſays the peer. 'Do you 'think it is poſſible to provide for all men of merit?'

'Yes, ſurely do I,' ſaid the Doctor; 'and very 'eaſily too.'

'How, pray?'—cries the Lord—'Upon my word 'I ſhall be glad to know'

'Only by not providing for thoſe who have none. '——The men of merit in any capacity are not, I 'am afraid, ſo extremely numerous, that we need 'ſtarve any of them, unleſs we wickedly ſuffer a ſet 'of worthleſs fellows to eat their bread.'

'This is all mere Utopia,' cries his Lordſhip; 'the 'chimerical ſyſtem of Plato's commonwealth, with 'which we amuſed ourſelves at the univerſity; poli-'tics which are inconſiſtent with the ſtate of human 'affairs.'

'Sure, my Lord,' cries the Doctor, 'we have read of 'ſtates where ſuch doctrines have been put in practice.

'What

Digitized by Google

'What is your lordſhip's opinion of Rome in the earlier ages of the commonwealth, of Sparta, and even of Athens itſelf in ſome periods of its hiſtory?'

'Indeed, Doctor,' cries the Lord, 'all theſe notions are obſolete and long ſince exploded. To apply maxims of government drawn from the Greek and Roman hiſtories, to this nation, is abſurd and impoſſible. But if you will have Roman examples, fetch them from thoſe times of the republic that were moſt like our own. Do you not know, Doctor, that this is as corrupt a nation as ever exiſted under the ſun? And would you think of governing ſuch a people by the ſtrict principles of honeſty and morality?'

'If it be ſo corrupt,' ſaid the Doctor, 'I think it is high time to amend it. Or elſe it is eaſy to foreſee that Roman and Britiſh liberty will have the ſame fate; for corruption in the body politic as naturally tends to diſſolution as in the natural body.'

'I thank you for your ſimile,' cries my Lord: 'for in the natural body, I believe, you will allow there is the ſeaſon of youth, the ſeaſon of manhood, and the ſeaſon of old age; and that, when the laſt of theſe arrives, it will be an impoſſible attempt by all the means of art to reſtore the body again to its youth, or to the vigour of its middle age. The ſame periods happen to every great kingdom. In its youth, it riſes by arts and arms to power and proſperity. This it enjoys and flouriſhes with a while; and then it may be ſaid to be in the vigour of its age, enriched at home with all the emoluments and bleſſings of peace, and formidable abroad with all the terrors of war. At length, this very proſperity introduces corruption; and then comes on its old age. Virtue and learning, art and induſtry, decay by degrees. The people ſink into ſloth and luxury, and proſtitution. It is enervated at home, becomes contemptible abroad; and ſuch indeed is its miſery and wretchedneſs, that it reſembles a man in the laſt decrepit ſtage of life, who looks with unconcern at his approaching diſſolution.'

'This is a melancholy picture indeed,' cries the Doctor; 'and if the latter part of it can be applied to

'our

Digitized by Google

'our case, I see nothing but religion, which would 'have prevented this decrepit state of the constitu- 'tion, should prevent a man of spirit from hanging 'himself out of the way of so wretched a contem- 'plation.'

'Why so?' said the peer. 'Why hang myself, 'Doctor? would it not be wiser, think you, to make 'the best of your time, and the most you can in such 'a nation?'

'And is religion then to be really laid out of the 'question?' cries the Doctor.

'If I am to speak my own opinion, Sir,' answered the Peer, 'you know I shall answer in the negative.— 'But you are too well acquainted with the world to 'be told, that the conduct of politicians is not form- 'ed upon the principles of religion.'

'I am very sorry for it,' cries the Doctor; 'but I 'will talk to them then of honour and honesty: this is 'a language which I hope they will at least pretend 'to understand. Now to deny a man the preferment 'which he merits, and to give it to another man who 'doth not merit it, is a manifest act of injustice; and 'is consequently inconsistent with both honour and 'honesty. Nor is it only an act of injustice to the man 'himself, but to the public, for whose good princi- 'pally all public offices are, or ought to be, institu- 'ted. Now this good can never be completed, nor 'obtained, but by employing all persons according 'to their capacities. Where-ever true merit is liable 'to be superseded by favour and partiality, and men 'are intrusted with offices, without any regard to 'capacity or integrity, the affairs of that state will 'always be in a deplorable situation. Such, as Livy 'tells us, was the state of Capua, a little before its 'final destruction; and the consequences your Lord- 'ship well knows. But, my Lord, there is another 'mischief which attends this kind of injustice; and 'that is, it hath a manifest tendency to destroy all 'virtue and all ability among the people, by taking 'away all that encouragement and incentive, which 'should promote emulation, and raise men to aim 'at excelling in any art, science, or profession. Nor

'can

Digitized by Google

'can any thing, my Lord, contribute more to render a nation contemptible among its neighbours; 'for what opinion can other countries have of the 'councils, or what terror can they conceive of the 'arms, of such a people? and it was chiefly owing to 'the avoiding of this error, that Oliver Cromwell 'carried the reputation of England higher than it 'ever was at any other time. I will add only one 'argument more, and that is founded on the most 'narrow and selfish system of politics; and this is, 'that such a conduct is sure to create universal dis-'content and grumbling at home: for nothing can 'bring men to rest satisfied, when they see others pre-'ferred to them, but an opinion that they deserve 'that elevation; for, as one of the greatest men this 'country ever produced observes,

"One worthless man that gains what he pretends,
"Disgusts a thousand unpretending friends.'

'With what heart-burnings then must any nation see 'themselves obliged to contribute to the support of 'a set of men, of whose incapacity to serve them they 'are well apprised, and who do their country a double 'diskindness; by being themselves employed in posts 'to which they are unequal, and by keeping others 'out of those employments, for which they are qua-'lified!'

'And you really think, Doctor,' cries the nobleman, 'that any minister could support himself in this 'country upon such principles as you recommend? 'Do you think he would be able to baffle an opposi-'tion, unless he should oblige his friends by confer-'ring places often contrary to his own inclinations, 'and his own opinion?'

'Yes, really do I,' cries the Doctor. 'Indeed, if a 'minister is really to make good his confession in the 'liturgy, 'by leaving undone all those things which "he ought to have done, and by doing all those things "which he ought not to have done:' such a minister, 'I grant, will be obliged to baffle opposition, as you 'are

Digitized by Google

'are pleaſed to term it, by theſe arts; for, as Shake-'ſpeare ſomewhere ſays,

"Things ill begun ſtrengthen themſelves by ill.'

'But if, on the contrary, he will pleaſe to conſider 'the true intereſt of his country, and that only in 'great and national points; if he will engage his 'country in neither alliances or quarrels, but where it 'is really intereſted; if he will raiſe no money but 'what is wanted; nor employ any civil or military 'officers but what are uſeful; and place in theſe em-'ployments men of the higheſt integrity, and of the 'greateſt abilities; if he will employ ſome few of his 'hours to advance our trade, and ſome few more to 'regulate our domeſtic government: if he would do 'this, my Lord, I will anſwer for it, he ſhall either 'have no oppoſition to baffle, or he ſhall baffle it by 'a fair appeal to his conduct. Such a miniſter may, 'in the language of the law, put himſelf on his coun-'try when he pleaſes, and he ſhall come off with ho-'nour and applauſe.'

'And do you really believe, Doctor,' cries the Peer, 'there ever was ſuch a miniſter, or ever will be?

'Why not, my Lord?' anſwered the Doctor. 'It 'requires no very extraordinary parts, nor any extra-'ordinary degree of virtue. He need practiſe no great 'inſtances of ſelf-denial He ſhall have power, and 'honour, and riches, and, perhaps, all in a much 'greater degree than he can ever acquire by purſuing 'a contrary ſyſtem. He ſhall have more of each, 'and much more of ſafety.'

'Pray, Doctor,' ſaid my Lord, 'let me aſk you one 'ſimple queſtion. Do you really believe any man 'upon earth was ever a rogue out of choice?'

'Really, my Lord,' ſays the Doctor, 'I am aſhamed 'to anſwer in the affirmative; and yet, I am afraid, 'experiance would almoſt juſtify me, if I ſhould. 'Perhaps the opinion of the world may ſometimes 'miſlead men to think thoſe meaſures neceſſary, which 'in reality are not ſo. Or the truth may be, that a 'man of good inclinations finds his office filled with

'ſuch

Digitized by Google

'such corruption by the iniquity of his predeceſſors, 'that he may deſpair of being capable of purging it; 'and ſo ſits down contented, as Augeas did with the 'filth of his ſtables, not becauſe he thought them the 'better, or that ſuch filth was really neceſſary to a 'ſtable; but that he deſpaired of ſufficient force to 'cleanſe them.'

'I will aſk you one queſtion more, and I have done,' ſaid the nobleman. 'Do you imagine that, if any 'miniſter was really as good as you would have him, 'the people in general would believe that he was ſo?'

'Truly, my Lord,' ſaid the Doctor, 'I think they 'may be juſtified in not believing too haſtily. But I 'beg leave to anſwer your Lordſhip's queſtion by an- 'other. Doth your Lordſhip believe that the people 'of Greenland, when they ſee the light of the ſun, 'and feel his warmth, after ſo long a ſeaſon of cold 'and darkneſs, will really be perſuaded that he ſhines 'upon them?'

My Lord ſmiled at the conceit; and then the Doctor took an opportunity to renew his ſuit, to which his Lordſhip anſwered, he would promiſe nothing, and could give him no hopes of ſucceſs: 'But you may 'be aſſured,' ſaid he, with a leering countenance, 'I 'ſhall do him all the ſervice in my power.' A language which the Doctor well underſtood, and ſoon after took a civil, but not a very ceremonious leave.

CHAP. III.

The hiſtory of Mr Trent.

WE will now return to Mr Booth and his wife. The former had ſpent his time very uneaſily, ever ſince he had diſcovered what ſort of man he was indebted to: but leſt he ſhould forget it, Mr Trent thought now proper to remind him, in the following letter, which he received the next morning after he had put off the appointment.

SIR,

Digitized by Google

"SIR,

"I AM sorry the necessity of my affairs obliges me "to mention that small sum which I had the honour "to lend you the other night at play; and which I "shall be much obliged to you, if you will let me "have some time either to-day, or to-morrow.

"I am, Sir,
"Your most obedient,
"most humble servant,
"GEORGE TRENT."

This letter a little surprised Booth, after the genteel, and, indeed, as it appeared, generous behaviour of Trent. But lest it should have the same effect upon the reader, we will now proceed to account for this, as well as for some other phænomena that have appeared in this history, and which, perhaps, we shall be forgiven for not having opened more largely before.

Mr Trent then was a gentleman, possibly, of a good family; for it was not certain whence he sprung on the father's side. His mother, who was the only parent he ever knew or heard of, was a single gentlewoman, and for some time carried on the trade of a milliner in Covent-Garden. She sent her son, at the age of eight years old, to a charity-school, where he remained till he was of the age of fourteen, without making any great proficiency in learning. Indeed, it is not very probable he should; for the master, who, in preference to a very learned and proper man, was chosen by a party into this school, the salary of which was upwards of a hundred pounds a-year, had himself never travelled through the Latin Grammar, and was in truth a most consummate blockhead.

At the age of fifteen Mr Trent was put clerk to an attorney, where he remained a very short time before he took leave of his master; rather, indeed, departed without taking leave; and having broke open his mother's escritore, and carried off with him

Digitized by Google

all the valuable effects he there found, to the amount of about fifty pound, he marched off to sea, and went on board a merchantman, whence he was afterwards pressed into a man of war.

In this service he continued above three years; during which time, he behaved so ill in his moral character, that he twice underwent a very severe discipline for thefts in which he was detected; but at the same time, he behaved so well as a sailor in an engagement with some pirates, that he wiped off all former scores, and greatly recommended himself to his captain.

At his return home, being then about twenty years of age, he found that the attorney had in his absence married his mother, had buried her, and secured all her effects, to the amount, as he was informed, of about fifteen hundred pounds. Trent applied to his step-father, but to no purpose; the attorney utterly disowned him, nor would he suffer him to come a second time within his doors.

It happened that the attorney had, by a former wife, an only daughter, a great favourite, who was about the same age with Trent himself; and had, during his residence at her father's house, taken a very great liking to this young fellow, who was extremely handsome, and perfectly well made. This her liking was not, during his absence, so far extinguished, but that it immediately revived on his return. Of this, she took care to give Mr Trent proper intimation; for she was not one of those backward and delicate ladies, who can die rather than make the first overture. Trent was overjoyed at this, and with reason; for she was a very lovely girl in her person, the only child of a rich father; and the prospect of so complete a revenge on the attorney charmed him above all the rest. To be as short in the matter as the parties, a marriage was soon consummated between them.

The attorney at first raged and was implacable; but at last, fondness for his daughter so far overcame resentment, that he advanced a sum of money to buy

Digitized by Google

ſon-in-law (for now he acknowledged him as ſuch) an enſign's commiſſion in a marching regiment then ordered to Gibraltar; at which place, the attorney heartily hoped that Trent might be knocked on the head; for in that caſe he thought he might marry his daughter more agreeably to his own ambition, and to her advantage.

The regiment into which Trent purchaſed, was the ſame with that in which Booth likewiſe ſerved; the one being an enſign, and the other a lieutenant in the two additional companies.

Trent had no blemiſh in his military capacity. Though he had had but an indifferent education, he was naturally ſenſible and genteel; and Nature, as we have ſaid, had given him a very agreeable perſon. He was likewiſe a very bold fellow, and as he really behaved himſelf every way well enough while he was at Gibraltar, there was ſome degree of intimacy between him and Booth.

When the ſiege was over, and the additional companies were again reduced, Trent returned to his wife, who received him with great joy and affection. Soon after this an accident happened, which proved the utter ruin of his father-in-law, and ended in breaking his heart. This was nothing but making a miſtake, pretty common at this day, of writing another man's name to a deed inſtead of his own. In truth, this matter was no leſs than what the law calls forgery, and was juſt then made capital by an act of parliament. From this offence, indeed, the attorney was acquitted by not admitting the proof of the party who was to avoid his own deed, by his evidence; and therefore no witneſs, according to thoſe excellent rules, called the law of evidence; a law very excellently calculated for the preſervation of the lives of his Majeſty's roguiſh ſubjects, and moſt notably uſed for that purpoſe.

But though by common law the attorney was honourably acquitted; yet, as common ſenſe manifeſted to every one that he was guilty, he unhappily loſt his reputation, and of conſequence his buſineſs; the chagrin of which latter ſoon put an end to his life.

This

Digitized by Google

This profecution had been attended with a very great expence; for beſides the ordinary coſts of avoiding the gallows by the help of the law, there was a very high article of no leſs than a thouſand pounds paid down to remove out of the way a witneſs, againſt whom there was no legal exception. The poor gentleman had beſides ſuffered ſome loſſes in buſineſs; ſo that, to the ſurpriſe of all his acquaintance, when his debts were paid, there remained no more than a ſmall eſtate of fourſcore pounds a-year, which he ſettled upon his daughter, far out of the reach of her huſband, and about two hundred pounds in money.

The old gentleman had not long been in his grave, before Trent ſet himſelf to conſider ſeriouſly of the ſtate of his affairs. He had lately begun to look on his wife with a much leſs degree of liking and deſire than formerly; for he was one of thoſe who think too much of one thing is good for nothing. Indeed, he had indulged theſe ſpeculations ſo far, that I believe his wife, though one of the prettieſt women in town, was the laſt ſubject that he would have choſe for any amorous dalliance.

Many other perſons, however, greatly differed from him in this opinion. Amongſt the reſt, was the illuſtrious peer of amorous memory. This noble peer having therefore got a view of Mrs Trent one day in the ſtreet, did, by means of an emiſſary then with him, make himſelf acquainted with her lodging, to which he immediately laid ſiege in form, ſetting himſelf down in a lodging directly oppoſite to her, from whence the battery of ogles began to play the very next morning.

This ſiege had not continued long before the governor of the garriſon became ſufficiently appriſed of all the works which were carrying on; and having well reconnoitred the enemy, and diſcovered who he was, notwithſtanding a falſe name and ſome diſguiſe of his perſon, he called a council of war within his own breaſt. In fact, to drop all allegory, he began to conſider whether his wife was not really a more valuable poſſeſſion than he had lately thought her. In ſhort, as he had been diſappointed in her fortune, he now

Digitized by Google

conceived some hopes of turning her beauty itself into a fortune.

Without communicating these views to her, he soon scraped an acquaintance with his opposite neighbour by the name which he there usurped, and counterfeited an entire ignorance of his real name and title. On this occasion Trent had his disguise likewise, for he affected the utmost simplicity; of which affectation, as he was a very artful fellow, he was extremely capable.

The peer fell plumb into this snare; and when, by the simplicity, as he imagined, of the husband, he became acquainted with the wife, he was so extravagantly charmed with her person, that he resolved, whatever was the cost or the consequence, he would possess her.

His Lordship, however, preserved some caution in his management of this affair; more, perhaps, than was necessary. As for the husband, none was requisite; for he knew all he could: and with regard to the wife herself, as she had for some time perceived the decrease of her husband's affection (for few women are, I believe, to be imposed upon in that matter), she was not displeased to find the return of all that complaisance and endearment, of those looks and languishments, from another agreeable person, which she had formerly received from Trent, and which she now found she should receive from him no longer.

My Lord, therefore, having been indulged with as much opportunity as he could wish from Trent, and having received rather more encouragement than he could well have hoped from the lady, began to prepare all matters for a storm; when luckily Mr Trent declaring he must go out of town for two days, he fixed on the first day of his departure as the time of carrying his design into execution.

And now, after some debate with himself in what manner he should approach his love, he at last determined to do it in his own person; for he conceived, and perhaps very rightly, that the lady, like Semele, was not void of ambition, and would have preferred Jupiter in all his glory to the same deity in the disguise

of

Digitized by Google

of an humble ſhepherd. He dreſſed himſelf therefore, in the richeſt embroidery of which he was maſter, and appeared before his miſtreſs arrayed in all the brightneſs of peerage A ſight whoſe charms ſhe had not the power to reſiſt, and the conſequences are only to be imagined. In ſhort, the ſame ſcene which Jupiter acted with his above-mentioned miſtreſs of old, was more than beginning, when Trent burſt from the cloſet into which he had conveyed himſelf, and unkindly interrupted the action.

His Lordſhip preſently run to his ſword; but Trent, with great calmneſs, anſwered, that as it was very well known he durſt fight, he ſhould not draw his ſword on this occaſion: 'For ſure,' ſays he, 'my Lord, 'it would be the higheſt imprudence in me to kill a 'man who is now become ſo conſiderably my debtor.' At which words, he fetched a perſon from the cloſet, who had been confined with him, telling him he had done his buſineſs, and might now, if he pleaſed, retire.

It would be tedious here to amuſe the reader with all that paſſed on the preſent occaſion; the rage and confuſion of the wife, or the perplexity in which my Lord was involved. We will omit therefore all ſuch matters, and proceed directly to buſineſs, as Trent and his Lordſhip did ſoon after. And in the concluſion, my Lord ſtipulated to pay a good round ſum, and to provide Mr Trent with a good place on the firſt opportunity.

On the ſide of Mr Trent, were ſtipulated abſolute remiſſion of all paſt, and full indulgence for the time to come.

Trent now immediately took a houſe at the polite end of the town, furniſhed it elegantly, and ſet up his equipage, rigged out both himſelf and his wife with very handſome cloaths, frequented all public places where he could get admiſſion, puſhed himſelf into acquaintance; and his wife ſoon afterwards began to keep an aſſembly, or in the faſhionable phraſe, to be at home once a week; when, by my Lord's aſſiſtance, ſhe was preſently viſited by moſt men of the firſt rank, and

Digitized by Google

by all such women of fashion as are not very nice in their company.

My Lord's amour with this lady lasted not long; for, as we have before observed, he was the most inconstant of all human race. Mrs Trent's passion was not however of that kind which leads to any very deep resentment of such fickleness. Her passion, indeed, was principally founded upon interest; so that foundation served to support another superstructure; and she was easily prevailed upon, as well as her husband, to be useful to my Lord in a capacity, which, though very often exerted in the polite world, hath not, as yet, to my great surprise, acquired any polite name, or indeed, any which is not too coarse to be admitted in this history.

After this preface, which we thought necessary to account for a character of which some of my country and collegiate readers might possibly doubt the existence, I shall proceed to what more immediately regards Mrs Booth. The reader may be pleased to remember that Mr Trent was present at the assembly to which Booth and his wife were carried by Mrs James, and where Amelia was met by the noble peer.

His Lordship, seeing there that Booth and Trent were old acquaintance, failed not, to use the language of sportsmen, to put Trent on upon the scent of Amelia. For this purpose, that gentleman visited Booth the very next day, and had pursued him close ever since. By his means, therefore, my Lord learned that Amelia was to be at the masquerade, to which place she was dogged by Trent in a sailor's jacket, who meeting my Lord according to agreement, at the entrance of the opera-house, like the four-legged gentlemen of the same vocation, made a dead point, as it is called, at the game.

My Lord was so satisfied and delighted with his conversation at the masquerade with the supposed Amelia, and the encouragement which in reality she had given him, that when he saw Trent the next morning, he embraced him with great fondness, gave him a bank-note of a hundred pound, and promised him both the Indies

Digitized by Google

Indies on his ſucceſs, of which he began now to have no manner of doubt.

The affair that happened at the gaming table, was likewiſe a ſcheme of Trent's, on a hint given by my Lord to him to endeavour to lead Booth into ſome ſcrape or diſtreſs, his Lordſhip promiſing to pay whatever expence Trent might be led into by ſuch means. Upon his Lordſhip's credit, therefore, the money lent to Booth was really advanced. And hence aroſe all that ſeeming generoſity, and indifference as to the payment; Trent being ſatisfied with the obligation conferred on Booth, by means of which he hoped to effect his purpoſe.

But now the ſcene was totally changed; for Mrs Atkinſon, the morning after the quarrel, beginning ſeriouſly to recollect that ſhe had carried the matter rather too far, and might really injure Amelia's reputation, a thought to which the warm purſuit of her own intereſt had a good deal blinded her at the time, reſolved to viſit my Lord himſelf, and to let him into the whole ſtory; for as ſhe had ſucceeded already in her favourite point, ſhe thought ſhe had no reaſon to fear any conſequence of the diſcovery. This reſolution ſhe immediately executed.

Trent came to attend his Lordſhip juſt after Mrs Atkinſon had left him. He found the peer in a very ill humour, and brought no news to comfort or recruit his ſpirits; for he had himſelf juſt received a billet from Booth, with an excuſe for himſelf and his wife, from accepting the invitation at Trent's houſe that evening, where matters had been previouſly concerted for their entertainment; and when his Lordſhip was by accident to drop into the room where Amelia was, while Booth was to be engaged at play in another.

And now, after much debate, and after Trent had acquainted my Lord with the wretched ſituation of Booth's circumſtances, it was reſolved, that Trent ſhould immediately demand his money of Booth, and upon his not paying it, for they both concluded it impoſſible he ſhould pay it, to put the note which Trent had for the money in ſuit againſt him, by the genteel means of paying it away to a nominal third perſon; and this they

Digitized by Google

they both conceived muſt end immediately in the ruin of Booth, and conſequently in the conqueſt of Amelia.

In this project, and with this hope, both my Lord and his ſetter, or (if the ſportſmen pleaſe) ſetting-dog, greatly exulted, and it was next morning executed, as we have already ſeen.

CHAP. IV.

Containing ſome diſtreſs.

TRENT's letter drove Booth almoſt to madneſs. To be indebted to ſuch a fellow, at any rate, had ſtuck much in his ſtomach, and had given him very great uneaſineſs; but to anſwer this demand in any other manner than by paying the money, was abſolutely what he could not bear. Again, to pay this money, he very plainly ſaw there was but one way; and this was by ſtripping his wife not only of every farthing, but almoſt of every rag ſhe had in the world; a thought ſo dreadful, that it chilled his very ſoul with horror; and yet pride at laſt ſeemed to repreſent this as the leſſer evil of the two.

But how to do this was ſtill a queſtion. It was not ſure, at leaſt he feared it was not, that Amelia herſelf would readily conſent to this; and ſo far from perſuading her to ſuch a meaſure, he could not bear even to propoſe it. At length, his determination was to acquaint his wife with the whole affair, and to aſk her conſent by way of aſking her advice; for he was well aſſured ſhe could find no other means of extricating him out of his dilemma. This he accordingly did, repreſenting the affair as bad as he could; tho, indeed, it was impoſſible for him to aggravate the real truth.

Amelia heard him patiently, without once interrupting him. When he had finiſhed, ſhe remained ſilent ſome time: indeed, the ſhock ſhe received from this ſtory, almoſt deprived her of the power of ſpeaking. At laſt ſhe anſwered: 'Well, my dear, you aſk

'my

Digitized by Google

'my advice; I certainly can give you no other than 'that the money must be paid.'

'But how must it be paid?' cries he, 'Oh Heavens! thou sweetest creature, what! not once upbraid me for bringing this ruin on thee!'

'Upbraid you, my dear!' says she,——Would to 'Heaven, I could prevent your upbraiding yourself. 'But do not despair, I will endeavour by some means 'or other to get you the money.'

'Alas! my dear love,' cries Booth, 'I know the 'only way by which you can raise it. How can I 'consent to that? do you forget the fears you so lately 'expressed of what would be our wretched condition, 'when our little all was mouldered away? Oh! my 'Amelia, they cut my very heart-strings, when you 'spoke them; for I had then lost this little all. Indeed, I assure you, I have not played since, nor ever 'will more.'

'Keep that resolution,' said she, 'my dear, and 'I hope we shall yet recover the past.'——At which words, casting her eyes on the children, the tears burst from her eyes, and she cried——'Heaven will, I hope, 'provide for us.'

A pathetic scene now ensued between the husband and wife, which would not perhaps please many readers to see drawn at too full a length. It is sufficient to say, that this excellent woman not only used her utmost endeavours to stifle and conceal her own concern, but said and did every thing in her power to allay that of her husband.

Booth was at this time to meet a person whom we have formerly mentioned in the course of our history. This gentleman had a place in the war-office, and pretended to be a man of great interest and consequence; by which means he did not only receive great respect and court from the inferior officers, but actually bubbled several of their money, by undertaking to do them services, which, in reality, were not within his power. In truth, I have known few great men who have not been beset with one or more such fellows as these, through whom the inferior part of mankind are obliged to make their court to the great men

Digitized by Google

men themſelves; by which means, I believe, principally, perſons of real merit have been often deterred from the attempt; for theſe ſubaltern coxcombs ever aſſume an equal ſtate with their maſters, and look for an equal degree of reſpect to be paid to them; to which men of ſpirit, who are in every light their betters, are not eaſily brought to ſubmit. Theſe fellows, indeed, themſelves have a jealous eye towards all great abilities, and are ſure, to the utmoſt of their power, to keep all who are ſo endowed, from the preſence of their maſters. They uſe their maſters, as bad miniſters have ſometimes uſed a prince; they keep all men of merit from his ears, and daily ſacrifice his true honour and intereſt to their own profit, and their own vanity.

As ſoon as Booth was gone to his appointment with this man, Amelia immediately betook herſelf to her buſineſs with the higheſt reſolution. She packed up not only her own little trinkets, and thoſe of her children, but the greateſt part of her own poor cloaths (for ſhe was but barely provided), and then drove in a hackney-coach to the ſame pawn-broker's who had before been recommended to her by Mrs. Atkinſon: who advanced her the money ſhe deſired.

Being now provided with her ſum ſhe returned well-pleaſed home; and her huſband coming in ſoon after, ſhe with much chearfulneſs delivered him all the money.

Booth was ſo overjoyed with the proſpect of diſcharging his debt to Trent, that he did not perfectly reflect on the diſtreſs to which his family was now reduced. The good humour which appeared in the countenance of Amelia, was perhaps another help to ſtifle thoſe reflections; but above all, were the aſſurances he had received from the great man, whom he had met at a coffeehouſe, and who had promiſed to do him all the ſervice in his power; which ſeveral half-pay ſubaltern officers aſſured him was very conſiderable.

With this comfortable news he acquainted his wife, who either was, or ſeemed to be extremely well pleaſed with it. And now he ſet out with the money in his

Digitized by Google

his pocket to pay his friend Trent, who unluckily for him happened not to be at home.

On his return home, he met his old friend the lieutenant, who thankfully paid him the crown, and inſiſted on his going with him and taking part of a bottle. This invitation was ſo eager and preſſing, that poor Booth, who could not reſiſt much importunity, complied.

While they were over their bottle, Booth acquainted his friend with the promiſes he had received that afternoon at the coffee-houſe, with which the old gentleman was very well pleaſed: 'for I have heard,' ſays he, 'that gentleman hath very powerful intereſt:' but he informed him likewiſe, that he had heard that the great man muſt be touched; for that he never did any thing without touching. Of this, indeed, the great man himſelf had given ſome oblique hints, by ſaying, with great ſagacity and ſlyeneſs, that he knew where fifty pound might be depoſited to much advantage.

Booth anſwered, that he would very readily advance a ſmall ſum, if he had it in his power; but that at preſent it was not ſo; for that he had no more in the world than the ſum of fifty pounds, which he owed Trent, and which he intended to pay him the next morning.

'It is very right undoubtedly to pay your debts,' ſays the old gentleman; 'but ſure, on ſuch an occaſion, any man but the rankeſt uſurer, would be 'contented to ſtay a little while for his money; and 'it will be only a little while, I am convinced; for if 'you depoſite this ſum in the great man's hands, I 'make no doubt but you will ſucceed immediately in 'getting your commiſſion, and then I will help you 'to a method of taking up ſuch a ſum as this.' The old gentleman perſiſted in this advice, and backed it with every argument he could invent; declaring, as was indeed true, that he gave the ſame advice which he would purſue, was the caſe his own.

Booth long rejected the opinion of his friend; till, as they had not argued with dry lips, he became heated with wine, and then at laſt the old gentleman ſucceeded.

Digitized by Google

ſucceeded. Indeed, ſuch was his love either for Booth, or for his own opinion, and perhaps for both, that he omitted nothing in his power. He even endeavoured to palliate the character of Trent, and unſaid half what he had before ſaid of that gentleman. In the end he undertook to make Trent eaſy, and to go to him the very next morning for that purpoſe.

Poor Booth at laſt yielded, though with the utmoſt difficulty. Indeed, had he known quite as much of Trent as the reader doth, no motive whatſoever would have prevailed on him to have taken the old gentleman's advice.

CHAP. V.

Containing more wormwood, and other ingredients.

IN the morning, Booth communicated the matter to Amelia, who told him ſhe would not preſume to adviſe him in an affair, of which he was ſo much the better judge.

While Booth remained in a doubtful ſtate what conduct to purſue, Bound came to make him a viſit, and informed him that he had been at Trent's houſe, but found him not at home; adding, that he would pay him a ſecond viſit that very day, and would not reſt till he found him.

Booth was aſhamed to confeſs his wavering reſolution, in an affair in which he had been ſo troubleſome to his friend; he therefore dreſſed himſelf immediately, and together they both went to wait on the little great man, to whom Booth now hoped to pay his court in the moſt effectual manner.

Bound had been longer acquainted with the modern methods of buſineſs than Booth; he adviſed his friend therefore to begin with tipping (as it is called) the great man's ſervant. He did ſo, and by that means got ſpeedy acceſs to the maſter.

The great man received the money, not as a gudgeon doth a bait, but as a pike receives a poor gudgeon into his maw. To ſay the truth, ſuch fellows as theſe may well be likened to that voracious fiſh, who fattens himſelf by devouring all the little inhabitants

Digitized by Google

of the river. As soon as the great man had pocketed the cash, he shook Booth by the hand, and told him he would be sure to slip no opportunity of serving him, and would send him word as soon as any offered.

Here I shall stop one moment, and so perhaps will my good-natured reader: for surely it must be a hard heart, which is not affected with reflectiag on the manner in which this poor little sum was raised, and on the manner in which it was bestowed. A worthy family, the wife and children of a man who had lost his blood abroad in the service of his country, parting with their little all, and exposed to cold and hunger, to pamper such a fellow as this!

And if any such reader as I mention should happen to be in reality a great man and in power, perhaps the horror of this picture may induce him to put a final end to this abominable practice of touching, as it is called; by which indeed a set of leaches are permitted to suck the blood of the brave and the indigent, of the widow and the orphan.

Booth now returned home, where he found his wife with Mrs James. Amelia had, before the arrival of her husband, absolutely refused Mrs James's invitation to dinner the next day: but when Booth came in, the lady renewed her application, and that in so pressing a manner, that Booth seconded her; for though he had enough of jealousy in his temper, yet such was his friendship to the Colonel, and such his gratitude for the obligations which he had received from him, that his own unwillingness to believe any thing of him, co-operating with Amelia's endeavours to put every thing in the fairest light, had brought him to acquit his friend of any ill design. To this, perhaps, the late affair concerning my Lord had moreover contributed: for it seems to me, that the same passion cannot much energize on two different objects at one and the same time; an observation which I believe will hold as true, with regard to the cruel passions of jealousy and anger, as to the gentle passion of love, in which one great and mighty object is sure to engage the whole passion.

Digitized by Google

When Booth grew importunate, Amelia answered, 'My dear, I should not refuse you whatever was in 'my power; but this is absolutely out of my power; 'for, since I must declare the truth, I cannot dress 'myself.'

'Why so?' said Mrs James, 'I am sure you are in 'good health.'

'Is there no other impediment to dressing but want 'of health, Madam?' answered Amelia.

'Upon my word, none that I know of,' replied Mrs James.

'What do you think of want of cloaths, Madam?' said Amelia.

'Ridiculous!' cried Mrs James. 'What need 'have you to dress yourself out?—You will see no 'body but your own family, and I promise you I don't 'expect it. A plain night-gown will do very well.'

'But if I must be plain with you, Madam,' said Amelia, 'I have no other cloaths but what I have 'now on my back.——I have not even a clean shift in 'the world: for you must know, my dear,' said she to Booth, 'that little Betty is walked off this morning, 'and hath carried all my linen with her.'

'How, my dear,' cries Booth, 'little Betty rob-'bed you!'

'It is even so,' answered Amelia. Indeed, she spoke truth; for little Betty having perceived the evening before that her mistress was moving her goods, was willing to lend all the assistance in her power, and had accordingly moved off early that morning, taking with her whatever she could lay her hands on.

Booth expressed himself with some passion on the occasion, and swore he would make an example of the girl. 'If the little slut be above ground,' cried he, 'I will find her out and bring her to justice.'

'I am really sorry for this accident,' said Mrs James, 'and (though I know not how to mention it) 'I beg you'll give me leave to offer you any linen of 'mine, till you can make new of your own.'

Amelia thanked Mrs James, but declined the favour, saying, she should do well enough at home; and that

Digitized by Google

that as she had no servant now to take care of her children, she could not, nor would not leave them on any account.

'Then bring Master and Miss with you,' said Mrs James. 'You shall positively dine with us to-morrow.'

'I beg, Madam, you will mention it no more,' said Amelia; 'for besides the substantial reasons I 'have already given, I have some things on my mind 'at present which make me unfit for company; and 'I am resolved nothing shall prevail on me to stir 'from home.'

Mrs James had carried her invitation already to the very utmost limits of good-breeding, if not beyond them. She desisted therefore from going any further, and after some short stay longer took her leave, with many expressions of concern, which however, great as it was, left her heart and her mouth together, before she was out of the house.

Booth now declared that he would go in pursuit of little Betty, against whom he vowed so much vengeance, that Amelia endeavoured to moderate his anger, by representing to him the girl's youth, and that this was the first fault she had ever been guilty of. 'Indeed,' says she, 'I should be very glad to have 'my things again, and I would have the girl too pu'nished in some degree, which might possibly be for 'her own good; but I tremble to think of taking 'away her life:' for Booth in his rage had sworn he would hang her.

'I know the tenderness of your heart, my dear,' said Booth, 'and I love you for it; but I must beg 'leave to dissent from your opinion. I do not think 'the girl in any light an object of mercy. She is not 'only guilty of dishonesty, but of cruelty: for she must 'know our situation, and the very little we had left. 'She is besides guilty of ingratitude to you, who have 'treated her with so much kindness, that you have 'rather acted the part of a mother than of a mistress. 'And so far from thinking her youth an excuse, I 'think it rather an aggravation. It is true, indeed, 'there are faults which the youth of the party very 'strongly recommends to our pardon. Such are all

Digitized by Google

'those which proceed from careleſſneſs, and want of 'thought; but crimes of this black dye, which are 'committed with deliberation, and imply a bad mind, 'deſerve a more ſevere puniſhment in a young per-'ſon than in one of riper years: for what muſt the 'mind be in old age, which hath acquired ſuch a 'degree of perfection in villainy ſo very early! ſuch 'perſons as theſe it is really a charity to the public 'to put out of the ſociety; and, indeed, a religious 'man would put them out of the world for the ſake 'of themſelves; for whoever underſtands any thing 'of human nature muſt know, that ſuch people, the 'longer they live, the more they will accumulate 'vice and wickedneſs.'

'Well, my dear,' cries Amelia, 'I cannot argue 'with you on theſe ſubjects. I ſhall always ſubmit 'to your ſuperior judgment, and I know you too 'well to think that you will ever do any thing 'cruel.'

Booth then left Amelia to the care of her children, and went in purſuit of the thief.

CHAP. VI.

A ſcene of the tragic kind.

HE had not been long gone, before a thundering knock was heard at the door of the houſe where Amelia lodged, and preſently after a figure all pale, ghaſtly, and almoſt breathleſs, ruſhed into the room where ſhe then was with her children.

This figure Amelia ſoon recognized to be Mrs Atkinſon, though indeed, ſhe was ſo diſguiſed, that at her firſt entrance Amelia ſcarce knew her. Her eyes were ſunk in her head, her hair diſhevelled, and not only her dreſs, but every feature in her face, was in the utmoſt diſorder.

Amelia was ſtrongly ſhocked at this ſight, and the little girl was much frightened; as for the boy, he immediately knew her, and running to Amelia, he cried, 'La! Mamma, what is the matter with poor 'Mrs Atkinſon?'

As

Digitized by Google

As soon as Mrs Atkinson recovered her breath, she cried out— 'O, Mrs Booth, I am the most miserable 'of women; I have lost the best of husbands.'

Amelia looking at her with all the tenderness imaginable; forgetting, I believe, that there had ever been any quarrel between them—said—'Good Heavens, 'Madam, what's the matter?'

'O, Mrs Booth,' answered she, 'I fear I have lost 'my husband. The Doctor says, there is but little 'hope of his life. O, Madam, however I have been 'in the wrong, I am sure you will forgive me and 'pity me. I am sure I am severely punished: for to 'that cursed affair I owe all my misery.'

'Indeed, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'I am extremely 'concerned for your misfortune. But, pray, tell me 'hath any thing happened to the Serjeant?'

'O, Madam,' cries she, 'I have the greatest reason 'to fear I shall lose him. The Doctor hath almost 'given him over.—He says he hath scarce any hopes. '—O, Madam, that evening that the fatal quarrel 'happened between us, my dear Captain took it so to 'heart, that he sat up all night, and drank a whole 'bottle of brandy.—Indeed, he said, he wished to kill 'himself: for nothing could have hurt him so much 'in the world, he said, as to have any quarrel between 'you and me. His concern, and what he drank to-'gether, threw him into a high fever.—So that, when 'I came home from my Lord's---(for indeed, Madam, 'I have been, and set all to rights---your reputation 'is now in no danger) when I came home, I say, 'I found the poor man in a raging delirious fit, and 'in that he hath continued ever since till about an 'hour ago, when he came perfectly to his senses; 'but now he says he is sure he shall die, and begs 'for Heaven's sake to see you first. Would you, Ma-'dam, would you have the goodness to grant my 'poor Captain's desire; consider he is a dying man, 'and neither he nor I shall ever ask you a second fa-'vour. He says he hath something to say to you 'that he can mention to no other person, and that 'he cannot die in peace unless he sees you.'

Digitized by Google

'Upon my word, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'I am 'extremely concerned at what you tell me. I knew 'the poor Serjeant from his infancy, and always had 'an affection for him, as I think him to be one of the 'beſt-natured and honeſteſt creatures upon earth. I 'am ſure if I could do him any ſervice,——but of 'what uſe can my going be?'---

'Of the higheſt in the world,' anſwered Mrs Atkinſon. 'If you knew how earneſtly he entreated it, 'how his poor breaking heart begged to ſee you, you 'would not refuſe.'---

'Nay, I do not abſolutely refuſe,' cries Amelia. ——'Something to ſay to me of conſequence, and 'that he could not die in peace, unleſs he ſaid it—— 'Did he ſay that, Mrs Atkinſon?'

'Upon my honour he did,' anſwered ſhe, 'and 'much more than I have related.'

'Well, I will go with you,' cries Amelia. 'I can-'not gueſs what this ſhould be; but I will go.'

Mrs Atkinſon then poured out a thouſand bleſſings and thankſgivings; and taking hold of Amelia's hand, and eagerly kiſſing it, cried out---'How could that 'fury paſſion drive me to quarrel with ſuch a crea-'ture!'

Amelia told her ſhe had forgiven and forgot it; and then calling up the miſtreſs of the houſe, and committing to her the care of her children, ſhe cloaked herſelf up as well as ſhe could, and ſet out with Mrs Atkinſon.

When they arrived at the houſe, Mrs Atkinſon ſaid ſhe would go firſt and give the Captain ſome notice; for that if Amelia entered the room unexpectedly, the ſurpriſe might have an ill effect. She left, therefore, Amelia in the parlour, and proceeded directly up ſtairs.

Poor Atkinſon, weak and bad as was his condition, no ſooner heard that Amelia was come, than he diſcovered great joy in his countenance, and preſently afterwards ſhe was introduced to him.

Atkinſon exerted his utmoſt ſtrength to thank her for her goodneſs to a dying man (for ſo he called himſelf). He ſaid, he ſhould not have preſumed to give

Digitized by Google

give her this trouble, had he not had ſomething which he thought of conſequence to ſay to her, and which he could not mention to any other perſon. He then deſired his wife to give him a little box, of which he always kept the key himſelf, and afterwards begged her to leave the room for a few minutes; at which, neither ſhe, nor Amelia expreſſed any diſſatisfaction.

When he was alone with Amelia, he ſpoke as follows: 'This, Madam, is the laſt time my eyes will 'ever behold what——— Do pardon me, Madam, I 'will never offend you more.'—Here he ſunk down in his bed, and the tears guſhed from his eyes.

'Why ſhould you fear to offend me, Joe?' ſaid Amelia. 'I am ſure, you never did any thing wil-'lingly to offend me.'

'No, Madam,' anſwered he, 'I would die a thou-'ſand times, before I would have ventured it in the 'ſmalleſt matter. But—I cannot ſpeak— and yet I 'muſt. You cannot pardon me; and yet perhaps, 'as I am a dying man, and never ſhall ſee you more. '—Indeed, if I was to live after this diſcovery, I 'ſhould never dare to look you in the face again--- 'and yet, Madam, to think I ſhall never ſee you 'more is worſe than ten thouſand deaths.'

'Indeed, Mr Atkinſon,' cries Amelia, bluſhing, and looking down on the floor, 'I muſt not hear 'you talk in this manner. If you have any thing to 'ſay, tell it me, and do not be afraid of my anger; 'for I think I may promiſe to forgive whatever it was 'poſſible you ſhould do.'

'Here then, Madam,' ſaid he, 'is your picture; 'I ſtole it when I was eighteen years of age, and 'have kept it ever ſince. It is ſet in gold, with three 'little diamonds; and yet I can truly ſay, it was not 'the gold nor diamonds which I ſtole----it was that 'face, which, if I had been the emperor of the 'world.'---

'I muſt not hear any more of this,' ſaid ſhe;— 'comfort yourſelf, Joe, and think no more of this 'matter. Be aſſured, I freely and heartily forgive 'you—But, pray compoſe yourſelf; come, let me 'call in your wife.'—

'Firſt,

Digitized by Google

'First, Madam, let me beg one favour,'—cried he, 'consider it is the last, and then I shall die in peace—'let me kiss that hand before I die.'

'Well, nay,' says she, 'I don't know what I am 'doing—well—there,'—She then carelessly gave him her hand, which he put gently to his lips, and then presently let it drop, and fell back into the bed.

Amelia now summoned Mrs Atkinson, who was indeed no further off than just without the door. She then hastened down stairs, and called for a great glass of water, which, having drunk off, she threw herself into a chair, and the tears ran plentifully from her eyes with compassion for the poor wretch she had just left in his bed.

To say the truth, without any injury to her chastity, that heart which had stood firm as a rock to all the attacks of title and equipage, of finery and flattery, and which all the treasures of the universe could not have purchased, was yet a little softened by the plain honest, modest, involuntary, delicate, heroic passion of this poor and humble swain; for whom, in spite of herself, she felt a momentary tenderness and complacence, at which Booth, if he had known it, would perhaps have been displeased.

Having staid some time in the parlour, and not finding Mrs Atkinson come down, (for indeed her husband was then so bad she could not quit him), Amelia left a message with a maid of the house for her mistress, purporting that she should be ready to do any thing in her power to serve her; and then left the house with a confusion on her mind that she had never felt before, and which any chastity that is not hewn out of marble must feel on so tender and delicate an occasion.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr Booth meets with more than one adventure.

BOOTH having hunted about for two hours, at last saw a young lady in a tattered silk gown, stepping out of a shop in Monmouth-Street into a hackney coach. This lady, notwithstanding the disguise of her dress. he presently discovered to be no other than little Betty.

He instantly gave the alarm of, 'stop thief, stop 'coach;' upon which Mrs Betty was immediately stopt in her vehicle, and Booth and his myrmidons laid hold of her

The girl no sooner found that she was seized by her master, than the consciousness of her guilt overpowered her; for she was not yet an experienced offender, and she immediately confessed her crime.

She was then carried before a justice of the peace, where she was searched, and there was found in her possession four shillings and sixpence in money, besides the silk gown, which was indeed proper furniture for Rag-fair, and scarce worth a single farthing, tho' the honest shop-keeper in Monmouth-street had sold it for a crown to this simple girl.

The girl being examined by the magistrate, spoke as follows: 'Indeed, Sir, an't please your worship, 'I am very sorry for what I have done; and to be 'sure, an't please your honour, my Lord, it must 'have been the devil that put me upon it; for to be 'sure, please your Majesty, I never thought upon such 'a thing in my whole life before, any more than I 'did of my dying day; but, indeed, Sir, an't please 'your worship—'

She was running on in this manner, when the justice interrupted her, and desired her to give an account of what she had taken from her master, and what she had done with it.

'Indeed, an't please your Majesty,' said she, 'I 'took no more than too shifts of Madam's, and I 'pawned them for five shillings, which I gave for the 'gown that's upon my back; and as for the mo-

'ney

Digitized by Google

'ney in my pocket, it is every farthing of it my own. 'I am ſure I intended to carry back the ſhifts too as 'ſoon as ever I could get money to take them out.'

The girl having told them where the pawn-broker lived, the juſtice ſent for him, to produce the ſhifts, which he preſently did; for he expected that a warrant to ſearch his houſe would be the conſequence of his refuſal.

The ſhifts being produced, on which the honeſt pawn-broker had lent five ſhillings, appeared plainly to be worth above thirty; indeed, when new they had coſt much more. So that by their goodneſs, as well as by their ſize, it was certain they could not have belonged to the girl.

Booth grew very warm againſt the pawn-broker. 'I hope, Sir,' ſaid he to the juſtice, 'there is ſome 'puniſhment for this fellow likewiſe, who ſo plainly 'appears to have known that theſe goods were ſtolen. 'The ſhops of theſe fellows may indeed be called the 'fountains of theft: for it is in reality the encouragement which they meet with from theſe receivers of 'their goods that induces men very often to become 'thieves; ſo that theſe deſerve equal, if not ſeverer 'puniſhment than the thieves themſelves.'

The pawn-broker proteſted his innocence; and denied the taking in the ſhifts. Indeed, in this he ſpoke truth; for he had ſlipt into an inner room, as was always his cuſtom on theſe occaſions, and left a little boy to do the buſineſs; by which means, he had carried on the trade of receiving ſtolen goods for many years with impunity, and had been twice acquited at the Old Baily, though the juggle appeared upon the moſt manifeſt evidence.

As the juſtice was going to ſpeak, he was interrupted by the girl, who falling upon her knees to Booth with many tears, begged his forgiveneſs.

'Indeed, Betty,' cries Booth, 'you do not deſerve 'forgiveneſs; for you know you had very good rea'ſons why you ſhould not have thought of robbing 'your miſtreſs, particularly at this time. And what 'further aggravates your crime, is, that you have 'robbed the beſt and kindeſt miſtreſs in the world.

'Nay,

Digitized by Google

'Nay, you are guilty not only of felony, but of a felo-
'nious breach of truſt; for you know very well every
'thing your miſtreſs had, was intruſted to your care.'

Now it happened by very great accident that the Juſtice before whom the girl was brought, underſtood the law. Turning therefore to Booth, he ſaid, 'Do 'you ſay, Sir, that this girl was entruſted with the 'ſhifts?'

'Yes, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'ſhe was entruſted with e-
'very thing.'

'And will you ſwear that the goods ſtolen,' ſaid the Juſtice, 'are worth forty ſhillings?'

'No indeed, Sir,' anſwered Booth, 'nor that they
'are worth thirty either.'

'Then, Sir,' cries the Juſtice, 'the girl cannot be
'guilty of felony.'

'How, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'is it not a breach of truſt?
'and is not a breach of truſt felony, and the worſt fe-
'lony too?'

'No, Sir,' anſwered the Juſtice, 'a breach of truſt
'is no crime in our law, unleſs it be in a ſervant; and
'then the act of parliament requires the goods taken
'to be of the value of forty ſhillings.'

'So then a ſervant,' cries Booth, 'may rob his
'maſter of thirty-nine ſhillings whenever he pleaſes,
'and he can't be puniſhed.'

'If the goods are under his care, he can't,' cries the Juſtice.

'I aſk your pardon, Sir,' ſays Booth. 'I do not
'doubt what you ſay; but ſure this is a very extraor-
'dinary law.'

'Perhaps I think ſo too,' ſaid the Juſtice; 'but it
'belongs not to my office to make or to mend laws.
'My buſineſs is only to execute them. If therefore the
'caſe be as you ſay, I muſt diſcharge the girl.'

'I hope, however, you will puniſh the pawn-broker,' cries Booth.

'If the girl is diſcharged,' cries the Juſtice, 'ſo
'muſt be the pawn-broker: for if the goods are not
'ſtolen, he cannot be guilty of receiving them, know-
'ing them to be ſtolen. And beſides, as to his offence,
'to ſay the truth, I am almoſt weary of proſecuting
'it;

Digitized by Google

'it; for such are the difficulties laid in the way of 'this prosecution, that it is almost impossible to con-'vict any one in it. And to speak my opinion plain-'ly, such are the laws, and such the method of pro-'ceeding, that one would almost think our laws were 'rather made for the protection of rogues, than for 'the punishment of them.'

Thus ended this examination: the thief and the receiver went about their business, and Booth departed, in order to go home to his wife.

In his way home, Booth was met by a lady in a chair; who, immediately upon seeing him, stopped her chair, bolted out of it, and going directly up to him, said: 'So, Mr Booth, you have kept your word 'with me.'

This lady was no other than Miss Matthews, and the speech she made was of a promise made to her at the masquerade, of visiting her within a day or two; which, whether he ever intended to keep I cannot say, but in truth, the several accidents that had since happened unto him had so discomposed his mind, that he had absolutely forgot it.

Booth however was too sensible and too well bred, to make the excuse of forgetfulness to a lady; nor could he readily find any other. While he stood therefore hesitating, and looking not over wise, Miss Matthews said: 'Well, Sir, since by your confusion 'I see you have some grace left, I will pardon you on 'one condition, and that is, that you will sup with 'me this night. But if you fail me now, expect all 'the revenge of an injured woman.' She then bound herself by a most outrageous oath, that she would complain to his wife—'And I am sure,' says she, 'she is 'so much a woman of honour as to do me justice.—'And though I miscarried in my first attempt, be as-'sured I will take care of my second.'

Booth asked what she meant by her first attempt; to which she answered, that she had already writ his wife an account of his ill usage of her, but that she was pleased it had miscarried. She then repeated her asseverations, that she would now do it effectually if he disappointed her.

Digitized by Google

This threat she reckoned would most certainly terrify poor Booth; and indeed she was not mistaken; for I believe it would have been impossible, by any other menace, or by any other means, to have brought him once even to balance in his mind on this question. But by this threat she prevailed; and Booth promised, upon his word and honour, to come to her at the hour she appointed. After which she took leave of him with a squeeze by the hand, and a smiling countenance, and walked back to her chair.

But, however she might be pleased with having obtained this promise, Booth was far from being delighted with the thoughts of having given it. He looked indeed upon the consequences of this meeting with horror; but as to the consequence which was so apparently intended by the lady, he resolved against it. At length he came to this determination; to go, according to his appointment, to argue the matter with the lady, and to convince her, if possible, that, from a regard to his honour only, he must discontinue her acquaintance. If this failed to satisfy her, and she still persisted in her threats to acquaint his wife with the affair, he then resolved, whatever pains it cost him, to communicate the whole truth himself to Amelia, from whose goodness he doubted not to obtain an absolute remission.

CHAP. VIII.

In which Amelia appears in a light more amiable than gay.

WE will now return to Amelia, whom we left in some perturbation of mind departing from Mrs Atkinson.

Though she had before walked through the streets in a very improper dress with Mrs Atkinson, she was unwilling, especially as she was alone, to return in the same manner. Indeed, she was scarce able to walk in her present condition; for the case of poor Atkinson had much affected her tender heart, and her eyes had overflown with many tears

Digitized by Google

It occurred likewiſe to her at preſent, that ſhe had not a ſingle ſhilling in her pocket, or at home, to provide food for herſelf and her family. In this ſituation ſhe reſolved to go immediately to the pawn-broker whither ſhe had gone before, and to depoſit her picture for what ſhe could raiſe upon it. She then immediately took a chair, and put her deſign in execution.

The intrinſic value of the gold, in which this picture was ſet, and of the little diamonds which ſurrounded it, amounted to nine guineas. This therefore was advanced to her, and the prettieſt face in the world (ſuch is often the fate of beauty) was depoſited, as of no value, into the bargain.

When ſhe came home, ſhe found the following letter from Mrs Atkinſon:

"My deareſt Madam,

"AS I know your goodneſs, I could not delay a "moment acquainting you with the happy turn of "my affairs ſince you went. The Doctor, on his re- "turn to viſit my huſband, has aſſured me, that the "Captain was on the recovery, and in very little dan- "ger; and I really think he is ſince mended. I hope "to wait on you ſoon with better news. Heaven bleſs "you, dear Madam; and believe me to be, with the "utmoſt ſincerity,

"Your moſt obliged,
"obedient humble ſervant,
"F. ATKINSON."

Amelia was really pleaſed with this letter: and now, it being paſt four o'clock, ſhe deſpaired of ſeeing her huſband till the evening. She therefore provided ſome tarts for her children, and then eating nothing but a ſlice of bread and butter herſelf, ſhe began to prepare for the Captain's ſupper.

There were two things of which her huſband was particularly fond, which, though it may bring the ſimplicity of his taſte into great contempt with ſome of my readers, I will venture to name. Theſe were a fowl

Digitized by Google

fowl and egg ſauce, and mutton-broth; both which Amelia immediately purchaſed.

As ſoon as the clock ſtruck ſeven, the good creature went down into the kitchen, and began to exerciſe her talents of cookery, of which ſhe was a great miſtreſs, as ſhe was of every œconomical office, from the higheſt to the loweſt; and as no woman could outſhine her in a drawing-room, ſo none could make the drawing-room itſelf ſhine brighter than Amelia. And if I may ſpeak a bold truth, I queſtion whether it be poſſible to view this fine creature in a more amiable light, than while ſhe was dreſſing her huſband's ſupper with her little children playing round her.

It was now half an hour paſt eight, and the meat almoſt ready, the table likewiſe neatly ſpread with materials, borrowed from her landlady, and ſhe began to grow a little uneaſy at Booth's not returning; when a ſudden knock at the door rouſed her ſpirits, and ſhe cried, 'There, my dear, there is your good 'papa;' at which words ſhe darted ſwiftly up ſtairs, and opened the door to her huſband.

She deſired her huſband to walk up into the dining-room, and ſhe would come to him in an inſtant; for ſhe was deſirous to increaſe his pleaſures, by ſurpriſing him with his two favourite diſhes. She then went down again to the kitchen, where the maid of the houſe undertook to ſend up the ſupper, and ſhe with her children returned to Booth.

He then told her conciſely what had happened with relation to the girl. To which ſhe ſcarce made any anſwer; but aſked him if he had not dined. He aſſured her he had not ate a morſel the whole day. 'Well,' ſays ſhe, 'my dear, I am a fellow-ſufferer; 'but we ſhall both enjoy our ſupper the more; for I 'have made a little proviſion for you, as I gueſſed 'what might be the caſe. I have got you a bottle of 'wine too. And here is a clean cloth and a ſmiling 'countenance, my dear Will. Indeed, I am in un-'uſual good ſpirits to-night, and I have made a pro-'miſe to the children, which you muſt confirm; I 'have promiſed to let them ſit up this one night to 'ſupper with us.——Nay, don't look ſo ſerious; caſt

Digitized by Google

'off all uneasy thoughts—I have a present for you 'here—No matter how I came by it.'——At which words, she put eight guineas into his hand, crying, 'Come, my dear Bill, be gay—Fortune will yet be 'kind to us—at least, let us be happy this night. In- 'deed, the pleasures of many women, during their 'whole lives, will not amount to my happiness this 'night, if you will be in good humour.'

Booth fetched a deep sigh, and cried—'How unhap- 'py am I, my dear, that I can't sup with you to-night!'

As in the delightful month of June, when the sky is all serene, and the whole face of Nature looks with a pleasing and smiling aspect, suddenly a dark cloud spreads itself over the hemisphere, the sun vanishes from our sight, and every object is obscured by a dark and horrid gloom: so happened it to Amelia; the joy that had enlivened every feature disappeared in a moment; the lustre forsook her shining eyes; and all the little loves, that played and wantoned in her cheeks, hung their drooping heads, and with a faint trembling voice, she repeated her husband's words: 'Not sup 'with me to-night, my dear?'

'Indeed, my dear,' answered he, 'I cannot. I 'need not tell you how uneasy it makes me, or that I 'am as much disappointed as yourself; but I am en- 'gaged to sup abroad. I have absolutely given my 'honour; and besides, it is on business of import- 'ance.

'My dear,' said she, 'I say no more. I am con- 'vinced you would not willingly sup from me. I 'own it is a very particular disappointment to me to- 'night, when I had proposed unusual pleasure; but 'the same reason which is sufficient to you, ought to 'be so to me.'

Booth made his wife a compliment on her ready compliance, and then asked her, what she intended, by giving him that money, or how she came by it.

'I intend, my dear,' said she, 'to give it you; that 'is all. As to the manner in which I came by it, you 'know, Billy, that is not very material. You are 'well assured I got it by no means which would dis- 'please you; and perhaps another time I may tell you.'

Booth

Digitized by Google

Booth asked no farther questions; but he returned her, and insisted on her taking, all but one guinea, saying, she was the safest treasurer. He then promised her to make all the haste home in his power, and he hoped, he said, to be with her in an hour and half at fartheſt, and then took his leave.

When he was gone, the poor disappointed Amelia sat down to supper with her children; with whose company she was forced to console herself for the absence of her husband.

CHAP. IX.

A very tragic scene.

THE clock had struck eleven, and Amelia was just proceeding to put her children to bed, when she heard a knock at the street door. Upon which, the boy cried out, 'There's papa, mamma, 'pray let me stay and see him before I go to bed.' This was a favour very easily obtained; for Amelia instantly ran down stairs, exulting in the goodness of her husband for returning so soon, though half an hour was already elapsed beyond the time in which he promised to return.

Poor Amelia was now again disappointed; for it was not her husband at the door, but a servant with a letter for him, which he delivered into her hands. She immediately returned up stairs, and said—'It was 'not your papa, my dear; but I hope it is one who 'hath brought us some good news.' For Booth had told her, that he hourly expected to receive such from the great man, and had desired her to open any letter which came to him in his absence.

Amelia therefore broke open the letter, and read as follows:

"SIR,

"AFTER what hath past between us, I need only "tell you, that I know you supped this very "night alone with Miss Matthews: a fact which will "upbraid you sufficiently, without putting me to that

Digitized by Google

" trouble, and will very well account for my desiring " the favour of seeing you to-morrow in Hyde-Park at " six in the morning. You will forgive my remind- " ing you once more how inexcusable this behaviour " is in you, who are possessed in your own wife of the " most inestimable jewel.

" Yours, &c.

" T. James.

" I shall bring pistols with me."

It is not easy to describe the agitation of Amelia's mind when she read this letter. She threw herself into her chair, turned as pale as death, began to tremble all over, and had just power enough left to tap the bottle of wine, which she had hitherto preserved entire for her husband, and to drink off a large bumper.

The little boy perceived the strange symptoms which appeared in his mother; and running to her, he cried, 'What's the matter, my dear mamma, you 'don't look well!—No harm hath happened to poor 'papa, I hope—Sure that bad man hath not carried 'him away again.'

Amelia answered, 'No, child, nothing—nothing 'at all.'—And then a large shower of tears came to her assistance; which presently after produced the same in the eyes of both the children.

Amelia, after a short silence, looking tenderly at her children, cried out, 'It is too much, too much to 'bear. Why did I bring these little wretches into 'the world! why were these innocents born to such 'a fate!'—She then threw her arms round them both (for they were before embracing her knees) and cried, 'O my children! my children! forgive me, my 'babes—Forgive me that I have brought you into 'such a world as this. You are undone—my children 'are undone.'

The little boy answered with great spirit, 'How 'undone, mamma? my sister and I don't care a far- 'thing for being undone—Don't cry so upon our ac- 'counts—we are both very well; indeed we are—But 'do

Digitized by Google

'do pray tell us. I am ſure, ſome accident hath hap-
'pened to poor papa.'

'Mention him no more,' cries Amelia—'your papa
'is—indeed he is a wicked man—he cares not for
'any of us——O Heavens, is this the happineſs I pro-
'miſed myſelf this evening!'—At which words ſhe fell into any agony, holding both her children in her arms.

The maid of the houſe now entered the room, with a letter in her hand, which ſhe had received from a porter, whoſe arrival the reader will not wonder to have been unheard by Amelia in her preſent condition.

The maid, upon her entrance into the room, perceiving the ſituation of Amelia, cried out, 'Good
'Heavens! Madam, what's the matter?' Upon which, Amelia, who had a little recovered herſelf after the laſt violent vent of her paſſion, ſtarted up and cried—'Nothing, Mrs Suſan—nothing extra-
'ordinary. I am ſubject to theſe fits ſometimes; but
'I am very well now Come, my dear children, I am
'very well again; indeed I am. You muſt now go
'to bed; Mrs Suſan will be ſo good as to put you
'to bed.'

'But why doth not papa love us?' cries the little boy, 'I am ſure, we have none of us done any thing
'to diſoblige him.'

This innocent queſtion of the child ſo ſtung Amelia, that ſhe had the utmoſt difficulty to prevent a relapſe. However, ſhe took another dram of wine; for ſo it might be called to her, who was the moſt temperate of women, and never exceeded three glaſſes on any occaſion. In this glaſs ſhe drank her children's health, and ſoon after ſo well ſoothed and compoſed them, that they went quietly away with Mrs Suſan.

The maid, in the ſhock ſhe had conceived at the melancholly, indeed frightful ſcene, which had preſented itſelf to her at her firſt coming into the room, had quite forgot the letter, which ſhe held in her hand. However, juſt at her departure, ſhe recollected it, and delivered it to Amelia; who was no ſooner alone, than ſhe opened it, and read as follows:

"My

Digitized by Google

" My dearest sweetest love,

" I Write this from the bailiff's house, where I was formerly, and to which I am again brought at the suit of that villain, Trent. I have the misfortune to think I owe this accident (I mean, that it happened to-night) to my own folly, in endeavouring to keep a secret from you—O my dear, had I had resolution to confess my crime to you, your forgiveness would, I am convinced, have cost me only a few blushes, and I had now been happy in your arms. Fool that I was, to leave you on such an account, and to add to a former transgression a new one—Yet by Heavens I mean not a transgression of the like kind; for of that I am not, nor ever will be guilty; and when you know the true reason of my leaving you to-night, I think you will pity, rather than upbraid me. I am sure you would, if you knew the compunction with which I left you to go to the most worthless, the most infamous———Dogues the rest——Guess that crime with which I cannot stain my paper——but still believe me no more guilty than I am—or, if it will lessen your vexation at what hath befallen me, believe me as guilty as you please, and think me, for a while at least, as undeserving of you, as I think myself. This paper and pen are so bad, I question whether you can read what I write; I almost doubt whether I wish you should. Yet this I will endeavour to make as legible as I can — Be comforted, my dear love, and still keep up your spirits with the hopes of better days. The Doctor will be in town to-morrow, and I trust in his goodness for my delivery once more from this place, and that I shall soon be able to repay him. That Heaven may bless and preserve you, is the prayer of.

" My dearest love,

" Your very fond, affectionate,

" and hereafter faithful husband,

" W. Booth."

Amelia

Digitized by Google

Amelia pretty well gueſſed the obſcure meaning of this letter, which though at another time it might have given her unſpeakable torment, was at preſent rather of the medicinal kind, and ſerved to allay her anguiſh. Her anger to Booth too began a little to abate, and was ſoftened by her concern for his misfortune. Upon the whole, however, ſhe paſſed a miſerable and ſleepleſs night, her gentle mind torn and diſtracted with various and contending paſſions, diſtreſſed with doubts, and wandering in a kind of twilight, which preſented her only objects of different degrees of horror, and where black deſpair cloſed at a ſmall diſtance the gloomy proſpect.

Digitized by Google

AMELIA.

BOOK XII.

CHAP. I.

The book begins with polite hiſtory.

BEFORE we return to the miſerable couple, whom we left at the end of the laſt book, we will give our reader the more chearful view of the gay and happy family of Colonel James.

Mrs James, when ſhe could not, as we have ſeen, prevail with Amelia to accept that invitation, which, at the deſire of the Colonel, ſhe had ſo kindly and obediently carried her, returned to her huſband, and acquainted him with the ill ſucceſs of her embaſſy; at which, to ſay the truth, ſhe was almoſt as much diſappointed as the Colonel himſelf: for he had not taken a much ſtronger liking to Amelia, than ſhe herſelf had conceived for Booth. This will account for ſome paſſages, which may have a little ſurpriſed the reader in the former chapters of this hiſtory, as we were not then at leiſure to communicate to them a hint of this kind: it was indeed on Mr Booth's account that ſhe had been at the trouble of changing her dreſs at the maſquerade.

But her paſſions of this ſort, happily for her, were not extremely ſtrong; ſhe was therefore eaſily baulked, and as ſhe met with no encouragement from Booth, ſhe ſoon gave way to the impetuoſity of Miſs Matthews; and from that time ſcarce thought more of the affair, till her huſband's deſign againſt the wife revived hers likewiſe; inſomuch, that her paſſion was,

at

Digitized by Google

at this time, certainly ſtrong enough for Booth, to produce a good hearty hatred for Amelia, whom ſhe now abuſed to the Colonel in very groſs terms; both on the account of her poverty, and her inſolence: for ſo ſhe termed the refuſal of all her offers.

The Colonel ſeeing no hopes of ſoon poſſeſſing his new miſtreſs, began, like a prudent and wiſe man, to turn his thoughts towards the ſecuring his old one. From what his wife had mentioned, concerning the behaviour of the ſhepherdeſs, and particularly her preference of Booth, he had little doubt but that this was the identical Miſs Matthews. He reſolved therefore to watch her cloſely, in hopes of diſcovering Booth's intrigue with her. In this, beſides the remainder of affection which he yet preſerved for that lady, he had another view, as it would give him a fair pretence to quarrel with Booth; who, by carrying on this intrigue, would have broke his word and honour given to him: and he began now to hate poor Booth heartily, from the ſame reaſon from which Mrs James had contracted her averſion to Amelia.

The Colonel therefore employed an inferior kind of pimp to watch the lodgings of Miſs Matthews, and to acquaint him if Booth, whoſe perſon was known to the pimp, made any viſit there.

The pimp faithfully performed his office, and having laſt night made the wiſhed-for diſcovery, immediately acquainted his maſter with it.

Upon this news, the Colonel preſently diſpatched to Booth the ſhort note which we have before ſeen. He ſent it to his own houſe inſtead of Miſs Matthews's, with hopes of that very accident which actually did happen. Not that he had any ingredient of the bully in him, and deſired to be prevented from fighting; but with a proſpect of injuring Booth in the affection and eſteem of Amelia, and of recommending himſelf ſomewhat to her by appearing in the light of her champion; for which purpoſe he added that compliment to Amelia in his letter. He concluded upon the whole, that, if Booth himſelf opened the letter, he would certainly meet him the next morning; but if his wife ſhould open it before he came home, it might have the effects

Digitized by Google

fects before mentioned; and for his future expostulation with Booth, it would not be in Amelia's power to prevent it.

Now it happened, that this pimp had more masters than one. Amongst these, was the worthy Mr Trent, for whom he had often done business of the pimping vocation. He had been employed indeed in the service of the great peer himself, under the direction of the said Trent, and was the very person who had assisted the said Trent in dogging Booth and his wife to the opera-house on the masquerade night.

This subaltern pimp was with his superior Trent yesterday morning, when he found a bailiff with him in order to receive his instructions for the arresting Booth; when the bailiff said it would be a very difficult matter to take him; for that, to his knowledge, he was as shy a cock as any in England. The subaltern immediately acquainted Trent with the business in which he was employed by the Colonel. Upon which Trent enjoined him the moment he had set him to give immediate notice to the bailiff; which he agreed to, and performed accordingly.

The bailiff, on receiving the notice, immediately set out for his stand at an alehouse within three doors of Miss Matthews's lodgings. At which, unfortunately for poor Booth, he arrived a very few minutes before Booth left that lady in order to return to Amelia.

These were several matters, of which we thought necessary our reader should be informed; for, besides that it conduces greatly to a perfect understanding of all history, there is no exercise of the mind of a sensible reader more pleasant than the tracing of the several small and almost imperceptible links in every chain of events by which all the great actions of the world are produced. We will now in the next chapter proceed with our history.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

In which Amelia visits her husband.

AMELIA, after much anxious thinking, in which she sometimes flattered herself that her husband was less guilty than she had at first imagined him, and that he had some good excuse to make for himself (for, indeed, she was not so able as willing to make one for him); at length resolved to set out for the bailiff's castle. Having therefore strictly recommended the care of her children to her good landlady, she sent for a hackney-coach, and ordered the coachman to drive to Gray's-Inn Lane.

When she came to the house, and asked for the Captain, the bailiff's wife, who came to the door, guessing, by the greatness of her beauty and the disorder of her dress, that she was a young lady of pleasure, answered surlily, 'Captain! I do not know of any Captain 'that is here, not I;' for this good woman was, as well as dame Purgante in Prior, a bitter enemy to all whores; especially to those of the handsome kind; for some such she suspected to go shares with her in a certain property to which the law gave her the sole right.

Amelia replied, she was certain that Captain Booth was there. 'Well, if he is so,' cries the bailiff's wife, 'you may come into the kitchen, if you will— 'and he shall be called down to you if you have any 'business with him.' At the same time she muttered something to herself, and concluded a little more intelligibly, though still in a muttering voice, that she kept no such house.

Amelia, whose innocence gave her no suspicion of the true cause of this good woman's sullenness, was frightened, and began to fear she knew not what: at last she made a shift to totter into the kitchen, when the mistress of the house asked her, 'Well, Madam, 'who shall I tell the Captain wants to speak with him?'

'I ask your pardon, Madam,' cries Amelia, 'in my 'confusion, I really forgot you did not know me—— 'tell him, if you please, that I am his wife.'

Digitized by Google

'And are you indeed his wife, Madam?' cries Mrs Bailiff, a little ſoftened.

'Yes indeed, and upon my honour,' anſwers Amelia.

'If this be the caſe,' cries the other, 'you may 'walk up ſtairs, if you pleaſe. Heaven forbid, I 'ſhould part man and wife. Indeed, I think they 'can never be too much together. But I never will 'ſuffer any bad doings in my houſe, nor any of the 'town ladies to come to gentlemen here.'

Amelia anſwered, that ſhe liked her the better; for, indeed, in her preſent diſpoſition, Amelia was as much exaſperated againſt wicked women as the virtuous miſtreſs of the houſe, or any other virtuous woman could be.

The bailiff's wife then uſhered Amelia up ſtairs, and having unlocked the priſoner's door, cried, 'Cap-'tain, here is your lady, Sir, come to ſee you.' At which words, Booth ſtarted up from his chair, and caught Amelia in his arms, embracing her for a conſiderable time with ſo much rapture, that the bailiff's wife, who was an eye-witneſs of this violent fondneſs, began to ſuſpect whether Amelia had really told her truth. However, ſhe had ſome little awe of the Captain, and for fear of being in the wrong, did not interfere, but ſhut the door, and turned the key.

When Booth found himſelf alone with his wife, and had vented the firſt violence of his rapture in kiſſes and embraces, he looked tenderly at her, and cried, 'Is it poſſible, Amelia, is it poſſible you can have 'this goodneſs to follow ſuch a wretch as me to ſuch 'a place as this?——or do you come to upbraid me 'with my guilt, and to ſink me down to that perdi-'tion I ſo juſtly deſerve?'

'Am I ſo given to upbraiding then?' ſays ſhe, in a gentle voice; 'have I ever given you occaſion to 'think I would ſink you to perdition?'

'Far be it from me, my love, to think ſo,' anſwered he. 'And yet you may forgive the utmoſt 'fears of an offending, penitent ſinner. I know, in-'deed, the extent of your goodneſs, and yet I know 'my guilt ſo great——'

'Alas!

Digitized by Google

'Alas! Mr Booth,' ſaid ſhe, 'what guilt is this 'which you mention, and which you writ to me of 'laſt night——Sure, by your mentioning to me ſo 'much, you intend to tell me more, nay, indeed, to 'tell me all—and not leave my mind open to ſuſpi-'cions perhaps ten times worſe than the truth.'

'Will you give me a patient hearing?' ſaid he.

'I will, indeed,' anſwered ſhe; 'nay, I am pre-'pared to hear the worſt you can unfold; nay, per-'haps, the worſt is ſhort of my apprehenſions.'

Booth then, after a little further apology, began and related to her the whole that had paſſed between him and Miſs Matthews, from their firſt meeting in the priſon to their ſeparation the preceding evening. All which, as the reader knows it already, it would be tedious and unpardonable to tranſcribe from his mouth. He told her likewiſe all that he had done and ſuffered, to conceal his tranſgreſſion from her knowledge. This, he aſſured her, was the buſineſs of his viſit laſt night; the conſequence of which was, he declared in the moſt ſolemn manner, no other than an abſolute quarrel with Miſs Matthews, of whom he had taken a final leave.

When he had ended his narration, Amelia, after a ſhort ſilence, anſwered,—'Indeed, I firmly believe 'every word you have ſaid--but I cannot now forgive 'you the fault you have confeſſed--and my reaſon is '—becauſe I have forgiven it long ago. Here, my 'dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'is an inſtance that I am likewiſe 'capable of keeping a ſecret.' She then delivered her huſband a letter, which ſhe had ſome time ago received from Miſs Matthews, and which was the ſame which that lady had mentioned, and ſuppoſed, as Booth had never heard of it, that it had miſcarried; for ſhe ſent it by the penny-poſt. In this letter, which was ſigned by a feigned name, ſhe had acquainted Amelia with the infidelity of her huſband, and had beſides very greatly abuſed him; taxing him with many falſhoods; and, among the reſt, with having ſpoken very ſlightingly and diſreſpectfully of his wife.

Amelia never ſhined forth to Booth in ſo amiable and great a light, nor did his own unworthineſs ever

Digitized by Google

appear to him so mean and contemptible, as at this instant. However, when he had read the letter, he uttered many violent protestations to her, that all which related to herself was absolutely false.

'I am convinced it is,' said she. 'I would not 'have a suspicion of the contrary for the world. I 'assure you I had, till last night revived it in my me- 'mory, almost forgot the letter; for, as I well knew 'from whom it came, by her mentioning obligations 'which she had conferred on you, and which you had 'more than once spoken to me of, I made large al- 'lowances for the situation you was then in; and I 'was the more satisfied, as the letter itself, as well as 'many other circumstances, convinced me the affair 'was at an end.'

Booth now uttered the most extravagant expressions of admiration and fondness that his heart could dictate, and accompanied them with the warmest embraces. All which warmth and tenderness she returned; and tears of love and joy gushed from both their eyes. So ravished indeed were their hearts, that for some time they both forgot the dreadful situation of their affairs.

This, however, was but a short reverie. It soon recurred to Amelia, that, though she had the liberty of leaving that house when she pleased, she could not take her beloved husband with her. This thought stung her tender bosom to the quick; and she could not so far command herself, as to refrain from many sorrowful exclamations against the hardship of their destiny; but when she saw the effect they had upon Booth, she stifled her rising grief, forced a little chearfulness into her countenance, and exerting all the spirits she could raise within herself, expressed her hopes of seeing a speedy end to their sufferings. She then asked her husband what she should do for him, and to whom she should apply for his deliverance.

'You know, my dear,' cries Booth, 'that the 'Doctor is to be in town some time to-day. My hopes 'of immediate redemption are only in him; and if 'that can be obtained, I make no doubt but of the 'success of that affair which is in the hands of a gen-

'tleman

'tleman who hath faithfully promiſed, and in whoſe 'power I am ſo well aſſured it is, to ſerve me.'

Thus did this poor man ſupport his hopes by a dependance on that ticket which he had ſo dearly purchaſed of one who pretended to manage the wheels in the great ſtate lottery of preferment. A lottery indeed, which hath this to recommend it, that many poor wretches feed their imaginations with the proſpect of a prize during their whole lives, and never diſcover they have drawn a blank.

Amelia, who was of a pretty ſanguine temper, and was entirely ignorant of theſe matters, was full as eaſy to be deceived into hopes as her huſband; but in reality at preſent ſhe turned her eyes to no diſtant proſpect; the deſire of regaining her huſband's liberty having engroſſed her whole mind.

While they were diſcourſing on theſe matters, they heard a violent noiſe in the houſe, and immediately after ſeveral perſons paſſed by their door up ſtairs to the apartment over their head. This greatly terrified the gentle ſpirit of Amelia, and ſhe cried—'Good 'Heavens! my dear, muſt I leave you in this horrid 'place? I am terrified with a thouſand fears concern-'ing you.'

Booth endeavoured to comfort her, ſaying, that he was in no manner of danger, and that he doubted not but that the Doctor would ſoon be with him.—'And 'ſtay, my dear,' cries he, 'now I recollect, ſuppoſe 'you ſhould apply to my old friend James; for I be-'lieve you are pretty well ſatisfied, that your ap-'prehenſions of him were groundleſs. I have no 'reaſon to think but that he would be as ready to 'ſerve me as formerly.'

Amelia turned pale as aſhes at the name of James, and, inſtead of making a direct anſwer to her huſband, ſhe laid hold of him, and cried, 'My dear, I have 'one favour to beg of you, and I inſiſt on your grant-'ing it me.'

Booth readily ſwore he would deny her nothing.

'It is only this, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'that, if that de-'teſted Colonel comes, you will not ſee him. Let the 'people of the houſe tell him you are not here.'

Digitized by Google

He knows nothing of my being here,' answered Booth; 'but why should I refuse to see him, if he 'should be kind enough to come hither to me? Indeed, my Amelia, you have taken a dislike to that 'man without sufficient reason.'

'I speak not upon that account,' cries Amelia; 'but 'I have had dreams last night about you two. Perhaps you will laugh at my folly; but pray indulge 'it. Nay, I insist on your promise of not denying 'me.'

'Dreams! my dear creature,' answered he. 'What 'dream can you have had of us?'

'One too horrible to be mentioned,' replied she. ——'I cannot think of it without horror; and, unless you will promise me not to see the Colonel till I 'return, I positively will never leave you.'

'Indeed, my Amelia,' said Booth, 'I never knew 'you unreasonable before. How can a woman of your 'sense talk of dreams?'

'Suffer me to be once at least unreasonable,' said Amelia; 'as you are so good-natured to say I am not 'often so. Consider what I have lately suffered, and 'how weak my spirits must be at this time.'

As Booth was going to speak, the Bailiff without any ceremony entered the room; and cried, 'No offence, I hope, Madam; my wife, it seems, did not 'know you. She thought the Captain had a mind for 'a bit of flesh by the bye. But I have quieted all matters: for I know you very well; I have seen that 'handsome face many a time, when I have been waiting upon the Captain formerly. No offence, I hope, 'Madam; but if my wife was as handsome as you are '—I should not look for worse goods abroad.'

Booth conceived some displeasure at this speech; but he did not think proper to express more than a pish. ——And then asked the Bailiff what was the meaning of the noise they heard just now.

'I know of no noise,' answered the Bailiff. 'Some 'of my men have been carrying a piece of bad luggage up stairs; a poor rascal that resisted the law 'and justice; so I gave him a cut or two with a hanger. If they shall prove mortal, he must thank him-

'self

Digitized by Google

'self for it. If a man will not behave like a gentleman to an officer, he must take the consequence; but I must say that for you, Captain, you behave yourself like a gentleman; and therefore I shall always use you as such: and I hope you will find bail soon with all my heart. This is but a paultry sum to what the last was; and I do assure you, there is nothing else against you in the office.'

The latter part of the bailiff's speech somewhat comforted Amelia, who had been a little frightened by the former; and she soon after took leave of her husband, to go in quest of the Doctor, who, as Amelia had heard that morning, was expected in town that very day, which was somewhat sooner than he had intended at his departure.

Before she went, however, she left a strict charge with the Bailiff, who ushered her very civilly down stairs, that if one Colonel James came there to enquire for her husband, he should deny that he was there.

She then departed; and the bailiff immediately gave a very strict charge to his wife, his maid, and his followers, that if one Colonel James, or any one from him, should enquire after the Captain, they should let him know he had the Captain above stairs: for he doubted not but that the Colonel was one of Booth's creditors; and he hoped for a second bail-bond by his means.

CHAP. III.

Containing matter pertinent to the history.

AMELIA, in her way to the Doctor's, determined just to stop at her own lodgings, which lay a little out of the road, and to pay a momentary visit to her children.

This was fortunate enough; for had she called at the Doctor's house, she would have heard nothing of him, which would have caused in her some alarm and disappointment; for the Doctor was set down at Mrs Atkinson's, where he was directed to Amelia's lodgings, to which he went before he called at his own; and

Digitized by Google

and here Amelia now found him playing with her two children.

The Doctor had been a little surprised at not finding Amelia at home, nor any one that could give an account of her. He was now more surprised to see her come in such a dress, and at the disorder which he very plainly perceived in her pale and melancholy countenance. He addressed her first (for, indeed, she was in no great haste to speak), and cried, 'My dear 'child, what is the matter? where is your husband? 'some mischief, I am afraid, hath happened to him in 'my absence.'

'Oh, my dear Doctor,' answered Amelia, 'sure 'some good angel hath sent you hither. My poor 'Will is arrested again. I left him in the most mise'rable condition in the very house whence your good'ness formerly redeemed him.'

'Arrested!' cries the Doctor, 'Then it must be 'for some very inconsiderable trifle.'

'I wish it was,' said Amelia, 'but it is for no less 'than fifty pound.'

'Then,' cries the Doctor, 'he hath been disingenuous 'with me. He told me, he did not owe ten pounds 'in the world for which he was liable to be sued.'

'I know not what to say,' cries Amelia. 'Indeed, 'I am afraid to tell you the truth.'

'How, child,' said the Doctor——'I hope you 'will never disguise it to any one, especially to me. 'Any prevarication, I promise you, will forfeit my 'friendship for ever.'

'I will tell you the whole,' cries Amelia, 'and 'rely entirely on your goodness.' She then related the gaming story, not forgetting to set in the fullest light, and to lay the strongest emphasis on his promise never to play again.

The Doctor fetched a deep sigh when he had heard Amelia's relation, and cried, 'I am sorry, child, for 'the share you are to partake in your husband's suffer'ings! but as for him, I really think he deserves no 'compassion. You say, he hath promised never to play 'again; but I must tell you he hath broke his promise 'to me already; for I had heard he was formerly ad-

'dicted

Digitized by Google

'dicted to this vice, and had given him sufficient caution against it. You will consider, child, I am already pretty largely engaged for him, every farthing of which, I am sensible, I must pay. You know I would go to the utmost verge of prudence to serve you; but I must not exceed my ability, which is not very great; and I have several families on my hands, who are by misfortune alone brought to want. I do assure you, I cannot at present answer for such a sum as this, without distressing my own circumstances.'

'Then Heaven have mercy upon us all!' cries Amelia; 'for we have no other friend on earth—My husband is undone; and these poor little wretches must be starved.'

The Doctor cast his eyes on the children, and then cried——'I hope not so. I told you I must distress my circumstances, and I will distress them this once on your account, and on the account of these poor little babes—But things must not go on any longer in this way——You must take a heroic resolution. I will hire a coach for you to-morrow morning, which shall carry you all down to my parsonage-house. There you shall have my protection, till something can be done for your husband; of which, to be plain with you, I at present see no likelihood.'

Amelia fell upon her knees in an ecstacy of thanksgiving to the Doctor, who immediately raised her up and placed her in her chair. She then recollected herself, and said—'Oh! my worthy friend, I have still another matter to mention to you, in which I must have both your advice and assistance. My soul blushes to give you all this trouble; but what other friend have I?——Indeed, what other friend could I apply to so properly on such an occasion?'

The Doctor, with a very kind voice and countenance, desired her to speak. She then said,—'Oh! Sir, that wicked Colonel, whom I have mentioned to you formerly, hath picked some quarrel with my husband (for she did not think proper to mention the cause,) and hath sent him a challenge. It came to my hand

'last

'last night, after he was arrested; I opened and 'read it.'

'Give it me, child,' said the Doctor.

She answered, she had burnt it; as was indeed true. 'But I remember it was an appointment to meet at 'sword and pistol this morning at Hyde-park.'

'Make yourself easy, my dear child,' cries the Doctor, 'I will take care to prevent any mischief.'

'But consider, my dear Sir,' said she, 'this is a 'tender matter. My husband's honour is to be pre'served, as well as his life.'

'And so is his soul, which ought to be the dearest 'of all things,' cries the Doctor. 'Honour! nonsense. 'Can honour dictate to him to disobey the express 'commands of his Maker, in compliance with a cu'stom established by a set of blockheads, founded on 'false principles of virtue, in direct opposition to the 'plain and positive precepts of religion, and tending 'manifestly to give a sanction to ruffians, and protect 'them in all the ways of impudence and villainy?'

'All this, I believe, is very true,' cries Amelia; 'but yet you know, Doctor, the opinion of the world.'

'You talk simply, child,' cries the Doctor. 'What 'is the opinion of the world opposed to religion and 'virtue? but you are in the wrong It is not the 'opinion of the world; it is the opinion of the idle, 'ignorant, and profligate. It is impossible it should 'be the opinion of one man of sense, who is in earnest 'in his belief of our religion. Chiefly, indeed, it hath 'been upheld by the nonsense of women; who, either 'from their extreme cowardice, and desire of pro'tection, or, as Mr Bayle thinks, from their excessive 'vanity, have been always forward to countenance a 'set of Hectors and bravoes, and to despise all men 'of modesty and sobriety; though these are often, at 'the bottom, not only the better, but the braver 'men.'

'You know, Doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I have never 'presumed to argue with you; your opinion is to me 'always instruction, and your word a law.'

'Indeed, child,' cries the Doctor, 'I know you are 'a good woman; and yet I must observe to you, that 'this

Digitized by Google

'this very desire of feeding the passion of female vanity with the heroism of her man, old Homer seems 'to make the characteristic of a bad and loose woman. He introduces Helen upbraiding her gallant 'with having quitted the fight, and left the victory 'to Menelaus, and seeming to be sorry that she had 'left her husband only because he was the better 'duellest of the two: but in how different a light 'doth he represent the tender and chaste love of 'Andromache to her worthy Hector! she dissuades 'him from exposing himself to danger even in a just 'cause. This is indeed a weakness; but it is an 'amiable one, and becoming the true feminine character; but a woman who, out of heroic vanity, '(for so it is), would hazard not only the life, but 'the soul too of her husband in a duel, is a monster, 'and ought to be painted in no other character than 'that of a Fury.'

'I assure you, Doctor,' cries Amelia, 'I never saw 'this matter in the odious light, in which you have 'truly represented it, before. I am ashamed to re-'collect what I have formerly said on this subject.---'And yet, whilst the opinion of the world is as it is, 'one would wish to comply as far as possible---especially as my husband is an officer of the army. If 'it can be done therefore with safety to his hn-'nour——'

'Again honour!' cries the Doctor. 'Indeed I will 'not suffer that noble word to be so basely and bar-'barously prostituted. I have known some of these 'men of honour, as they call themselves, to be the 'most arrant rascals in the universe.'

'Well, I ask your pardon,' said she. 'Reputation 'then, if you please —— or any other word you like 'better---you know my meaning very well.'

'I do know my meaning,' cries the Doctor, 'and 'Virgil knew it a great while ago. The next time 'you see your friend Mrs Atkinson, ask her what it 'was made Dido fall in love with Æneas.'

'Nay, dear Sir,' said Amelia, 'do not rally me 'so unmercifully; think where my poor husband is 'now.'

Digitized by Google

'He is,' answered the Doctor, 'where I will pre-'sently be with him. In the mean time, do you 'pack up every thing in order for your journey to-'morrow; for, if you are wife you will not trust 'your husband a day longer in this town—therefore 'to packing.'

Amelia promised she would——though indeed she wanted not any warning for her journey on this account; for when she packed up herself in the coach, she packed up her all. However, she did not think proper to mention this to the Doctor; for as he was now in pretty good humour, she did not care to venture again discomposing his temper.

The Doctor then set out for Gray's-Inn-Lane: and, as soon as he was gone, Amelia began to consider of her incapacity to take a journey in her present situation, without even a clean shift. At last she resolved, as she was possessed of seven guineas and a half, to go to her friend and redeem some of her own and her husband's linen out of captivity; indeed just so much, as would render it barely possible for them to go out of town with any kind of decency. And this resolution she immediately executed.

As soon as she had finished her business with the pawn-broker (if a man who lends under thirty *per cent.* deserves that name) he said to her, 'Pray, Madam, 'did you know that man who was here yesterday, 'when you brought the picture?' Amelia answered in the negative. 'Indeed, Madam,' said the broker, 'he knows you, though he did not recollect you while 'you was here, as your hood was drawn over your 'face; but the moment you was gone, he begged to 'look at the picture, which I, thinking no harm, per-'mitted. He had scarce looked upon it, when he 'cried out—'By heaven and earth, it is her picture.' 'He then asked me if I knew you—'Indeed,' says I, "I never saw the lady before."

In this last particular however the pawn-broker a little savoured of his profession, and made a small deviation from the truth: for when the man had asked him if he knew the lady, he answered she was some poor undone woman, who had pawned all her

Digitized by Google

cloaths to him the day before; and I suppose, says he, this picture is the last of her goods and chattels. This hint we thought proper to give the reader, as it may chance to be material.

Amelia answered coldly, that she had taken so very little notice of the man, that she scarce remembered he was there.

'I assure you, Madam,' says the pawn-broker, 'he 'hath taken very great notice of you; for the man 'changed countenance upon what I said, and pre-'sently after begged me to give him a dram. Oho! 'thinks I to myself, are you thereabouts? I would 'not be so much in love with some folks, as some 'people are, for more interest than I shall ever make 'of a thousand pound.'

Amelia blushed, and said with some peevishness, that she knew nothing of the man; but supposed he was some impertinent fellow or other.

'Nay, Madam,' answered the pawn-broker, 'I as-'sure you he is not worth your regard. He is a poor 'wretch, and I believe I am possessed of most of his 'moveables. However, I hope you are not offend-'ed; for, indeed, he said no harm; but he was very 'strangely disordered, that is the truth of it.'

Amelia was very desirous of putting an end to this conversation, and altogether as eager to return to her children; she therefore bundled up her things as fast as she could, and calling for a hackney-coach, direct-ed the coachman to her lodgings, and bid him drive her home with all the haste he could.

CHAP. IV.

In which Dr Harrison visits Colonel James.

THE Doctor, when he left Amelia, intended to go directly to Booth; but he presently changed his mind, and determined first to call on the Colonel, as he thought it was proper to put an end to that matter, before he gave Booth his liberty.

The Doctor found the two Colonels, James and Bath, together. They both received him very civilly;

Digitized by Google

for James was a very well-bred man; and Bath always shewed a particular respect to the clergy, he being indeed a perfect good Christian, except in the articles of fighting and swearing.

Our Divine sat some time without mentioning the subject of his errand, in hopes that Bath would go away; but when he found no likelihood of that (for indeed Bath was of the two much the most pleased with his company), he told James, that he had something to say to him relating to Mr Booth, which he believed he might speak before his brother.

'Undoubtedly, Sir,' said James; 'for there can 'be no secrets between us which my brother may not 'hear.'

'I come then to you, Sir,' said the Doctor, 'from 'the most unhappy woman in the world, to whose 'afflictions you have very greatly and very cruelly 'added, by sending a challenge to her husband, 'which hath very luckily fallen into her hands; for 'had the man for whom you designed it, received 'it, I am afraid you would not have seen me upon 'this occasion.'

'If I writ such a letter to Mr Booth, Sir,' said James, 'you may be assured I did not expect this visit 'in answer to it.'

'I do not think you did,' cries the Doctor; 'but 'you have great reason to thank Heaven for ordering 'this matter contrary to your expectations. I know 'not what trifle may have drawn this challenge from 'you; but, after what I have some reason to know 'of you, Sir, I must plainly tell you, that, if you had 'added to your guilt already committed against this 'man that of having his blood upon your hands, your 'soul would have become as black as hell itself.'

'Give me leave to say,' cries the Colonel, 'this is 'a language which I am not used to hear; and if 'your cloth was not your protection, you should not 'give it me with impunity. After what you know of 'me, Sir! What do you presume to know of me to 'my disadvantage?'

'You say my cloth is my protection, Colonel,' answered the Doctor, 'therefore pray lay aside your anger;

'ger; I do not come with any deſign of affronting or 'offending you.——'

'Very well,' cries Bath, 'that declaration is ſuffi-'cient from a clergyman, let him ſay what he 'pleaſes.'

'Indeed, Sir,' ſays the Doctor, very mildly, 'I con-'ſult equally the good of you both, and, in a ſpiri-'tual ſenſe, more eſpecially yours; for you know you 'have injured this poor man.'

'So far to the contrary,' cries James, 'that I have 'been his greateſt benefactor; I ſcorn to upbraid 'him; but you force me to it. Nor have I ever done 'him the leaſt injury.'

'Perhaps not,' ſaid the Doctor; 'I will alter what 'I have ſaid.——But for this I apply to your honour '—Have not you intended him an injury, the very 'intention of which cancels every obligation?

'How, Sir,' anſwered the Colonel—'What do you 'mean?'

'My meaning,' replied the Doctor, 'is almoſt too 'tender to mention—Come, Colonel, examine your 'own heart; and then anſwer me on your honour, if 'you have not intended to do him the higheſt wrong 'which one man can do to another.'

'I do not know what you mean by the queſtion,' anſwered the Colonel.

'D—n me, the queſtion is very tranſparent,' cries Bath. 'From any other man it would be an affront 'with the ſtrongeſt emphaſis, but, from one of the Doc-'tor's cloth, it demands a categorical anſwer.'

'I am not a papiſt, Sir,' anſwered Colonel James, 'nor am I obliged to confeſs to my prieſt. But if you 'have any thing to ſay, ſpeak openly—for I do not 'underſtand your meaning.'

'I have explained my meaning to you already,' ſaid the Doctor, 'in a letter I wrote to you on the ſub-'ject—a ſubject which I am ſorry I ſhould have any 'occaſion to write upon to a Chriſtian.'

'I do remember now,' cries the Colonel, 'that I 'received a very impertinent letter, ſomething like 'a ſermon, againſt adultery; but I did not expect to 'hear the author own it to my face.'

Digitized by Google

'That brave man then, Sir,' answered the Doctor, 'stands before you, who dares own he wrote that letter, and dares affirm too, that it was writ on a just and strong foundation. But if the hardness of your heart could prevail on you to treat my good intention with contempt and scorn, what, pray, could induce you to shew it, nay, to give it Mr Booth? What motive could you have for that, unless you meant to insult him, and to provoke your rival to give you that opportunity of putting him out of the world, which you have since wickedly sought by your challenge?

'I give him the letter!' said the Colonel.

'Yes, Sir,' answered the Doctor, 'he shewed me the letter, and affirmed that you gave it him at the masquerade.'

'He is a lying rascal then,' said the Colonel very passionately. 'I scarce took the trouble of reading the letter, and lost it out of my pocket.'

Here Bath interfered, and explained this affair in the manner in which it happened, and with which the reader is already acquainted. He concluded by great eulogiums on the performance, and declared it was one of the most enthusiastic (meaning, perhaps, ecclesiastic) letters that ever was written. 'And d—n me,' says he, 'if I do not respect the author with the utmost emphasis of thinking.'

The Doctor now recollected what had passed with Booth, and perceived he had made a mistake of one Colonel for another. This he presently acknowledged to Colonel James, and said that the mistake had been his, and not Booth's.

Bath now collected all his gravity and dignity, as he called it, into his own countenance, and addressing himself to James, said—'And was that letter writ to you, brother?---I hope you never deserved any suspicion of this kind.'

'Brother,' cries James, 'I am accountable to myself for my actions, and I shall not render an account either to you or that gentleman.'

'As to me, brother,' answered Bath, 'you say right; but I think this gentleman may call you to

'an

Digitized by Google

'an account; nay, I think it is his duty so to do. And 'let me tell you, brother, there is one much greater 'than he to whom you must give an account. Mrs 'Booth is really a fine woman, a lady of most impe- 'rious and majestic presence. I have heard you often 'say, that you liked her; and if you have quarrelled 'with her husband upon this account, by all the dig- 'nity of man, I think you ought to ask his pardon.'

'Indeed, brother,' cries James, 'I can bear this 'no longer—— you will make me angry presently.'

'Angry! brother James,' cries Bath—'angry?—I 'love you, brother, and have obligations to you. I 'will say no more—— but I hope you know I do not 'fear making any man angry.'

James answered, he knew it well; and then the Doctor apprehending that while he was stopping up one breach, he should make another, presently in- tertered, and turned the discourse back to Booth. 'You tell me, Sir,' said he to James, 'that my gown 'is my protection; let it then at least protect me where 'I have had no design in offending; where I have 'consulted your highest welfare, as in truth I did in 'writing this letter. And if you did not in the least 'deserve any such suspicion, still you have no cause 'for resentment. Caution against sin, even to the 'innocent, can never be unwholsome. But this I 'assure you, whatever anger you have to me, you 'can have none to poor Booth, who was entirely 'ignorant of my writing to you, and who, I am 'certain, never entertained the least suspicion of you; 'on the contrary, reveres you with the highest 'esteem, and love, and gratitude. Let me therefore 'reconcile all matters between you, and bring you 'together before he hath even heard of this chal- 'lenge.'

'Brother,' cries Bath, 'I hope I shall not make 'you angry—I lie when I say so; for I am indifferent 'to any man's anger—— Let me be an accessary to 'what the Doctor hath said. I think I may be trusted 'with matters of this nature; and it is a little unkind 'that if you intended to send a challenge, you did 'not make me the bearer. But, indeed, as to what

'appears to me, this matter may be very well made 'up; and as Mr Booth doth not know of the chal-'lenge, I don't see why he ever should, any more 'than your giving him the lie just now; but that he 'shall never have from me, nor, I believe, from this 'gentleman; for indeed if he should, it would be in-'cumbent upon him to cut your throat.'

'Lookee, Doctor,' said James, 'I do not deserve 'the unkind suspicion you just now threw out against 'me. I never thirsted after any man's blood; and as 'for what hath passed, since this discovery hath hap-'pened, I may perhaps not think it worth my while 'to trouble myself any more about it.'

The Doctor was not contented with 'perhaps;' he insisted on a firm promise, to be bound with the Colonel's honour. This at length he obtained, and then departed well satisfied.

In fact, the Colonel was ashamed to avow the real cause of the quarrel to this good man, or indeed to his brother Bath, who would not only have condemned him equally with the Doctor, but would possibly have quarrelled with him on his sister's account, whom, as the reader must have observed, he loved above all things; and in plain truth, though the Colonel was a brave man, and dared to fight, yet he was altogether as willing to let it alone; and this made him now and then give a little way to the wrongheadedness of Colonel Bath, who, with all his other principles of honour and humanity, made no more of cutting the throat of a man upon any of his punctilio's, than a butcher doth of killing sheep.

CHAP. V.

What passed at the Bailiff's house.

THE Doctor now set forward to his friend Booth, and as he passed by the door of his attorney in the way, he called upon him and took him with him.

The meeting between him and Booth need not be expatiated on. The Doctor was really angry; and tho' he deferred his lecture to a more proper opportunity, yet,

Digitized by Google

yet, as he was no diſſembler (indeed, he was incapable of any diſguiſe), he could not put on a ſhow of that heartineſs with which he had formerly uſed to receive his friend.

Booth at laſt began himſelf in the following manner: 'Doctor, I am really aſhamed to ſee you; and 'if you knew the confuſion of my ſoul on this occa- 'ſion, I am ſure you would pity rather than upbraid 'me—And yet I can ſay with great ſincerity, I rejoice 'in this laſt inſtance of my ſhame, ſince I am like to 'reap the moſt ſolid advantage from it.' The Doctor ſtared at this, and Booth thus proceeded: 'Since I 'have been in this wretched place, I have employed 'my time almoſt entirely in reading over a ſeries of 'ſermons which are contained in that book,' (meaning Dr Barrow's works, which then lay on the table before him), 'in proof of the Chriſtian religion; and 'ſo good an effect have they had upon me, that I ſhall, 'I believe, be the better man for them as long as I 'live. I have not a doubt (for I own I have had 'ſuch) which remains now unſatisfied.—If ever an 'angel might be thought to guide the pen of a wri- 'ter, ſurely the pen of that great and good man had 'ſuch an aſſiſtant.' The Doctor readily concurred in the praiſes of Dr Barrow, and added—'You ſay you 'have had your doubts, young gentleman; indeed, 'I did not know that—And pray, what were your 'doubts?' 'Whatever they were, Sir,' ſaid Booth, 'they are now ſatisfied, as I believe thoſe of every 'impartial and ſenſible reader will be, if he will, with 'due attention, read over theſe excellent ſermons.' 'Very well,' anſwered the Doctor, 'though I have 'converſed, I find, with a falſe brother hitherto, I 'am glad you are reconciled to truth at laſt, and I 'hope your future faith will have ſome influence on 'your future life.' 'I need not tell you, Sir,' replied Booth, 'that will always be the caſe where faith is 'ſincere, as I aſſure you mine is. Indeed, I never 'was a raſh diſbeliever; my chief doubt was founded 'on this, that as men appeared to me to act entirely 'from their paſſions, their actions could have neither 'merit nor demerit.' 'A very worthy concluſion truly,' cries

Digitized by Google

cries the Doctor; 'but if men act, as I believe they 'do, from their paſſions, it would be fair to conclude 'that religion to be true, which applies immediately 'to the ſtrongeſt of theſe paſſions, hope and fear, 'chuſing rather to rely on its rewards and puniſh-'ments, than on that native beauty of virtue which 'ſome of the ancient philoſophers thought proper to 'recommend to their diſciples.—But we will defer this 'diſcourſe till another opportunity; at preſent, as the 'devil hath thought proper to ſet you free, I will try 'if I can prevail on the bailiff to do the ſame.'

The Doctor had really not ſo much money in town as Booth's debt amounted to, and therefore, though he would otherwiſe very willingly have paid it, he was forced to give bail to the action. For which purpoſe, as the bailiff was a man of great form, he was obliged to get another perſon to be bound with him. This perſon, however, the attorney undertook to procure, and immediately ſet out in queſt of him.

During his abſence, the bailiff came into the room, and addreſſing himſelf to the Doctor, ſaid, 'I think, 'Sir, your name is Doctor Harriſon.' The Doctor immediately acknowledged his name. Indeed, the bailiff had ſeen it to a bail-bond before. 'Why then, 'Sir,' ſaid the bailiff, 'there is a man above, in a 'dying condition, that deſires the favour of ſpeaking 'to you; I believe he wants you to pray by him.'

The bailiff himſelf was not more ready to execute his office on all occaſions for his fee, than the Doctor was to execute his for nothing. Without making any further inquiry, therefore, into the condition of the man, he immediately went up ſtairs.

As ſoon as the Bailiff returned down ſtairs, which was immediately after he had lodged the Doctor in the room, Booth had the curioſity to aſk him who this man was. 'Why, I don't know much of him,' ſaid the bailiff. 'I had him once in cuſtody before now; I re-'member it was when your honour was here laſt; 'and now I remember too, he ſaid, then, he knew 'your honour very well. Indeed, I had ſome opi-'nion of him at that time; for he ſpent his mo-'ney very much like a gentleman; but I have 'diſcovered.

Digitized by Google

'discovered since, that he is a poor fellow, and 'worth nothing. He is a mere fly-cock, I have had 'the stuff about me this week, and could never get 'at him till this morning; nay, I don't believe we 'should ever have found out his lodgings, had it not 'been for the attorney that was here just now, who 'gave us information. And so we took him this 'morning by a comical way enough. For we dressed 'up one of my men in women's cloaths, who told the 'people of the house, that he was his sister just come 'to town: for we were told by the attorney, that he 'had such a sister, upon which he was let up stairs; 'and so kept the door a-jar till I and another rushed 'in. Let me tell you, Captain, there are as good strata-'gems made use of in our business as any in the army.'

'But pray, Sir,' said Booth, 'did not you tell me 'this morning, that the poor fellow was desperately 'wounded; nay, I think you told the Doctor that he 'was a dying man?'

'I had like to have forgot that,' cries the bailiff. '—Nothing would serve the gentleman but that he 'must make resistance, and he gave my man a blow 'with a stick; but I soon quieted him, by giving him 'a wipe or two with a hanger. Not that I believe I 'have done his business neither; but the fellow is 'faint-hearted, and the surgeon, I fancy, frightens 'him more than he need.——But however, let the 'worst come to the worst, the law is all on my side, 'and it is only *se fendendo*. The attorney that was 'here just now told me so, and bid me fear nothing: 'for that he should stand my friend, and undertake 'the cause; and he is a devilish good one at a de-'fence at the Old-Baily, I promise you. I have 'known him bring off several that every body thought 'would have been hanged.'

'But suppose you should be acquitted,' saith Booth, 'would not the blood of this poor wretch lie a little 'heavy at your heart?'

'Why should it, Captain?' said the bailiff. 'Is it 'not all done in a lawful way? why will people resist 'the law, when they know the consequences? To be 'sure, if a man was to kill another in an unlawful

'manner

'manner as it were, and what the law calls murder, 'that is quite and clear another thing. I should not 'care to be convicted of murder any more than an- 'other man. Why now, Captain, you have been 'abroad at the wars, they tell me, and to be sure must 'have killed men in your time. Pray, was you ever 'afterwards afraid of seeing their ghosts?'

'That is a different affair,' cries Booth; 'but I 'would not kill a man in cold blood for all the world.'

'There is no difference at all, as I can see,' cries the bailiff. 'One is as much in the way of business 'as the other. When gentlemen behave themselves 'like unto gentlemen, I know how to treat them as 'such, as well as any officer the king hath.——And 'when they do not, why they must take what follows; 'and the law doth not call it murder.'

Booth very plainly saw the bailiff had squared his conscience exactly according to law, and that he could not easily subvert his way of thinking. He therefore gave up the cause, and desired the bailiff to expedite the bonds, which he promised to do, saying, he hoped he had used him with proper civility this time, if he had not the last, and that he should be remembered for it.

But before we close this chapter, we shall endeavour to satisfy an enquiry which may arise in our most favourite readers (for so are the most curious) how it came to pass, that such a person as was Doctor Harrison should employ such a fellow as this Murphy.

The case then was thus: this Murphy had been clerk to an attorney in the very same town in which the Doctor lived, and when he was out of his time, had set up with a character fair enough, and had married a maid-servant of Mrs Harris, by which means he had all the business to which that lady and her friends, in which number was the Doctor, could recommend him.

Murphy went on with his business, and thrived very well, till he happened to make an unfortunate slip, in which he was detected by a brother of the same calling. But though we call this by the gentle name of a slip, in respect to its being so extremely common, it was a matter in which the law, if it had ever come to its

its ears, would have paſſed a very ſevere cenſure, being, indeed, no leſs than perjury and ſubornation of perjury.

This brother attorney being a very good-natured man, and unwilling to beſpatter his own profeſſion, and conſidering, perhaps, that the conſequence did in no wiſe affect the public, who had no manner of intereſt in the alternative, whether A, in whom the right was, or B, to whom Mr Murphy, by the means aforeſaid, had transferred it, ſucceeded in an action. We mention this particular, becauſe, as this brother attorney was a very violent party man, and a profeſſed ſtickler for the public, to ſuffer any injury to have been done to that, would have been highly inconſiſtent with his principles.

This gentleman, therefore, came to Mr Murphy, and after ſhewing him that he had it in his power to convict him of the aforeſaid crime, very generouſly told him that he had not the leaſt delight in binging any man to deſtruction, nor the leaſt animoſity againſt him. All that he inſiſted upon, was that he would not live in the ſame town or county with one who had been guilty of ſuch an action. He then told Mr Murphy that he would keep the ſecret on two conditions; the one was that he immediately quitted that county; the other was, that he ſhould convince him he deſerved his kindneſs by his gratitude, and that Murphy ſhould transfer to the other all the buſineſs which he then had in theſe parts, and to which he could poſſibly recommend him.

It is the obſervation of a very wiſe man, that it is a very common exerciſe of wiſdom in this world, of two evils to chuſe the leaſt. The reader therefore cannot doubt but that Mr Murphy complied with the alternative propoſed by his kind brother, and accepted the terms on which ſecrecy was to be obtained.

This happened while the Doctor was abroad; and with all this, except the departure of Mr Murphy; not only the Doctor, but the whole town (ſave his aforeſaid brother alone) were to this day unacquainted.

The

Digitized by Google

The Doctor, at his return, hearing that Mr Murphy was gone, applied to the other attorney in his affairs, who ſtill employed this Murphy as his agent in town, partly perhaps out of good will to him, and partly from the recommendation of Miſs Harris; for as he had married a ſervant of the family, and a particular favourite of her's, there can be no wonder that ſhe, who was entirely ignorant of the affair above related, as well as of his conduct in town, ſhould continue her favour to him. It will appear therefore, I apprehend, no longer ſtrange, that the Doctor, who had ſeen this man but three times ſince his removal to town, and then converſed with him only on buſineſs, ſhould remain as ignorant of his life and character, as a man generally is of the character of the hackney-coachman who drives him. Nor doth it reflect more on the honour or underſtanding of the Doctor under theſe circumſtances to employ Murphy, than it would if he had been driven about the town by a thief or a murderer.

CHAP. VI.

What paſſed between the Doctor and the ſick man.

WE left the Doctor in the laſt chapter with the wounded man, to whom the Doctor, in a very gentle voice, ſpoke as follows:

'I am ſorry, friend, to ſee you in this ſituation, 'and I am very ready to give you any comfort or 'aſſiſtance within my power.'

'I thank you kindly, Doctor,' ſaid the man. 'Indeed, I ſhould not have preſumed to have ſent to 'you, had I not known your character; for though 'I believe I am not at all known to you, I have lived 'many years in that town where you yourſelf had a 'houſe; my name is Robiſon. I uſed to write for 'the attornies in thoſe parts, and I have been em-'ployed on your buſineſs in my time.'

'I do not recollect you, nor your name,' ſaid the Doctor; 'but conſider, friend, your moments are 'precious, and your buſineſs, as I am informed, is

Digitized by Google

'to offer up your prayers to that Great Being, before 'whom you are shortly to appear.—But first, let me 'exhort you earnestly to a most serious repentance of 'all your sins.'

'Oh! Doctor,' said the man—'Pray, what is your 'opinion of a death-bed repentance?'

'If repentance is sincere,' cries the Doctor, 'I 'hope, through the mercies and merits of our most 'powerful and benign Intercessor, it will never come 'too late.'

'But do not you think, Sir,' cries the man, 'that, in 'order to obtain forgiveness of any great sin we have 'committed by an injury done to our neighbours, it 'is necessary, as far as in us lyes, to make all the 'amends we can to the party injured, and to undo, 'if possible, the injury we have done?'

'Most undoubtedly,' cries the Doctor; 'our pre-'tence to repentance would otherwise be gross hypo-'crisy, and an impudent attempt to deceive and im-'pose upon our Creator himself.'

'Indeed, I am of the same opinion,' cries the peni-tent; 'and I think further, that this is thrown in 'my way, and hinted to me by that Great Being; for 'an accident happened to me yesterday, by which, as 'things have fallen out since, I think I plainly discern 'the hand of Providence. I went yesterday, Sir, you 'must know, to a pawn-broker's, to pawn the last 'moveable, which, except the poor cloaths you see 'on my back, I am worth in the world. While I was 'there a young lady came in to pawn her picture. She 'had disguised herself so much, and pulled her hood 'so over her face, that I did not know her while she 'staid, which was scarce three minutes. As soon as 'she was gone, the pawn-broker, taking the picture in 'his hand, cried out—*Upon my word, this is the hand-'somest face I ever saw in my life.* I desired him to let 'me look on the picture, which he readily did—and 'I no sooner cast my eyes upon it, than the strong 'resemblance struck me, and I knew it to be Mrs 'Booth.'

'Mrs Booth! what Mrs Booth?' cries the Doctor.

Digitized by Google

'Captain Booth's lady, the Captain who is now below,' said the other.

'How!' cries the Doctor with great impetuosity.

'Have patience,' said the man, 'and you shall hear all. I expressed some surprise to the pawnbroker, and asked the lady's name. He answered, that he knew not her name, but that she was some undone wretch, who had the day before left all her cloaths with him in pawns. My guilt immediately flew in my face, and told me I had been accessary to this lady's undoing. The sudden shock so affected me, that, had it not been for a dram which the pawn-broker gave me, I believe I should have sunk on the spot.

'Accessary to her undoing? how accessary?' said the Doctor, 'Pray tell me; for I am impatient to hear.'

'I will tell you all as fast as I can,' cries the sick man. 'You know, good Doctor, that Mrs Harris of our town had two daughters, this Mrs Booth and another. Now, Sir, it seems the other daughter had, some way or other, disobliged her mother, a little before the old lady died: therefore she made a will, and left all her fortune, except one thousand pound, to Mrs Booth; to which will, Mr Murphy, myself, and another, who is now dead, were the witnesses. Mrs Harris afterwards died suddenly; upon which it was contrived, by her other daughter and Mr Murphy, to make a new will, in which Mrs Booth had a legacy of ten pound, and all the rest was given to the other. To this will, Murphy, myself, and the same third person, again set our hands.'

'Good Heaven! how wonderful is thy providence!' cries the Doctor——'Murphy! say you?'

'Ay, himself, Sir,' answered Robinson; 'Murphy, who is the greatest rogue, I believe, now in the world.'

'Pray, Sir, proceed,' cries the Doctor.

'For this service, Sir,' said Robinson, 'myself and the third person, one Carter, received two hundred pound each. What reward Murphy himself had, I know

Digitized by Google

'know not. Carter died soon afterwards; and from 'that time, at several payments, I have by threats extorted above a hundred pound more.—And this, 'Sir, is the whole truth, which I am ready to testify, 'if it would please Heaven to prolong my life.'

'I hope it will,' cries the Doctor; 'but something 'must be done for fear of accidents—I will send to 'counsel immediately, to know how to secure your 'testimony.—Whom can I get to send?——Stay, ay, 'he will do——but I know not where his house or his 'chambers are——I will go myself——but I may be 'wanted here.'

While the Doctor was in this violent agitation, the surgeon made his appearance. The Doctor stood still in a meditating posture, while the surgeon examined his patient. After which the Doctor begged him to declare his opinion, and whether he thought the wounded man in any immediate danger of death. 'I do not know,' answered the surgeon, 'what you 'call immediate. He may live several days——nay, 'he may recover. It is impossible to give any certain 'opinion in these cases.' He then launched forth into a set of terms, which the Doctor, with all his scholarship, could not understand. To say the truth, many of them were not to be found in any dictionary or lexicon.

One discovery however the Doctor made; and that was, that the surgeon was a very ignorant, conceited fellow, and knew nothing of his profession. He resolved therefore to get better advice for the sick; but this he postponed at present, and applying himself to the surgeon, said he should be very much obliged to him, if he knew where to find such a counsellor, and would fetch him thither. 'I should not ask such a 'favour of you, Sir,' says the Doctor, 'if it was not 'on business of the last importance, or if I could find 'any other messenger.'

'I fetch, Sir!' said the surgeon very angrily. 'Do 'you take me for a footman, or a porter? I don't 'know who you are; but I believe you are full as 'proper to go on such an errand as I am.' (For as the Doctor, who was just come off his journey, was

Digitized by Google

very roughly dreſſed, the ſurgeon held him in no great reſpect.) The ſurgeon then called aloud from the top of the ſtairs, 'Let my coachman draw up,' and ſtrutted off without any ceremony, telling his patient he would call again the next day.

At this very inſtant arrived Murphy with the other bail, and finding Booth alone, he aſked the bailiff at the door, what was become of the Doctor. 'Why, 'the Doctor,' anſwered he, 'is above ſtairs, praying 'with———' 'How!' cries Murphy, 'how came 'you not to carry him directly to Newgate, as you 'promiſed me?' 'Why, becauſe he was wounded,' cries the bailiff. 'I thought it was charity to take 'care of him; and beſides, why ſhould one make 'more noiſe about the matter than is neceſſary?' 'And 'Dr Harriſon with him?' ſaid Murphy. 'Yes, he is,' ſaid the Bailiff; 'he deſired to ſpeak with the Doc-'tor very much, and they have been praying together 'almoſt this hour.'—'All is up, and undone,' cries Murphy. 'Let me come by, I have thought of ſome-'thing which I muſt do immediately.'

Now, as by means of the ſurgeon's leaving the door open, the Doctor heard Murphy's voice naming Robinſon peeviſhly, he drew ſoftly to the top of the ſtairs, where he heard the foregoing dialogue; and as ſoon as Murphy had uttered his laſt words, and was moving downwards, the Doctor immediately ſallied from his poſt, running as faſt as he could, and crying, 'Stop 'the villain, ſtop the thief.'

The attorney wanted no better hint to accelerate his pace; and having the ſtart of the Doctor, got down ſtairs, and out into the ſtreet; but the Doctor was ſo cloſe at his heels, and being in foot the nimbler of the two, he ſoon overtook him, and laid hold of him, as he would have done on either Broughton or Slack in the ſame cauſe.

This action in the ſtreet, accompanied with the frequent cry of, 'Stop thief,' by the Doctor, during the chace, preſently drew together a large mob, who began, as is uſual, to enter immediately upon buſineſs, and to make ſtrict enquiry into the matter, in order to proceed to juſtice in their ſummary way.

Murphy,

Digitized by Google

Murphy, who knew well the temper of the mob, cried out, 'If you are a bailiff, ſhew me your writ: 'Gentlemen, he pretends to arreſt me here without a 'writ.'

Upon this, one of the ſturdieſt and forwardeſt of the mob, and who, by a ſuperior ſtrength of body and of lungs, preſided in this aſſembly, declared he would ſuffer no ſuch thing. 'D—n me,' ſays he, 'away to 'the pump with the catchpole directly—ſhew me your 'writ, or let the gentleman go—you ſhall not arreſt 'a man contrary to law.'

He then laid his hands on the Doctor, who ſtill faſt gripping the attorney, cried out: 'He is a villain—— 'I am no bailiff, but a clergyman; and this lawyer is 'guilty of forgery, and hath ruined a poor family.'

'How!' cries the ſpokeſman——'a lawyer! that 'alters the caſe.'

'Yes, faith,' cries another of the mob, 'it is Law- 'yer Murphy. I know him very well.'

'And hath he ruined a poor family? like enough, 'faith, if he's a lawyer——Away with him to the 'Juſtice immediately.'

The Bailiff now came up, deſiring to know what was the matter; to whom Dr Harriſon anſwered, that he had arreſted that villain for forgery. 'How can 'you arreſt him?' cries the Bailiff, 'you are no offi- 'cer, nor have any warrant: Mr Murphy is a gentle- 'man, and he ſhall be uſed as ſuch.'

'Nay, to be ſure,' cries the ſpokeſman, 'there ought 'to be a warrant, that's the truth on't.'

'There needs no warrant,' cries the Doctor. 'I 'accuſe him of felony; and I know ſo much of the 'law of England, that any man may arreſt a felon 'without any warrant whatever. This villain hath 'undone a poor family; and I will die on the ſpot 'before I part with him.'

'If the law be ſo,' cries the orator, 'that is an- 'other matter. And to be ſure, to ruin a poor man 'is the greateſt of ſins. And being a lawyer too, makes 'it ſo much the worſe——He ſhall go before the

Digitized by Google

'Juſtice, d—n me, if he ſhan't go before the Juſtice. 'I ſays the word, he ſhall.'

'I ſay he is a gentleman, and ſhall be uſed accord-'ing to law,' cries the Bailiff. 'And though you are 'a clergyman,' ſaid he to Harriſon, 'you don't ſhew 'yourſelf as one by your actions.'

'That's a Bailiff,' cries one of the mob—'one law-'yer will always ſtand by another; but I think the 'clergyman is a very good man, and acts becoming 'a clergyman to ſtand by the poor.'

At which words the mob all gave a great ſhout, and ſeveral cried out; 'Bring him along; away with him 'to the Juſtice.'

And now a conſtable appeared, and with an authoritative voice declared what he was, produced his ſtaff, and demanded the peace.

The Doctor then delivered his priſoner over to the officer, and charged him with felony; the conſtable received him, the attorney ſubmitted; the Bailiff was huſhed; and the waves of the mob immediately ſubſided.

The Doctor now balanced with himſelf how he ſhould proceed; at laſt he determined to leave Booth a little longer in captivity, and not quit ſight of Murphy, before he had lodged him ſafe with a magiſtrate. They then all moved forwards to the Juſtice; the Conſtable and his priſoner marching firſt, the Doctor and the Bailiff following next, and about five thouſand mob (for no leſs number were aſſembled in a very few minutes) following in the proceſſion.

They found the magiſtrate juſt ſitting down to his dinner; however, when he was acquainted with the Doctor's profeſſion, he immediately admitted him and heard his buſineſs. Which he no ſooner perfectly underſtood, with all its circumſtances, than he reſolved, though it was then very late, and he had been fatigued all the morning with public buſineſs, to poſtpone all refreſhment till he had diſcharged his duty. He accordingly adjourned the priſoner and his cauſe to the Bailiff's houſe, whither he himſelf with the Doctor immediately repaired, and whither the attorney was followed

Digitized by Google

lowed by a much larger number of attendants than he had been honoured with before.

CHAP. VII.

In which the history draws towards a conclusion.

NOTHING could exceed the astonishment of Booth at the behaviour of the Doctor, at the time when he sallied forth in pursuit of the attorney; for which it was so impossible for him to account in any manner whatever. He remained a long time in the utmost torture of mind, till at last the Bailiff's wife came to him, and asked him, if the Doctor was not a madman; and in truth he could hardly defend him from that imputation.

While he was in this perplexity, the maid of the house brought him a message from Robinson, desiring the favour of seeing him above stairs. With this he immediately complied.

When these two were alone together, and the key turned on them, (for the Bailiff's wife was a most careful person, and never omitted that ceremony in the absence of her husband, having always at her tongue's end that excellent proverb of 'safe bind, safe find.') Robinson looking stedfastly on Booth, said, 'I believe, Sir, you scarce remember me.'

Booth answered, that he thought he had seen his face somewhere before; but could not then recollect when or where.

'Indeed, Sir,' answered the man, 'it was a place 'which no man can remember with pleasure. But 'do you not remember, a few weeks ago, that you had 'the misfortune to be in a certain prison in this town, 'where you lost a trifling sum at cards to a fellow-'prisoner?'

This hint sufficiently awakened Booth's memory, and he now recollected the features of his old friend Robinson. He answered him a little surlily, 'I 'know you now very well; but I did not imagine 'you would ever have reminded me of that transac-'tion.'

'Alas,

Digitized by Google

'Alas, Sir!' anſwered Robinſon, 'whatever happened then was very trifling, compared to the injuries I have done you; but if my life be ſpared long enough, I will now undo it all! and as I have been one of your worſt enemies, I will now be one of your beſt friends.'

He was juſt entering upon his ſtory, when a noiſe was heard below, which might be almoſt compared to what hath been heard in Holland, when the dykes have given way, and the ocean in an inundation breaks in upon the land. It ſeemed indeed as if the whole world was burſting into the houſe at once.

Booth was a man of great firmneſs of mind, and he had need of it all at this inſtant. As for poor Robinſon, the uſual concomitants of guilt attended him, and he began to tremble in a violent manner.

The firſt perſon who aſcended the ſtairs was the Doctor, who no ſooner ſaw Booth than he ran to him and embraced him, crying, 'My child, I wiſh you joy with all my heart. Your ſufferings are all at an end; and Providence hath done you the juſtice at laſt, which it will one day or other render to all men.---You will hear all preſently; but I can now only tell you, that your ſiſter is diſcovered, and the eſtate is your own.'

Booth was in ſuch confuſion, that he ſcarce made any anſwer; and now appeared the Juſtice and his clerk, and immediately afterwards the Conſtable with his priſoner, the Bailiff, and as many more as could poſſibly crowd up ſtairs.

The Doctor now addreſſed himſelf to the ſick man, and deſired him to repeat the ſame information before the Juſtice which he had made already; to which Robinſon readily conſented.

While the Clerk was taking down the information, the Attorney expreſſed a very impatient deſire to ſend inſtantly for his clerk; and expreſſed ſo much uneaſineſs at the confuſion in which he had left his papers at home, that a thought ſuggeſted itſelf to the Doctor, that, if his houſe was ſearched, ſome lights, and evidence, relating to this affair, would certainly be found;

Digitized by Google

found; he therefore desired the Justice to grant a search-warrant immediately to search his house.

The Justice answered, that he had no such power. That if there was any suspicion of stolen goods, he could grant a warrant to search for them.

'How, Sir!' said the Doctor, 'can you grant a 'warrant to search a man's house for a silver tea-'spoon, and not in a case like this, where a man is 'robbed of his whole estate?'

'Hold, Sir!' says the sick man, 'I believe I can 'answer that point; for I can swear he hath several 'title-deeds of the estate now in his possession, which 'I am sure were stolen from the right owner.'

The Justice still hesitated. He said title-deeds savoured of the reality, and it was not felony to steal them. If, indeed, they were taken away in a box, then it would be felony to steal the box.

'Savour of the reality! savour of the fartality,' said the Doctor. 'I never heard such incomprehensible 'nonsense. This is impudent, as well as childish, 'trifling with the lives and properties of men.'

'Well, Sir,' said Robinson, 'I now am sure I can 'do his business; for I know he hath a silver cup in 'his possession, which is the property of this gentle-'man (meaning Booth;) and how he got it but by 'stealth, let him account if he can.'

'That will do,' cries the Justice, with great pleasure. 'That will do; and if you will charge him on oath 'with that, I will instantly grant my warrant to search 'his house for it.' 'And I will go and see it executed,' cries the Doctor: for it was a maxim of his, that no man could descend below himself in doing any act which may contribute to protect an innocent person, or to bring a rogue to the gallows.

The oath was instantly taken, the warrant signed, and the Doctor attended the Constable in the execution of it.

The clerk then proceeded in taking the information of Robinson, and had just finished it, when the Doctor returned with the utmost joy in his countenance, and declared that he had sufficient evidence of the fact in his possession. He had indeed two or three letters from

Digitized by Google

from Miss Harris, in answer to the Attorney's frequent demands of money for secrecy, that fully explained the whole villainy.

The Justice now asked the prisoner what he had to say for himself, or whether he chose to say any thing in his own defence.

'Sir,' said the Attorney with great confidence, 'I 'am not to defend myself here. It will be of no ser- 'vice to me; for I know you neither can nor will dis- 'charge me. But I am extremely innocent of all 'this matter, as I doubt not but to make appear to 'the satisfaction of a court of justice.'

The legal previous ceremonies were then gone through of binding over the prosecutor, &c. and then the Attorney was committed to Newgate; whither he was escorted amidst the acclamations of the populace.

When Murphy was departed, and a little calm restored in the house, the Justice made his compliments of congratulation to Booth; who, as well as he could in his present tumult of joy, returned his thanks to both the Magistrate and Doctor. They were now all preparing to depart, when Mr Bondum stepped up to Booth, and said: 'Hold, Sir, you have forgot 'one thing—you have not given bail yet.'

This occasioned some distress at this time; for the Attorney's friend was departed; but when the Justice heard this, he immediately offered himself as the other bondsman; and thus ended the affair.

It was now past six o'clock, and none of the gentlemen had yet dined. They very readily therefore accepted the Magistrate's invitation, and went all together to his house.

And now the very first thing that was done, even before they sat down to dinner, was to dispatch a messenger to one of the best surgeons in town, to take care of Robinson; and another messenger to Booth's lodgings, to prevent Amelia's concern at their staying so long.

The latter however was to little purpose; for Amelia's patience had been worn out before, and she had taken a hackney-coach, and driven to the Bailiff's, where

Digitized by Google

where ſhe arrived a little after the departure of her huſband, and was thence directed to the Juſtice's.

Though there was no kind of reaſon for Amelia's fright at hearing that her huſband and Doctor Harriſon were gone before the Juſtice; and though ſhe indeed imagined that they were there in the light of complainants, not of offenders; yet ſo tender were her fears for her huſband, and ſo much had her gentle ſpirits been lately agitated, that ſhe had a thouſand apprehenſions of ſhe knew not what. When ſhe arrived therefore at the houſe, ſhe ran directly into the room, where all the company were at dinner, ſcarce knowing what ſhe did, or whither ſhe was going.

She found her huſband in ſuch a ſituation, and diſcovered ſuch chearfulneſs in his countenance, that ſo violent a turn was given to her ſpirits, that ſhe was juſt able, with the aſſiſtance of a glaſs of water, to ſupport herſelf. She ſoon however recovered her calmneſs, and in a little time began to eat what might indeed be almoſt called her breakfaſt.

The Juſtice now wiſhed her joy of what had happened that day; for which ſhe kindly thanked him, apprehending he meant the liberty of her huſband. His Worſhip might perhaps have explained himſelf more largely, had not the Doctor given him a timely wink; for this wiſe and good man was fearful of making ſuch a diſcovery all at once to Amelia, leſt it ſhould overpower her; and luckily the Juſtice's wife was not well enough acquainted with the matter to ſay any thing more on it than barely to aſſure the lady that ſhe joined in her huſband's congratulation.

Amelia was then in a clean white gown, which ſhe had that day redeemed, and was, indeed, dreſſed all over with great neatneſs and exactneſs: with the glow therefore which aroſe in her features from finding her huſband releaſed from his captivity, ſhe made ſo charming a figure, that ſhe attracted the eyes of the magiſtrate and of his wife; and they both agreed, when they were alone, that they had never ſeen ſo charming a creature; nay, Booth himſelf afterwards told her, that he ſcarce ever remembered her to look ſo extremely beautiful as ſhe did that evening.

Digitized by Google

Whether Amelia's beauty, or the reflection on the remarkable act of juſtice he had performed, or whatever motive filled the magiſtrate with extraordinary good-humour, and opened his heart and cellars, I will not determine; but he gave them ſo hearty a welcome, and they were all ſo pleaſed with each other, that Amelia, for that one night, truſted the care of her children to the woman where they lodged, nor did the company riſe from table till the clock ſtruck eleven.

They then ſeparated. Amelia and Booth, having been ſet down at their lodgings, retired into each other's arms; nor did Booth that evening, by the Doctor's advice, mention one word of the grand affair to his wife.

CHAP. VIII.

Thus this hiſtory draws nearer to a concluſion.

IN the morning early Amelia received the following letter from Mrs Atkinſon.

" THE ſurgeon of the rigiment, to which the Captain my huſband lately belonged, and who came this evening to ſee the Captain, hath almoſt frighted me out of my wits, by a ſtrange ſtory of your huſband being committed to priſon by a juſtice of peace for forgery. For Heaven's ſake, ſend me the truth. If my huſband can be of any ſervice, weak as he is, he will be carried in a chair to ſerve a brother officer, for whom he hath a regard, which I need not mention: Or if the ſum of twenty pound will be of any ſervice to you, I will wait upon you with it the moment I can get my cloaths on, the morning you receive this; for it is too late to ſend to-night. The Captain begs his hearty ſervice and reſpects, and believe me,

" Dear Madam,

" Your ever affectionate friend,

" and humble ſervant,

" F. ATKINSON."

Digitized by Google

When Amelia read this letter to Booth, they were both equally ſurpriſed, ſhe at the commitment for forgery, and he at ſeeing ſuch a letter from Mrs Atkinſon; for he was a ſtranger yet to the reconciliation that had happened.

Booth's doubts were firſt ſatisfied by Amelia, from which he received great pleaſure; for he really had a very great affection and fondneſs for Mr Atkinſon, who, indeed, ſo well deſerved it. 'Well, my dear,' ſaid he to Amelia, ſmiling, 'ſhall we accept this gene-'rous offer?'

'O fy! no certainly,' anſwered ſhe.

'Why not,' cries Booth, 'it is but a trifle; and 'yet it will be of great ſervice to us.'

'But conſider, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'how ill theſe 'poor people can ſpare it.'

'They can ſpare it for a little while,' ſaid Booth; 'and we ſhall ſoon pay it them again.'

'When, my dear?' ſaid Amelia. 'Do, my dear 'Will, conſider our wretched circumſtances. I beg 'you let us go into the country immediately, and 'live upon bread and water, till Fortune pleaſes to 'ſmile upon us.'

'I am convinced that day is not far off,' ſaid Booth. 'However, give me leave to ſend an anſwer to Mrs 'Atkinſon, that we ſhall be glad of her company im-'mediately to breakfaſt.'

'You know I never contradict you,' ſaid ſhe; 'but 'I aſſure you it is contrary to my inclinations to take 'this money.'

'Well, ſuffer me,' cries he, 'to act this once con-'trary to your inclinations.' He then writ a ſhort note to Mrs Atkinſon, and diſpatched it away immediately; which when he had done, Amelia ſaid, I 'ſhall be glad of Mrs Atkinſon's company to break-'faſt; but yet I wiſh you would oblige me in refuſing 'this money. Take five guineas only. That is in-'deed ſuch a ſum, as, if we never ſhould pay it, would 'ſit light on my mind. The laſt perſons in the world 'from whom I would receive favours of that ſort, are 'the poor and generous.'

Digitized by Google

'You can receive favours only from the generous,' cries Booth: 'and to be plain with you, there are 'very few who are generous that are not poor.'

'What think you,' said she, 'of Doctor Harrison?'

'I do assure you,' said Booth, 'he is far from being rich. The Doctor hath an income of little more 'than six hundred pound a-year; and I am convinced 'he gives away four of it. Indeed, he is one of the 'best œconomists in the world; but yet I am positive 'he never was at any time possessed of five hundred 'pound since he hath been a man. Consider, dear 'Emily, the late obligations we have to this gentleman; it would be unreasonable to expect more, at 'least at present; my half-pay is mortgaged for a 'year to come.—How then shall we live?'

'By our labour,' answered she: 'I am able to labour, and I am sure I am not ashamed of it?'

'And do you really think you can support such a 'life!'

'I am sure I could be happy in it,' answered Amelia. 'And why not I, as well as a thousand others, 'who have not the happiness of such a husband to 'make life delicious? why should I complain of my 'hard fate, while so many, who are much poorer 'than I, enjoy theirs? Am I of a superior rank of 'being to the wife of the honest labourer? am I not 'partaker of one common nature with her?'

'My angel,' cried Booth, 'it delights me to hear 'you talk thus, and for a reason you little guess; 'for I am assured, that one who can so heroically endure adversity, will bear prosperity with equal 'greatness of soul; for the mind that cannot be dejected by the former, is not likely to be transported 'with the latter.'

'If it had pleased Heaven,' cried she, 'to have 'tried me, I think, at least I hope, I should have preserved my humility.'

'Then, my dear,' said he, 'I will relate you a 'dream I had last night. You know you lately mentioned a dream of yours.'

'Do so,' said she, 'I am attentive.'

Digitized by Google

'I dreamed,' said he, 'this night, that we were in 'the most miserable situation imaginable. Indeed, 'in the situation we were yesterday morning, or ra- 'ther worse; that I was laid in a prison for debt, and 'that you wanted a morsel of bread to feed the mouths 'of your hungry children. At length (for nothing 'you know is quicker than the transition in dreams) 'Dr Harrison, methought, came to me, with chearful- 'ness and joy in his countenance. The prison doors 'immediately flew open; and Dr Harrison introdu- 'ced you, gayly though not richly dressed. That 'you gently chid me for staying too long; all on a 'sudden appeared a coach with four horses to it, in 'which was a maid servant with our two children. 'We both immediately went into the coach, and ta- 'king our leave of the Doctor, set out towards your 'country house: for yours I dreamed it was.—I on- 'ly ask you now, if this was real, and the transition 'almost as sudden, could you support it?'—

Amelia was going to answer, when Mrs Atkinson came into the room, and after very little previous ceremony presented Booth with a bank-note, which he received of her, saying, He would very soon repay it: a promise that a little offended Amelia, as she thought he had no chance of keeping it.

The Doctor presently arrived, and the company sat down to breakfast, during which Mrs Atkinson entertained them with the history of the doctors that had attended her husband, by whose advice Atkinson was recovered from every thing but the weakness which his distemper had occasioned.

When the tea-table was removed, Booth told the Doctor that he had acquainted his wife with a dream he had last night. 'I dreamed, Doctor,' said he, 'that she was restored to her estate.'

'Very well,' said the Doctor; 'and if I am to be 'the Oniropolis, I believe the dream will come to 'pass. To say the truth, I have rather a better opi- 'nion of dreams than Horace had. Old Homer 'says, they come from Jupiter; and as to your dream, 'I have often had it in my waking thoughts, that 'some time or other that roguery (for so I was always

Digitized by Google

'convinced it was) would be brought to light: for 'the same Homer says, as you, Madam, (meaning 'Mrs Atkinson) very well know,

Εἴπερ γάρ τε ϗ αὐτὸς Ὀλύμπιος ὐκ ἐτέλεσσεν,
Ἐκ τε ϗ ὀψὲ τελεῖ· σὺν τε μεγάλῳ ἀπέτισαν
Σὺν σῇσιν κεφαλῆσι, γυναιξί τε ϗ τεκέεσσιν *.

'I have no Greek ears, Sir,' said Mrs Atkinson, 'I believe I could understand it in the Delphin 'Homer.'

'I wish,' cries he, 'my dear child, (to Amelia) 'you would read a little in the Delphin Aristotle, or 'else in some Christian divine, to learn a doctrine 'which you will one day have an use for. I mean, to 'bear the hardest of all human conflicts, and support 'with an even temper, and without any violent trans-'ports of mind, a sudden gust of prosperity.'

'Indeed,' cries Amelia, 'I should almost think 'my husband and you, Doctor, had some very good 'news to tell me, by your using, both of you, the 'same introduction. As far as I know myself, I think 'I can answer. I can support any degree of prospe-'rity; and I think I yesterday shewed I could: for I 'do assure you, it is not in the power of Fortune to 'try me with such another transition from grief to 'joy, as I conceived from seeing my husband in pri-'son and at liberty.'

'Well, you are a good girl,' cries the Doctor, 'and 'after I have put on my spectacles I will try you.'

The Doctor then took out a newspaper, and read as follows:

"Yesterday one Murphy, an eminent attorney at "law, was committed to Newgate for the forgery of "a will under which an estate hath been for many "years detained from the right owner.'

'Now in this paragraph there is something very re-'markable, and that is—— that it is true: but *opus est*

* "If Jupiter doth not immediately execute his vengeance, "he will however execute it at last; and their transgressions "shall fall heavily on their own heads, and on their wives and "children."

'*explanatum*.

Digitized by Google

'*explanatum*. In the Delphin edition of this newſpaper 'there is the following note upon the words *right owner*: 'The right owner of this eſtate is a young lady of the 'higheſt merit, whoſe maiden name was Harris, and 'who ſometime ſince was married to an idle fellow, 'one Lieutenant Booth. And the beſt hiſtorians aſ'ſure us, that letters from the elder ſiſter of this lady, 'which manifeſtly prove the forgery, and clear up 'the whole affair, are in the hands of an old parſon, 'called Dr Harriſon.'

'And is this really true?' cries Amelia.

'Yes, really, and ſincerely,' cries the Doctor. 'The whole eſtate: for your mother left it you all, 'and is as ſurely yours, as if you was already in poſ'ſeſſion.'

'Gracious Heaven,' cries ſhe, falling on her knees, 'I thank you.'——And then ſtarting up, ſhe ran to her huſband, and embracing him, cried, 'My 'dear love, I wiſh you joy; and I ought in gratitude 'to wiſh it you: for you are the cauſe of mine. It 'is upon your's and my children's account, that I 'principally rejoice.'

Mrs Atkinſon roſe from her chair, and jumped about the room for joy, repeating,

Turne, quod optanti divûm promittere nemo
Auderet, volvenda dies, en, attulit ultro *.

Amelia now threw herſelf into a chair, complained ſhe was a little faint, and begged a glaſs of water. The Doctor adviſed her to be blooded; but ſhe refuſed, ſaying, ſhe required a vent of another kind.—— —— She then deſired her children to be brought to her, whom ſhe immediately caught in her arms, and having profuſely cried over them for ſeveral minutes, declared ſhe was eaſy. After which, ſhe ſoon regained her uſual temper and complexion.

That day they dined together, and in the afternoon they all, except the Doctor, viſited Captain Atkinſon;

* "What none of all the Gods could grant thy vows,
"That, Turnus, this auſpicious day beſtows."

he repaired to the Bailiff's house to visit the sick man, whom he found very chearful, the surgeon having assured him that he was in no manner of danger.

The Doctor had a long spiritual discourse with Robinson, who assured him that he sincerely repented of his past life: that he was resolved to lead his future days in a different manner, and to make what amends he could for his sins to the society, by bringing one of the greatest rogues in it to justice. There was a circumstance which much pleased the Doctor, and made him conclude that, however Robinson had been corrupted by his old master, he had naturally a good disposition. This was, that Robinson declared he was chiefly induced to the discovery by what had happened at the pawn-broker's, and by the miseries which he there perceived he had been instrumental in bringing on Booth and his family.

The next day Booth and his wife, at the Doctor's instance, dined with Colonel James and his Lady, where they were received with great civility, and all matters were accommodated, without Booth ever knowing a syllable of the challenge even to this day.

The Doctor insisted very strongly on having Miss Harris taken into custody, and said, if she was his sister, he would deliver her to justice. He added besides, that it was impossible to skreen her, and carry on the prosecution, or, indeed, recover the estate. Amelia at last begged the delay of one day only, in which time she wrote a letter to her sister, informing her of the discovery, and the danger in which she stood, and begged her earnestly to make her escape, with many assurances that she would never suffer her to know any distress. This letter she sent away express, and it had the desired effect: for Miss Harris, having received sufficient information from the attorney to the same purpose, immediately set out for Pool, and from thence to France, carrying with her all her money, most of her cloaths, and some few jewels. She had, indeed, packed up plate and jewels to the value of two thousand pound and upwards. But Booth, to whom Amelia communicated the letter, prevented her, by ordering the man that went with the

Digitized by Google

the expreſs (who had been a ſerjeant in the foot guards, recommended to him by Atkinſon) to ſuffer the lady to go whither ſhe pleaſed, but not to take any thing with her except her cloaths, which he was carefully to ſearch. Theſe orders were obeyed punctually, and with theſe ſhe was obliged to comply.

Two days after the bird was flown, a warrant from the Lord Chief Juſtice arrived to take her up, the meſſenger of which returned with the news of her flight, highly to the ſatisfaction of Amelia, and conſequently of Booth, and, indeed, not greatly to the grief of the Doctor.

About a week afterwards, Booth and Amelia, with their children, and Captain Atkinſon and his lady, all ſet forwards together for Amelia's houſe, where they arrived amidſt the acclamations of all the neighbours, and every public demonſtration of joy.

They found the houſe ready prepared to receive them by Atkinſon's friend, the old ſerjeant, and a good dinner prepared for them by Amelia's old nurſe, who was addreſſed with the utmoſt duty by her ſon and daughter, moſt affectionately careſſed by Booth and his wife, and by Amelia's abſolute command ſeated next to herſelf at the table: at which, perhaps, were aſſembled ſome of the beſt and happieſt people then in the world.

CHAP. IX.

In which the hiſtory is concluded.

HAVING brought our hiſtory to a concluſion, as to thoſe points in which we preſume our reader was chiefly intereſted, in the foregoing chapter, we ſhall in this, by way of epilogue, endeavour to ſatisfy his curioſity, as to what hath ſince happened to the principal perſonages of whom we have treated in the foregoing pages.

Colonel James and his lady, after living in a polite manner for many years together, at laſt agreed to live in as polite a manner aſunder. The Colonel hath kept Miſs Matthews ever ſince, and is at length grown to

Digitized by Google

to doat on her (though now very disagreeable in her person, and immensely fat) to such a degree, that he submits to be treated by her in the most tyrannical manner.

He allows his lady eight hundred pounds a-year, with which she divides her time between Tunbridge, Bath, and London, and passes about nine hours in the twenty-four at cards. Her income is lately increased by three thousand pounds left her by her brother Colonel Bath, who was killed in a duel about six years ago, by a gentleman who told the Colonel he differed from him in opinion.

The noble peer and Mrs Ellison have been both dead several years, and both of the consequences of their favourite vices; Mrs Ellison having fallen a martyr to her liquor, and the other to his amours, by which he was at last become so rotten, that he stunk above ground.

The attorney, Murphy, was brought to his trial at the Old-Baily; where, after much quibbling about the meaning of a very plain act of parliament, he was at length convicted of forgery, and was soon afterwards hanged at Tyburn.

The witness for some time seemed to reform his life, and received a small pension from Booth; after which he returned to vicious courses, took a purse on the highway, was detected and taken, and followed the last steps of his old master. So apt are men, whose manners have been once thoroughly corrupted, to return, from any dawn of an amendment, into the dark paths of vice.

As to Miss Harris, she lived three years with a broken heart at Boulogne, where she received annually fifty pounds from her sister, who was hardly prevailed on by Doctor Harrison not to send her a hundred, and then died in a most miserable manner.

Mr Atkinson, upon the whole, hath led a very happy life with his wife, though he hath been sometimes obliged to pay proper homage to her superior understanding and knowledge. This, however, he chearfully submits to, and she makes him proper returns of fondness. They have two fine boys, of whom they are equally

Digitized by Google

equally fond. He is lately advanced to the rank of captain, and laſt ſummer both he and his wife paid a viſit of three months to Booth and his wife.

Dr Harriſon is grown old in years, and in honour; beloved and reſpected by all his pariſhioners, and by all his neighbours. He divides his time between his pariſh, his old town, and Booth's——at which laſt place he had, two years ago, a gentle fit of the gout, being the firſt attack of that diſtemper. During this fit, Amelia was his nurſe, and her two eldeſt daughters ſat up alternately with him for a whole week. The eldeſt of thoſe girls, whoſe name is Amelia, is his favourite; ſhe is the picture of her mother, and it is thought the Doctor hath diſtinguiſhed her in his will; for he hath declared that he will leave his whole fortune, except ſome few charities, among Amelia's children.

As to Booth and Amelia, Fortune ſeems to have made them large amends for the tricks ſhe played them in their youth. They have, ever ſince the above period of this hiſtory, enjoyed an uninterrupted courſe of health and happineſs. In about ſix weeks after Booth's firſt coming into the country, he went to London, and paid all his debts of honour; after which, and a ſtay of two days only, he returned into the country, and hath never ſince been thirty miles from home. He hath two boys, and four girls; the eldeſt of the boys, he who hath made his appearance in this hiſtory, is juſt come from the univerſity, and is one of the fineſt gentlemen and beſt ſcholars of his age. The ſecond is juſt going from ſchool, and is intended for the church, that being his own choice. His eldeſt daughter is a woman grown, but we muſt not mention her age. A marriage was propoſed to her the other day with a young fellow of a good eſtate, but ſhe would never ſee him more than once; 'for Doc-'tor Harriſon,' ſays ſhe, 'told me he was illiterate, 'and I am ſure he is ill-natured.' The ſecond girl is three years younger than her ſiſter: and the others are yet children.

Amelia is ſtill the fineſt woman in England of her age. Booth himſelf often avers ſhe is as handſome

as

Digitized by Google

as ever. Nothing can equal the ſenerity of their lives. Amelia declared to me the other day, that ſhe did not remember to have ſeen her huſband out of humour theſe ten years; and upon my inſinuating to her, that he had the beſt of wives, ſhe anſwered with a ſmile, that ſhe ought to be ſo, for that he had made her the happieſt of women.

AN

Digitized by Google

AN

ENQUIRY

INTO

THE CAUSES

OF

The Late Increaſe of ROBBERS, &c.

WITH

Some PROPOSALS for Remedying this GROWING EVIL.

IN WHICH

The Preſent Reigning VICES are impartially expoſed; and the Laws that relate to the Proviſion for the POOR, and to the Puniſhment of FELONS, are largely and freely examined.

Non jam ſunt mediocres hominum libidines, non humanæ audaciæ ac tolerandæ. Nihil cogitant niſi cædem, niſi incendia, niſi rapinas.

CIC. in Catil. 2^do.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

PHILIP Lord HARDWICK,

Lord High Chancellor of GREAT BRITAIN.

My LORD,

AS the reformation of any part of our civil polity requires as much the knowledge of the ſtateſman as of the lawyer, the following ſheets are, with the ſtricteſt propriety, addreſſed to a perſon of the higheſt eminence in both theſe capacities.

The ſubject of this treatiſe cannot be thought unworthy of ſuch a protection, becauſe it touches only thoſe evils which have ariſen in the lower branches of our conſtitution. This conſideration will account for their having hitherto eſcaped your Lordſhip's notice; and that alone will account for their having ſo long prevailed: but your Lordſhip will not, for this reaſon, think it below your regard; ſince however ignoble the parts may be in which the diſeaſe is firſt engendered, it will in time be ſure to affect the whole body.

The ſubject, indeed, is of ſuch importance, that we may truly apply to it thoſe words of Cicero, in his firſt book of laws: *Ad Reipublicæ formandas et ſtabiliendas vires, et ad ſanandos populus omnis pergit oratio.* How far I have been able to ſucceed in the execution, muſt be ſubmitted to your Lordſhip's candour. I hope I have no immodeſt opinion of my own abilities; but, in truth, I have much leſs confidence in my authority. Indeed the higheſt authority is neceſſary to any degree of ſucceſs in an attempt of this kind. Permit me,

Digitized by Google

therefore, my Lord, to fly to the protection of the highest which doth now exist, or which perhaps ever did exist, in this kingdom.

This great sanction is, I am convinced, always ready to support what really tends to the public utility: if I fail therefore, of obtaining the honour of it, I shall be fully satisfied that I do not deserve it, and shall sit down contented with the merit of a good intent; for surely there is some praise due to the bare design of doing a service to the public. Nor can my enemies, I think, deny that I am entirely disinterested in my endeavour, unless they should discover the gratification which my ambition finds in the opportunity of this address.

I am, with the most profound respect,

My Lord,

Your Lordship's most obedient,

most devoted humble servant,

HENRY FIELDING.

PREFACE.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

THERE is nothing so much talked of, and so little understood in this country, as the *Constitution*. It is a word in the mouth of every man; and yet when we come to discourse of the matter, there is no subject on which our ideas are more confused and perplexed. Some, when they speak of the constitution, confine their notions to the law; others to the legislature; others again, to the governing or executive part; and many there are, who jumble all these together in one idea. One error, however, is common to them all; for all seem to have the conception of something uniform and permanent, as if the constitution of England partook rather of the nature of the soil than of the climate, and was as fixed and constant as the former, not as changing and variable as the latter.

Now in this word, *The Constitution*, are included the original and fundamental law of the kingdom, from whence all powers are derived, and by which they are circumscribed; all legislative and executive authority; all those municipal provisions which are commonly called *The Laws*; and, lastly, the customs, manners, and habits of the people. These, joined together, do, I apprehend, form the political; as the several members of the body, the animal œconomy, with the humours and habit, compose that which is called the natural constitution.

The Greek philosophy will, perhaps, help us to a better idea; for neither will the several constituent parts, nor the contexture of the whole, give an adequate notion of the word. By the *Constitution* is, indeed, rather meant something which results from the order and disposition of the whole; something resembling that harmony for which the Theban in Plato's Phœdo contends; which he calls ἀόρατόν τι καὶ ἀσώματον, *something invisible and incorporeal.* For many of the Greeks imagined the soul to result from the κρᾶσις or composition of the parts of the body, when these were properly tempered together; as har-

Digitized by Google

mony doth from the proper compoſition of the ſeveral parts in a well-tuned muſical inſtrument; in the ſame manner, from the diſpoſition of the ſeveral parts in a ſtate, ariſes that which we call the *Conſtitution*.

In this diſpoſition the laws have ſo conſiderable a ſhare, that, as no man can perfectly underſtand the whole, without knowing the parts of which it is compoſed, it follows, that, to have a juſt notion of our conſtitution, without a competent knowledge of the laws, is impoſſible. Without this, the reading over our hiſtorians may afford amuſement, but will very little inſtruct us in the true eſſentials of our conſtitution. Nor will this knowledge alone ſerve our purpoſe. The mere lawyer, however ſkilful in his profeſſion, who is not verſed in the genius, manners, and habits of the people, makes but a wretched politician. Hence the hiſtorian, who is ignorant of our law, and the lawyer who is ignorant of our hiſtory, have agreed in that common error, remarked above, of conſidering our conſtitution as ſomething fixed and permanent: for the exterior form of government (however the people are changed) ſtill, in a great degree, remains what it was; and the ſame, notwithſtanding all its alterations, may be ſaid of the law.

To explain this a little farther: From the original of the lower houſe of parliament to this day, the ſupreme power hath been veſted in the king and the two houſes of parliament. Theſe two houſes have, each at different times, carried very different weights in the balance, and yet the form of government remained ſtill one and the ſame: ſo hath it happened to the law; the ſame courts of juſtice, the ſame form of trials, *&c.* have preſerved the notion of identity, though, in real truth, the preſent governing powers and the preſent legal proviſions bear ſo little reſemblance to thoſe of our anceſtors in the reign of King John, or indeed in latter times, that, could any lawyer or ſtateſman of thoſe days be recalled to life, he would make, I believe, a very indifferent figure in Weſtminſter-hall, or in any of the parts there adjacent.

To perceive the alterations in our conſtitution, doth, in fact, require a pretty juſt knowledge both of the people and of the laws: for either of theſe may be greatly

Digitized by Google

greatly changed, without producing any immediate effect on the other. The alterations in the great wheels of ſtate above mentioned, which are ſo viſible in our hiſtorians, are not noticed in our laws, as very few of the great changes in the law have fallen under the eye of our hiſtorians.

Many of both kinds have appeared in our conſtitution; but I ſhall at preſent confine myſelf to one only, as being that which principally relates to the ſubject of the following treatiſe.

If the conſtitution, as I have above aſſerted, be the reſult of the diſpoſition of the ſeveral parts beforementioned, it follows, that this diſpoſition can never be altered, without producing a proportional change in the conſtitution. 'If the ſoul,' ſays Simmias in Plato, 'be a harmony reſulting from the diſpoſition of the 'corporeal parts, it follows, that when this diſpoſi-'tion is confounded, and the body is torn by diſeaſes 'or other evils, the ſoul immediately (whatever be 'her divinity) muſt periſh.' This will be apparent, if we caſt our eyes a moment towards the animal œconomy; and it is not leſs true in the political.

The cuſtoms, manners, and habits of the people, do, as I have ſaid, form one part of the political conſtitution; if theſe are altered therefore, this muſt be changed likewiſe; and here, as in the natural body, the diſorder of any part will, in its conſequence, affect the whole.

One known diviſion of the people in this nation is into the nobility, the gentry, and the commonalty. What alterations have happened among the two former of theſe, I ſhall not at preſent enquire; but that the laſt, in their cuſtoms, manners, and habits are greatly changed from what they were, I think to make appear.

If we look into the earlieſt ages, we ſhall find the condition of this third part to have been very low and mean. The higheſt order of this rank, before the Conqueſt, were thoſe tenants in ſocage, who held their lands by the ſervice of the plough; who, as Littleton tells us, 'were to come with their plough for 'certain days in the year, to plow and ſow the de-

Digitized by Google

'meſne of the Lords; as the villains,' ſaith the ſame author, 'were to carry and recarry the dung of his 'Lord, ſpread it upon his land, and to perform ſuch 'like ſervices.'

This latter was rightly accounted a ſlaviſh tenure. The villains were indeed conſidered in law as a kind of chattel belonging to their maſters: for though theſe had not the power of life and death over them, nor even of maiming them with impunity, yet theſe villains had not even the capacity of purchaſing lands or goods; but the lord, on ſuch purchaſe, might enter into the one, and ſeize the other for his own uſe. And as for the land which they held in villenage, though Lord Coke ſays it was not only held at the will of the Lord, but according to the cuſtom of the manor; yet, in antient times, if the Lord ejected them, they were manifeſtly without remedy.

And as to the former, though they were accounted freemen, yet were they obliged to ſwear fealty to their Lord; and though Mr Rapin be miſtaken, when he ſays they could not alienate the land (for before the ſtatute of *Magna Charta*, chap. 32. they could have given or ſold the whole, but without any alteration of the tenure,) yet was the eſtate of theſe but very mean. 'Though they are called freemen,' ſays Lord Coke, 'yet they ploughed, harrowed, reaped, and mowed, '*&c.* for the Lord;' and Bracton, *Dicuntur Socmanni eo quod deputati ſunt tantummodo ad culturam.*

Beſides ſuch as were bound by their tenure to the ſervice of agriculture, the number of freemen below the degree of gentry, and who got their livelihood in the mercantile or mechanical way, was very inconſiderable. As to the ſervants, they were chiefly bound by tenure, and thoſe of the lower ſort differed very little from the ſlaves.

That this eſtate of the commonalty is greatly changed, is apparent; and to this alteration many cauſes in ſubſequent ages have contributed.

Firſt, The oath of fealty, or fidelity, which of old time was adminiſtered with great ceremony, became afterwards to be omitted; and though this fealty ſtill remained

Digitized by Google

remained incident to every ſocage tenure, yet the omiſſion of the form was not without its conſequences; for, as Lord Coke ſays, ſpeaking of homage, 'Prudent antiquity did, for the more ſolemnity and better memory and obſervation of that which is to be done, expreſs ſubſtances under ceremonies.'

2dly, Whereas in the ancient tenure, the principal reſervation was of perſonal ſervices from the inferior tenants, the rent being generally trifling, ſuch as hens, capons, roſes, ſpurs, hawks, *&c.* afterwards, the avarice or neceſſity of the lords incited them to convert theſe for the moſt part into money, which tended greatly to weaken the power of the lord, and to raiſe the freedom and independency of the tenant.

3dly, The diſmembering manors by leaſes for years, as it flowed from the ſame ſources, ſo it produced the ſame effects. Theſe were probably very rare before the reign of Edward I. at which time the ſtatute of Glouceſter ſecured the eſtate of this tenant.

4thly, The eſtate of the villain or copyholder ſeems clearly, as I have ſaid, to have originally been holden only at the will of the lord; but the law was afterwards altered, and in the reign of Edward the IV. ſome of the beſt judges were of opinion, that if the copyholder was unlawfully ejected by his lord, he ſhould have an action of treſpaſs againſt him at the common law.

From this time the eſtate of the copyholder (which as Bracton tells us, was formerly a baſe tenure) began to grow into repute; and, though ſtill diſtinguiſhed in ſome privileges from a freehold, became the poſſeſſion of many opulent and powerful perſons.

By theſe and ſuch like means the commonalty, by degrees, ſhook off their vaſſalage, and became more and more independent on their ſuperiors. Even ſervants, in proceſs of time, acquired a ſtate of freedom and independency, unknown to this rank in any other nation: and which, as the law now ſtands, is inconſiſtent with a ſervile condition.

But

Digitized by Google

But nothing hath wrought such an alteration in this order of people, as the introduction of trade. This hath indeed given a new face to the whole nation, hath in a great measure subverted the former state of affairs, and hath almost totally changed the manners, customs, and habits of the people, more especially of the lower sort. The narrowness of their fortune is changed into wealth; the simplicity of their manners into craft; their frugality into luxury; their humility into pride; and their subjection into equality.

The philosopher, perhaps, will think this a bad exchage, and may be inclined to cry out with the poet,

——*Sævior armis*
Luxuria incubuit——
Nullum crimen abest, facinusque libidinis, ex quo
Paupertas Romana perit.

Again,

Prima peregrinos obscæna pecunia mores
Intulit, et turpi fregerunt sæcula luxu
Divitiæ molles——

But the politician finds many emoluments to compensate all the moral evils introduced by trade, by which the grandeur and power of the nation is carried to a pitch that it could never otherwise have reached; arts and sciences are improved, and human life is embellished with every ornament, and furnished with every comfort which it is capable of tasting.

In all these assertions he is right; but surely he forgets himself a little, when he joins the philosopher in lamenting the introduction of luxury as a casual evil; for as riches are the *certain* consequence of trade, so is luxury the no less *certain* consequence of riches; nay trade and luxury do indeed support each other: and this latter, in its turn, becomes as useful to trade, as trade had been before to the support of luxury.

To prevent this consequence therefore of a flourishing commerce, is totally to change the nature of things, and to separate the effect from the cause: A matter as impossible in the political body as in the natural. Vices and diseases, like physical necessity, arise from certain

Digitized by Google

certain habits in both; and to reſtrain and palliate the evil conſequences, is all that lies within the reach of art. How far it is the buſineſs of the politician to interfere in the caſe of luxury, we have attempted to ſhew in the following treatiſe.

Now, to conceive that ſo great a change as this in the people ſhould produce no change in the conſtitution, is to diſcover, I think, as great ignorance as would appear in the phyſician, who ſhould aſſert that the whole ſtate of the blood may be entirely altered from poor to rich, from cool to inflamed, without producing any alteration in the conſtitution of the man.

To put this in the cleareſt light: there appear to me to be four ſorts of political power; that of bodily ſtrength, that of the mind, the power of the purſe, and the power of the ſword. Under the ſecond of theſe diviſions may be ranged all the art of the legiſlator and politician, all the power of laws and government. Theſe do conſtitute the civil power; and a ſtate may then be ſaid to be in good order, when all the other powers are ſubſervient to this; when they own its ſuperior excellence and energy, pay it a ready obedience, and all unite in ſupport of its rule.

But ſo far are theſe powers from paying ſuch voluntary ſubmiſſion, that they are all extremely apt to rebel, and to aſſert their own ſuperiority; but none is more rebellious in its nature, or more difficult to be governed, than that of the purſe or money. Self-opinion, arrogance, inſolence, and impatience of rule, are its almoſt inſeparable companions.

Now, if theſe aſſertions are true, what an immenſe acceſſion of this power hath accrued to the commonalty by the increaſe of trade! for though the other orders have acquired an addition by the ſame means, yet this is not in the ſame proportion, as every reader, who will revolve the propoſition but a moment in his own mind, muſt be ſatisfied.

And what may we hence conclude? is that civil power, which was adapted to the government of this order of people in that ſtate in which they were at the Conqueſt,

Digitized by Google

Conqueſt, capable of ruling them in their preſent ſituation? hath this civil power kept equal pace with them in the increaſe of its force, or hath it not rather, by the remiſſneſs of the magiſtrate, loſt much of its ancient clergy? Where is now that power of the ſheriff, which could formerly awaken and arm a whole county in an inſtant? where is that *poſſe comitatus*, which attended at his beck? What is become of the conſtitutions of Alfred, which the reader will find ſet forth at large in the following treatiſe? what of the ancient conſervators of the peace? have the juſtices, on whom this whole power devolves, an authority ſufficient for the purpoſe? In ſome counties, perhaps, you may find an overgrown tyrant, who lords it over his neighbours and tenants with deſpotic ſway, and who is as regardleſs of the law as he is ignorant of it; but as to the magiſtrate of a leſs fortune and more knowledge, every riotous independent butcher or baker, with two or three thouſand pounds in his pocket, laughs at his power, and every pettifogger makes him tremble.

It is a common and popular complaint, that the juſtices of peace have already too much power. Indeed a very little is too much, if it be abuſed; but in truth, this complaint proceeds from a miſtake of buſineſs for power: the buſineſs of the juſtice is indeed multiplied by a great number of ſtatutes; but I know not of any (the riot act perhaps excepted) which hath at all enlarged his power. And what the force of that act is, and how able the magiſtrate is, by means of the civil power alone, to execute it in any popular commotion, I have myſelf experienced. But when a mob of chairmen or ſervants, or a gang of thieves and ſharpers, are almoſt too big for the civil authority to ſuppreſs, what muſt be the caſe in a ſeditious tumult, or general riot of the people?

From what hath been ſaid, I may, I think, conclude that the conſtitution of this country is altered from its ancient ſtate.

2*dly*, That the power of the commonalty hath received an immenſe addition; and that the civil power having

Digitized by Google

having not increaſed, but decreaſed, in the ſame proportion, is not able to govern them.

What may and muſt be the conſequences of this, as well as what remedy can be applied to it, I leave to the conſideration of others: I have proceeded far enough already on the ſubject, to draw ſufficient ill-will on myſelf, from unmeaning or ill-meaning people, who either do not foreſee the miſchievous tendency of a total relaxation of government, or who have ſome private wicked purpoſe to effect from public confuſion.

In plain truth, the principal deſign of this whole work, is to rouſe the CIVIL power from its preſent lethargic ſtate; a deſign, which alike oppoſes thoſe wild notions of liberty that are inconſiſtent with all government, and thoſe pernicious ſchemes of government, which are deſtructive of true liberty. However contrary indeed theſe principles may ſeem to each other, they have both the ſame common intereſt; or rather, the former are the wretched tools of the latter: for anarchy is almoſt ſure to end in ſome kind of tyranny.

Dr Middleton, in his life of Cicero, hath a fine obſervation to my preſent purpoſe, with which I will conclude this preface.

'From the railleries of the Romans, (ſays he), on 'the *barbarity and miſery of our iſland*, one cannot 'help reflecting on the ſurpriſing fate and revolutions 'of kingdoms; how Rome, once the miſtreſs of the 'world, the ſeat of arts, empire, and glory, now lies 'ſunk in ſloth, ignorance, and poverty; enſlaved to 'the moſt cruel as well as to the moſt contemptible 'tyrants, *ſuperſtition and religious impoſture:* while 'this remote country, anciently the jeſt and contempt 'of *the polite Romans*, is become the happy ſeat of 'liberty, plenty, and letters; flouriſhing in all the 'arts and refinements of civil life; yet running perhaps the ſame courſe, which Rome itſelf had run 'before it; from virtuous induſtry to wealth; from 'wealth to luxury; from luxury to an impatience of 'diſcipline and corruption of morals; till by a total

Digitized by Google

'degeneracy and loſs of virtue, being grown ripe for 'deſtruction, it falls a prey at laſt to ſome hardy op- 'preſſor: and, with the loſs of liberty, loſing every 'thing elſe that is valuable, ſinks gradually again into 'its original barbariſm.

AN

Digitized by Google

AN ENQUIRY INTO THE CAUSES OF The late Encreaſe of ROBBERS, &c.

INTRODUCTION.

THE great increaſe of Robberies within theſe few years, is an evil which to me appears to deſerve ſome attention; and the rather as it ſeems (though already become ſo flagrant) not yet to have arrived to that height of which it is capable, and which it is likely to attain: for diſeaſes in the political, as in the natural body, ſeldom fail of going on to their criſis, eſpecially when nouriſhed and encouraged by faults in the conſtitution. In fact, I make no doubt, but that the ſtreets of this town, and the roads leading to it, will ſhortly be impaſſable, without the utmoſt hazard; nor are we threatened with ſeeing leſs dangerous gangs of rogues among us, than thoſe which the Italians call the *Banditti*.

Should this ever happen to be the caſe, we ſhall have ſufficient reaſon to lament that remiſſneſs by which this evil was ſuffered to grow to ſo great a height. All diſtempers, if I may once more reſume the alluſion, the ſooner they are oppoſed, admit of the eaſier and the ſafer cure. The great difficulty of extirpating deſperate gangs of robbers, when once collected into a body, appears from our own hiſtory in former times. France hath given us a later exam-

Digitized by Google

ple in the long reign of Cartouche, and his Banditti; and this under an abſolute monarchy, which affords much more ſpeedy and efficacious remedies againſt theſe political diſorders, than can be adminiſtered in a free ſtate, whoſe forms of correction are extremely ſlow and uncertain, and whoſe puniſhments are the mildeſt and the moſt void of terror of any other in the known world.

For my own part, I cannot help regarding theſe depredations in a moſt ſerious light: nor can I help wondering that a nation ſo jealous of her liberties, that from the ſlighteſt cauſe, and often without any cauſe at all, we are always murmuring at our ſuperiors, ſhould tamely and quietly ſupport the invaſion of her properties by a few of the vileſt and loweſt among us. Doth not this ſituation in reality level us with the moſt enſlaved countries? If I am to be aſſaulted, and pillaged, and plundered; if I can neither ſleep in my own houſe, nor walk the ſtreets, nor travel in ſafety; is not my condition almoſt equally bad, whether a licenſed or unlicenſed rogue, a dragoon or a robber, be the perſon who aſſaults and plunders me? the only difference which I can perceive is, that the latter evil appears to be more eaſy to remove.

If this be, as I clearly think it is, the caſe, ſurely there are few matters of more general concern than to put an immediate end to theſe outrages, which are already become ſo notorious, and which, as I obſerved, do ſeem to threaten us with ſuch a dangerous increaſe. What indeed may not the public apprehend, when they are informed as an unqueſtionable fact, that there are at this time a great gang of rogues, whoſe number falls little ſhort of a hundred, who are incorporated in one body, have officers and a treaſury, and have reduced theft and robbery into a regular ſyſtem. There are of this ſociety of men who appear in all diſguiſes, and mix in moſt companies. Nor are they better verſed in every art of cheating, thieving, and robbing, than they are armed with every method of evading the law, if they ſhould ever be diſcovered, and an attempt made to bring them to juſtice. Here, if they fail of reſcuing the priſoner, or (which ſeldom happens)

Digitized by Google

happens) in bribing or deterring the profecutor, they have for their laſt reſource ſome rotten members of the law to forge a defence for them, and a great number of falſe witneſſes ready to ſupport it.

Having ſeen the moſt convincing proofs of all this, I cannot help thinking it high time to put ſome ſtop to the further progreſs of ſuch impudent and audacious inſults, not only on the properties of the ſubject, but on the national juſtice, and on the laws themſelves. The means of accompliſhing this (the beſt which ſuggeſt themſelves to me) I ſhall ſubmit to the public conſideration; after having firſt enquired into the cauſes of the preſent growth of this evil, and whence we have great reaſon to apprehend its further increaſe. Some of theſe I am too well verſed in the affairs of this world to expect to ſee removed; but there are others, which, without being over ſanguine, we may hope to remedy; and thus perhaps one ill conſequence, at leaſt, of the more ſtubborn political diſeaſes may ceaſe.

SECT. I.

Of too frequent and expenſive diverſions among the lower kind of people.

FIRST then, I think, that the vaſt torrent of luxury, which of late years hath poured itſelf into this nation, hath greatly contributed to produce, among many others, the miſchief I here complain of. I aim not here to ſatirize the great, among whom luxury is probably rather a moral than a political evil. But vices no more than diſeaſes will ſtop with them; for bad habits are as infectious by example, as the plague itſelf by contact. In free countries, at leaſt, it is a branch of liberty claimed by the people to be as wicked and as profligate as their ſuperiors. Thus while the nobleman will emulate the grandeur of a prince, and the gentleman will aſpire to the proper ſtate of the nobleman, the tradeſman ſteps from behind his counter into the vacant place of the gentleman. Nor doth the confuſion end here: it reaches the very

Digitized by Google

dregs of the people, who, aſpiring ſtill to a degree beyond that which belongs to them, and not being able by the fruits of honeſt labour to ſupport the ſtate which they affect, diſdain the wages to which their induſtry would entitle them; and abandoning themſelves to idleneſs, the more ſimple and poor-ſpirited betake themſelves to a ſtate of ſtarving and beggary, while thoſe of more art and courage become thieves, ſharpers, and robbers.

Could luxury be confined to the palaces of the great, the ſociety would not perhaps be much affected with it; at leaſt, the miſchiefs, which I am now intending to obviate, can never be the conſequence. For tho', perhaps, there is not more of real virtue in the higher ſtate, yet the ſenſe of honour is there more general and prevalent. But there is a much ſtronger reaſon. The means bear no probable proportion to the end: for the loſs of thouſands, or of a great eſtate, is not to be relieved or ſupplied by any means of common theft or robbery.——With regard to ſuch evils, therefore, the legiſlature might be juſtified in leaving the puniſhment as well as the pernicious conſequence, to end in the miſery, diſtreſs, and ſometimes utter ruin of a private family. But when this vice deſcends downwards to the tradeſman, the mechanic, and the labourer, it is certain to engender many political miſchiefs; and among the reſt it is moſt evidently the parent of theft and robbery, to which not only the motive of want but of ſhame conduces: for there is no greater degree of ſhame than the tradeſman generally feels at the firſt inability to make his regular payments; nor is there any difficulty which he would not undergo to avoid it. Here, then, the highway promiſes, and hath, I doubt not, often, given relief. Nay, I remember very lately a highwayman who confeſſed ſeveral robberies before me, his motive to which, he aſſured me (and ſo it appeared) was to pay a bill that was ſhortly to become due. In this caſe, therefore, the public becomes intereſted; and conſequently the legiſlature is obliged to interpoſe.

To give a final blow to luxury by any general prohibition, if it would be adviſeable, is by no means poſſible.

Digitized by Google

poſſible. To ſay the truth, bad habits in the body politic, eſpecially if of any duration, are ſeldom to be wholly eradicated. Palliatives alone are to be applied; and theſe too in a free conſtitution muſt be of the gentleſt kind, and as much as poſſible adapted to the taſte and genius of the people.

The gentleſt method which I know, and at the ſame time perhaps one of the moſt effectual, of ſtopping the progreſs of vice, is by removing the temptation. Now the two great motives to luxury, in the mind of man, are vanity and voluptuouſneſs. The former of theſe operates but little in this regard with the lower order of people. I do not mean that they have leſs of this paſſion than their betters, but the apparent impoſſibility of gratifying it this way deters them, and diverts at leaſt this paſſion into another channel; for we find it puts them rather on vying with each other in the reputation of wealth, than in the outward appearance of ſhew and grandeur. Voluptuouſneſs, or the love of pleaſure, is that alone which leads them into luxury. Here then the temptation is with all poſſible care to be withdrawn from them.

Now what greater temptation can there be to voluptuouſneſs, than a place where every ſenſe and appetite of which it is compounded, are fed and delighted; where the eyes are feaſted with ſhew and the ears with muſic, and where gluttony and drunkenneſs are allured by every kind of dainty; nay, where the fineſt women are expoſed to view, and where the meaneſt perſon who can dreſs himſelf clean, may in ſome degree mix with his betters, and thus perhaps ſatisfy his vanity as well as his love of pleaſure?

It may poſſibly be ſaid that theſe diverſions are cheap: I anſwer, that is one objection I have to them: was the price as high as that of a ridotto or an opera, it would, like theſe diverſions, be confined to the higher people only; beſides, the cheapneſs is really a deluſion. Unthinking men are often deceived into expence; as I once knew an honeſt gentleman, who carried his wife and two daughters to a maſquerade, being told that he could have four tickets for four guineas; but found afterwards, that in dreſſes,

Digitized by Google

masques, chairs, &c. the night's entertainment cost him almost twelve. I am convinced that many thousands of honest tradesmen have found their expences exceed their computation in a much greater proportion. And the sum of seven or eight shillings (which is a very moderate allowance for the entertainment of the smallest family) repeated once or twice a week through a summer, will make too large a deduction from the reasonable profits of any low mechanic.

Besides the actual expence in attending the places of pleasure, the loss of time and neglect of business are consequences which the inferior tradesman can by no means support. To be born for no other purpose than to consume the fruits of the earth, is the privilege (if it may be really called a privilege) of very few. The greater part of mankind must sweat hard to produce them, or society will no longer answer the purposes for which it was ordained. *Six days shalt thou labour*, was the positive command of God in his own republic: a severity, however, which the divine wisdom was pleased somewhat to relax; and appointed certain times of rest and recreation for his people. Such were the feast of the unleavened bread, the feast of the weeks, and the feast of the tabernacles. On which occasion it is written, *Thou shalt rejoice before the Lord thy God, thou, and thy son, and thy daughter, and thy servant, and thy maid, and the Levite that is within thy gates, and the stranger, and the fatherless, and the widow* [*a*].

All other nations have imitated this divine institution. It is true among the Greeks, arising from the nature of their superstition, there were many festivals; yet scarce any of these were universal, and few attended with any other than religious ceremonies [*b*]. The Roman calendar is thinner strewed with these seasons of idleness. Indeed, there seems to have been one only

[*a*] Exod. chap. xxxiv. Deut. chap. xvi.

[*b*] The gods, says Plato, pitying the laborious condition to which men were born, appointed holy rites to themselves, as seasons of rest to men; and gave them the Muses, with Apollo their leader, and Bacchus to assist in the celebration, &c. De Leg. l. ii. p. 787. edit. Ficini.

kind

Digitized by Google

kind of universal sport and revelling amongst them, which they call the *Saturnalia*, when much too great indulgence was given to all kinds of licentiousness. Public scenes of rendezvous they had none. As to the Grecian women, it is well known, they were almost entirely confined to their own houses; where the very entertainment of their finest ladies was only works of the finer sort. And the Romans, by the Orchian law, which was made among many others for the suppression of luxury, and was published in the third year from Cato's censorship, thought proper to limit the number of persons who were to assemble even at any private feast [*c*]. Nay, the exhibitions of the theatre were suffered only at particular seasons, and on holydays.

Nor are our own laws silent on this head, with regard at least to the lowest sort of people, whose diversions have been confined to certain stated times. Mr Pulton, [*d*] speaking of those games and assemblies of the people which are lawful, says, that they are lawful at certain places and seasons of the year, allowed by old and ancient customs. The statute of Henry VIII. [*e*] goes farther, and expressly enacts, that no manner of artificer or craftsman, of any handicraft or occupation, husbandman, apprentice, *&c.* shall play at the tables, tennis, dice, cards, bowls, *&c.* out of Christmas, under the penalty of 20 *s.*

Thus we find that by divine as well as human institution, as well by our own law as those of other countries, the diversions of the people have been limited and restrained to certain seasons: Under which limitations, Seneca calls these diversions the necessary temperament of labour. 'Some remission,' says he, 'must be given to our minds, which will spring up 'the better and more brisk from rest. It is with the 'mind as with a fruitful field, whose fertility will be 'exhausted if we give it no intermission. The same 'will accrue to the mind by incessant labours, where-

[*c*] Macrob. Saturnal. lib. ii. c. xiii. Note, This RIOT ACT passed in one of the freest ages of the Roman republic.

[*d*] De Pace. fol. 25. [*e*] 33 Hen. VIII. c. ix.

as

'as both from gentle remiſſion will acquire ſtrength. 'From conſtant labour ariſes a certain dulneſs and 'languor of the ſpirits; nor would men with ſuch 'eagerneſs affect them, if ſport or merriment had not 'a certain natural ſweetneſs inherent in themſelves; 'the frequent uſe of which, however, will deſtroy all 'gravity and force in our minds. Sleep is neceſſary 'to our refreſhment; but if this be continued night 'and day, it will become death. There is a great 'difference between the remiſſion of any thing and its 'diſſolution. Lawgivers, therefore, inſtituted cer-'tain holydays, that the people might be compelled 'by law to merriment, interpoſing this as a neceſſary 'temperament to their labours. [f]'

Thus the Greek and Latin philoſophers, though they derive the inſtitution differently, the one aledging a divine and the other a human original, both agree that a neceſſary relaxation from labour was the only end for which diverſion was invented and allowed to the people. This inſtitution, as the former of theſe great writers tells us, was groſly perverted even in his time; but ſurely neither then, nor in any age or nation, until now, was this perverſion carried to ſo ſcandalous an exceſs as it is at preſent in this kingdom, and eſpecially in and near the metropolis, where the places of pleaſure are almoſt become numberleſs: for, beſides thoſe great ſcenes of rendezvous, where the nobleman and his tailor, the lady of quality and her tirewoman, meet together and form one common aſſembly, what an immenſe variety of places have this town and its neighbourhood ſet apart for the amuſement of the loweſt order of the people; and where the maſt of the houſe, or wells, or garden, may be ſaid to angle only in the kennels, where, baiting with the vileſt materials, he catches only the thoughtleſs and taſteleſs rabble? and theſe are carried on, not only a ſingle day, or in a ſingle week; but all of them during half, and ſome during the whole year.

If a computation was made of the money expended in theſe temples of idleneſs by the artificer, the handi-

[f] Sen. De Tranquill. Animi. p. 167. edit. Lipſ.

craft,

craft, the apprentice, and even the common labourer, the ſum would appear exceſſive; but without putting myſelf to that trouble, I believe the reader will permit me to conclude that it is much greater than ſuch perſons can or ought to afford; eſpecially as idleneſs, its neceſſary attendant, adds greatly to the debtor's ſide in the account: and that the neceſſary conſequence muſt be ruin to many, who, from being uſeful members of the ſociety, will become a heavy burden or abſolute nuiſance to the public; it being indeed a certain method to fill the ſtreets with beggars, and the goals with debtors and thieves.

That this branch of luxury hath grown to its preſent height, is owing partly to a defect in the laws; and this defect may, with great decency and reſpect to the legiſlature, be very truly imputed to the recency of the evil; for, as our anceſtors knew it not, they may well be excuſed for not having foreſeen and guarded againſt it. If therefore it ſhould ſeem now neceſſary to be retrenched, a new law will, I apprehend, be neceſſary for that purpoſe; the powers of the magiſtrate being ſcarce extenſive enough, under any proviſion extant, to deſtroy a hydra now become ſo pregnant and dangerous. And it would be too dangerous as well as too invidious a taſk to oppoſe the mad humours of the populace, by the force of any doubtful obſolete law; which, as I have hinted before, could not have been directly levelled at a vice, which did not exiſt at the time when the law was made.

But while I am recommending ſome reſtraint of this branch of luxury, which ſurely appears to be neceſſary, I would be underſtood to aim at the retrenchment only, not at the extirpation, of diverſion; nay, and in this reſtraint, I confine myſelf entirely to the lower order of people. Pleaſure always hath been, and always will be, the principal buſineſs of perſons of faſhion and fortune, and more eſpecially of the ladies, for whom I have infinitely too great an honour and reſpect to rob them of any the leaſt amuſement. Let them have their plays, operas, and oratorios, their maſquerades and ridottos; their aſſemblies, drums, routs,

Digitized by Google

routs, riots, and hurricanes; their Ranelagh and Vauxhall; their Bath, Tunbridge, Briſtol, Scarborough, and Cheltenham; and let them have their beaus and danglers to attend them at all theſe; it is the only uſe for which ſuch beaus are fit; and I have ſeen, in the courſe of my life, that it is the only one to which, by ſenſible women, they are applied.

In diverſion, as in many other particulars, the upper part of life is diſtinguiſhed from the lower. Let the great therefore anſwer for the employment of their time, to themſelves, or to their ſpiritual governors. The ſociety will receive ſome temporal advantage from their luxury. The more toys which children of all ages conſume, the briſker will be the circulation of money, and the greater the increaſe of trade.

The buſineſs of the politician is only to prevent the contagion from ſpreading into the uſeful part of mankind, the ΕΠΙΠΟΝΟΝ ΠΕΦΥΚΟΣ ΓΕΝΟΣ [g]; and this is the buſineſs of perſons of faſhion and fortune too, in order that the labour and induſtry of the reſt may adminiſter to their pleaſures, and furniſh them with the means of luxury. To the upper part of mankind Time is an enemy, and (as they themſelves often confeſs) their chief labour is to kill it; whereas with the other, time and money are almoſt ſynonymous; and as they have very little of each to ſpare, it becomes the legiſlature, as much as poſſible, to ſuppreſs all temptations whereby they may be induced too profuſely to ſquander either the one or the other; ſince all ſuch profuſion muſt be repaired at the coſt of the public.

Such places of pleaſure, therefore, as are totally ſet apart for the uſe of the great world, I meddle not with. And though Ranelagh and Vauxhall, by reaſon of their price, are not entirely appropriated to the people of faſhion, yet they are ſeldom frequented by any below the middle rank; and a ſtrict regard to decency is preſerved in them both. But ſurely two ſuch places are ſufficient to contain all thoſe who have any title to ſpend their time in this idle, though otherwiſe

[g] Plato.

innocent

Digitized by Google

innocent way. Nor ſhould ſuch a faſhion be allowed to ſpread into every village round London, and by degrees all over the kingdom; by which means, not only idleneſs, but all kinds of immorality, will be encouraged.

I cannot diſmiſs this head, without mentioning a notorious nuiſance, which hath of late ariſen in this town: I mean, thoſe balls where men and women of looſe reputation meet in diſguiſed habits. As to the maſquerade in the Hay-market, I have nothing to ſay; I really think it a ſilly rather than a vicious entertainment; but the caſe is very different with theſe inferior maſquerades; for theſe are indeed no other than the temples of drunkenneſs, lewdneſs, and all kind of debauchery.

SECT. II.

Of DRUNKENNESS, *a ſecond conſequence of luxury among the vulgar.*

BUT the expence of money, and loſs of time, with their certain conſequences, are not the only evils which attend the luxury of the vulgar; drunkenneſs is almoſt inſeparably annexed to the pleaſures of ſuch people; a vice by no means to be conſtrued as a ſpiritual offence alone, ſince ſo many temporal miſchiefs ariſe from it; amongſt which are very frequently robbery and murder itſelf.

I do not know a more excellent inſtitution than that of Pittacus, mentioned by Ariſtotle in his Politics [*b*]; by which a blow given by a drunken man, was more ſeverely puniſhed than if it had been given by one that was ſober; 'for Pittacus,' ſays Ariſtotle, 'conſidered the utility of the public (as drunken men 'are more apt to ſtrike) and not the excuſe, which 'might otherwiſe be allowed to their drunkenneſs.' And ſo far both the civil law and our own have followed this inſtitution, that neither have admitted drunkenneſs to be an excuſe for any crime.

[*b*] L. ii. c. 10.

This

Digitized by Google

This odious vice (indeed the parent of all others) as hiſtory informs us, was firſt introduced into this kingdom by the Danes, and with very miſchievous effects. Wherefore that excellent Prince Edgar the Peaceable, when he ſet about reforming the manners of his people, applied himſelf very particularly to the remedy of this great evil, and ordered ſilver or gold pins to be fixed to the ſides of their pots and cups, beyond which it was not lawful for any perſon to drink [*i*].

What penalty was affixed to the breach of this inſtitution, I know not; nor do I find any puniſhment in our books for the crime of drunkenneſs, till the time of Jac. I. in the fourth year of whoſe reign it was enacted, 'That every perſon lawfully convicted 'of drunkenneſs ſhall, for every ſuch offence, forfeit 'the ſum of five ſhillings, to be paid within a week 'next after his, her, or their conviction, to the hand 'of the church-wardens of the pariſh where, *&c.* to 'the uſe of the poor. In default of payment, the ſum 'to be levied by diſtreſs; and, in default of diſtreſs, 'the offender is to be committed to the ſtocks, there 'to remain for the ſpace of ſix hours [*k*].'

For the ſecond offence, they are to be bound to their good behaviour. with two ſureties, in a recognizance of ten pounds [*l*].

Nor is only that degree of drunkenneſs forbidden, which Mr Dalton deſcribes, 'ſo as to ſtagger and 'reel to and fro, and where the ſame legs that carry 'him into a houſe, cannot carry him out again [*m*];' for by the ſame act of parliament, all perſons who continue drinking or tipling in any inn, victualling-houſe, or ale-houſe, in their own city, town or pariſh (unleſs ſuch as being invited by a traveller, ſhall accompany him during his neceſſary abode there; or except labouring and handicraftmen in cities, and corporate and market towns, upon a working day, for an hour at dinner time, in ale-houſes, where they take their diet; and except labourers and workmen,

[*i*] Echard, p. 88. [*k*] Jac. I. cap. v. [*l*] Jac. I cap. v § 6. [*m*] Dalt. chap vii. § 5.

Digitized by Google

who, during their continuance in any work, ſhall lodge or victual in any inn, *&c.* or except for ſome urgent and neceſſary occaſion, to be allowed by two juſtices of the peace), ſhall forfeit the ſum of three ſhillings and ſixpence for the uſe of the poor, to be levied as before, and for want of diſtreſs, to be put in the ſtocks for four hours [*n*].

This act hath been ſtill farther enforced by another in the ſame reign [*o*]. By the latter act, the tipler is liable, whether his habitation be within the ſame, or any other pariſh. *2dly*, The proof by one witneſs is made ſufficient; and, *3dly*, A very extraordinary clauſe is added, by which the oath of the party offending, after having confeſſed his own crime, is made evidence againſt any other offender, though at the ſame time.

Thus we ſee the legiſlature have taken the utmoſt care not only to puniſh, but even to prevent this vice of drunkenneſs, which the preamble of one of the foregoing ſtatutes calls a *loathſome and odious ſin*, and the root and foundation of many other enormous ſins, as murder, *&c.* Nor doth the wiſdom of our law ſtop here. Our cautious anceſtors have endeavoured to remove the temptation, and, in a great meaſure, to take away from the people their very power of offending this way: and this by going to the fountain-head, and endeavouring to regulate and reſtrain the ſcenes of theſe diſorders, and to confine them to thoſe uſes for which they were at firſt deſigned, namely, for the reſt, refreſhment, and convenience of travellers.

A curſory view of the ſtatutes on this head will demonſtrate of what conſequence to ſociety the ſuppreſſion of this vice was in the opinion of our anceſtors.

By the common law, inns and alehouſes might be kept *ad libitum*; but if any diſorders were ſuffered in them, they were indictable as a common nuiſance.

The firſt reform which I find to have been made by parliament was in the reign of Henry VII. [*p*],

[*n*] Jac. I. cap. iv. § 4 & 1 Jac. I. cap. ix.
[*o*] 21 Jac. I. cap. vii. [*p*] 11 Hen. VII.

Digitized by Google

when two juſtices were empowered to ſuppreſs an alehouſe.

The ſtatute of Edward VI. [q] is the firſt which requires a precedent licence. By this act no man can keep an alehouſe without being licenſed by the ſeſſions, or by two juſtices; but now, by a late ſtatute, all licences granted by juſtices out of their ſeſſions are void [r].

By the ſtatute of Charles I. [s], which alters the penalties of that of Edward VI. the puniſhment for keeping an alehouſe, or common ſelling ale, beer, cyder, and perry, without a licence, is to pay twenty ſhillings for the uſe of the poor, to be levied by diſtreſs; which, if ſatisfaction be not made within three days, is to be ſold. And if there be no goods whereon to diſtrain, and the money be not paid within ſix days after conviction, the offender is to be delivered to the conſtable, or ſome inferior officer, to be whipped. For the ſecond offence, he is to be committed to the houſe of correction for a month; and for the third, he is to be committed to the ſaid houſe, till, by order of the juſtices, at their general ſeſſions, he be diſcharged.

The conviction is to be on the view of the juſtice, confeſſion of the party, or by the oath of two witneſſes.

And by this ſtatute, if the conſtable or officer to whom the party is committed to be whipped, *&c.* do not execute his warrant, the juſtice ſhall commit him to priſon, there to remain till he ſhall procure ſome one to execute the ſaid warrant, or until he ſhall pay forty ſhillings to the uſe of the poor.

The juſtices, at the time of granting the licence, ſhall take a recognizance from the party, not to ſuffer any unlawful games, nor other diſorders in his houſe; which is to be certified to the ſeſſions, and the juſtices there have a power to proceed for the forfeiture [t].

By the ſtatute of Jac. I. [u], alehouſe-keepers, who ſuffer townſmen to ſit tipling, (unleſs in the caſes

[q] 5th Edw. VI. cap. xxv. [r] 2d Geo. II. cap. xxviii. § 11.
[s] 2d Car. I. cap. iv. [t] 5th Edw. VI. ubi ſup.
[u] Cap. ix. ubi ſupra.

above-

Digitized by Google

above-mentioned [w]), forfeit ten ſhillings to the poor; the diſtreſs to be ſold within ſix days; and if no diſtreſs can be had, the party is to be committed till the forfeiture is paid.

Vintners who keep inns or victualling-houſes, are within this act [x].

And by two ſeveral ſtatutes [y], alehouſe-keepers convicted of this offence, are prohibited from keeping an alehouſe for the ſpace of three years.

Juſtices of peace likewiſe, for any diſorders committed in alehouſes contrary to the condition of the recognizance, may ſuppreſs ſuch houſes [z]; but then the proceeding muſt be on the recognizance, and the breach of the condition proved [a].

Now, on this conciſe view of theſe ſeveral laws, it appears that the legiſlature have been abundantly careful on this head, and that the only blame lyes on the remiſſneſs with which thoſe wholeſome proviſions have been executed.

But though I will not undertake to defend the magiſtrates of former times, who have ſurely been guilty of ſome neglect of their duty, yet on behalf of the preſent commiſſioners of the peace, I muſt obſerve, their caſe is very different. What Phyſicians tell us of the animal functions, will hold true when applied to laws: both by long diſuſe loſe all their elaſticity and force. Froward habits grow on men, as they do on children, by long indulgence; nor will either ſubmit eaſily to correction in matters where they have been accuſtomed to act at their pleaſure. They are very different offices, to execute a new or a well known law, and to revive one which is obſolete. In the caſe of a known law, cuſtom brings men to ſubmiſſion; and in all new proviſions the ill-will, if any, is levelled at the legiſlature, who are much more able to ſupport it than a few, or a ſingle magiſtrate. If therefore it be thought proper to ſuppreſs this vice, the legiſlature muſt once more take the matter into their hands; and to this, perhaps, they will be the more inclined, when

[w] Supra, p. 14. in the caſe of tiplers. [x] 1ſt Car I. cap. iv. [y] 7th Ja. I. cap. x. 21ſt Ja. I. cap. vii. [z] 5th Ed. VI. ubi ſup. [a] Salk. 45.

Digitized by Google

it comes to their knowledge, that a new kind of drunkenneſs, unknown to our anceſtors, is lately ſprung up amongſt us, and which if not put a ſtop to, will infallibly deſtroy a great part of the inferior people.

The drunkenneſs I here intend, is that acquired by the ſtrongeſt intoxicating liquors, and particularly by that poiſon called *gin*, which I have great reaſon to think is the principal ſuſtenance (if it may be ſo called) of more than an hundred thouſand people in this metropolis. Many of theſe wretches there are who ſwallow pints of this poiſon within the twenty-four hours, the dreadful effects of which I have the misfortune every day to ſee and to ſmell too. But I have no need to inſiſt on my own credit, or on that of my informers; the great revenue ariſing from the tax on this liquor (the conſumption of which is almoſt wholly confined to the loweſt order of people) will prove the quantity conſumed better than any other evidence.

Now, beſides the moral ill conſequences occaſioned by this drunkenneſs, with which in this treatiſe I profeſs not to deal; how greatly muſt this be ſuppoſed to contribute to thoſe political miſchiefs which this eſſay propoſes to remedy? This will appear from conſidering that however cheap this vile potion may be, the poorer ſort will not eaſily be able to ſupply themſelves with the quantities they deſire; for the intoxicating draught itſelf diſqualifies them from uſing any honeſt means to acquire it; at the ſame time that it removes all ſenſe of fear and ſhame, and emboldens them to commit every wicked and deſperate enterprize. Many inſtances of this I ſee daily: wretches are often brought before me, charged with theft and robbery, whom I am forced to confine before they are in a condition to be examined; and when they have afterwards become ſober, I have plainly perceived, from the ſtate of the caſe, that the *gin* alone was the cauſe of the tranſgreſſion, and have been ſometimes ſorry that I was obliged to commit them to priſon.

But, beyond all this, there is a political ill conſequence of this drunkenneſs, which, though it doth not

Digitized by Google

not ſtrictly fall within my preſent purpoſe, I ſhall be excuſed for mentioning, it being indeed the greateſt evil of all, and which muſt, I think, awaken our legiſlature to put a final period to ſo deſtructive a practice. And this is that dreadful conſequence which muſt attend the poiſonous quality of this pernicious liquor to the health, the ſtrength, and the very being of numbers of his Majeſty's moſt uſeful ſubjects. I have not enough of phyſical knowledge to diſplay the ill effects which ſuch poiſonous liquors produce in the conſtitution; for theſe I ſhall refer the reader to *The phyſical account of the nature of all diſtilled ſpirituous liquors, and the effect they have on human bodies* [*b*]. And though, perhaps, the conſequence of this poiſon, as it operates ſlowly, may not ſo viſibly appear in the diminution of the ſtrength, health, and lives of the preſent generation, yet let a man caſt his eyes but a moment towards our poſterity, and there the dreadful conſequences muſt ſtrike on the meaneſt capacity, and muſt alarm, I think, the moſt ſluggiſh degree of public ſpirit. What muſt become of the infant who is conceived in *gin?* with the poiſonous diſtillations of which it is nouriſhed both in the womb and at the breaſt. Are theſe wretched infants (if ſuch can be ſuppoſed capable of arriving at the age of maturity) to become our future ſailors, and our future grenadiers? Is it by the labour of ſuch as theſe, that all the emoluments of peace are to be procured us, and all the dangers of war averted from us? What could an Edward, or an Henry, a Marlborough or a Cumberland effect with an army of ſuch wretches? doth not this polluted ſource, inſtead of producing ſervants for the huſbandman and artificer, inſtead of providing recruits for the ſea or the field, promiſe only to fill almſhouſes and hoſpitals, and to infect the ſtreets with ſtench and diſeaſes?

In ſolemn truth, there is nothing of more ſerious conſideration, nor which more loudly calls for a re-

[*b*] This was compoſed by a very learned divine, with the aſſiſtance of ſeveral phyſicians, and publiſhed in the year 1736. The title is, "Diſtilled Spirituous Liquors the bane of the "Nation."

Digitized by Google

medy, than the evil now complained againſt. For what can be more worthy the care of the legiſlature than to preſerve the morals, the innocence, the health, ſtrength, and lives of a great part (I will repeat, the moſt uſeful part) of the people? So far am I, in my own opinion, from repreſenting this in too ſerious, or too ſtrong a light, that I can find no words or metaphor adequate to my ideas on this ſubject. The firſt inventor of this diabolical liquor may be compared to the poiſoner of a fountain, whence a large city was to derive its waters; the higheſt crime, as it hath been thought, of which human nature is capable. A degree of villainy, indeed, of which I cannot recollect any example; but ſurely if ever ſuch was practiſed, the governors of that city could not be thought blameleſs, did they not endeavour to the utmoſt, to withhold the citizens from drinking the poiſonous draught; and if ſuch a general thirſt after it prevailed, as we are told, poſſeſſed the people of Athens at the time of the plague [c], what could juſtify the not effectually cutting off all aqueducts, by which the poiſon was diſperſed among the people?

Nor will any thing leſs than abſolute deletion ſerve on the preſent occaſion. It is not making men pay 50 l. or 500 l. for a licence to poiſon; nor enlarging the quantity from two gallons to ten, which will extirpate ſo ſtubborn an evil. Here may, perhaps, be no little difficulty. To lay the axe to the ſtill-head, and prohibit all diſtillery in general, would deſtroy the chymiſt. If diſtilling this or that ſpirit was forbidden, we know how eaſily all partial prohibitions are evaded; nay, the chymiſt, was the matter confined to him, would ſoon probably become a common diſtiller, and his ſhop no better than a gin-ſhop; ſince what is more common than for men to adopt the morals of a thief at a fire, and to work their own private emolument out of a public miſchief? Suppoſe all ſpirituous liquors were, together with other poiſon, to be locked up in the chymiſts or apothecaries ſhops, thence

[c] Ἔδραμον ἐς φρέατα ἀπαύστῳ τῇ δίψῃ ξυνεχόμενοι. They ran into the wells, being conſtantly poſſeſſed by an inexhauſted thirſt. Thucydid. p. 112. edit. Hudſoni.

never

Digitized by Google

never to be drawn till some excellent physicians call them forth for the cure of nervous distempers! or suppose the price was to be raised so high, by a severe impost, that gin would be placed entirely beyond the reach of the vulgar; or perhaps the wisdom of the legislature may devise a better and more effectual way.

But if the difficulty be really insuperable, or if there be any political reason against the total demolition of this poison, so strong as to countervail the preservation of the morals, health, and beings of such numbers of his Majesty's subjects, let us, however, in some measure, palliate the evil, and lessen its immediate ill consequences, by a more effectual provision against drunkenness, than any we have at present, in which the method of conviction is too tedious and dilatory. Some little care on this head is surely necessary: for though the increase of thieves and the destruction of morality; though the loss of our labourers, our sailors, and our soldiers, should not be sufficient reasons, there is one which seems to be unanswerable and that is, the loss of our gin-drinkers; since, should the drinking this poison be continued in its present height during the next twenty years, there will, by that time, be very few of the common people left to drink it.

SECT. III.

Of GAMING *among the vulgar; a third consequence of their luxury.*

I COME now to the last great evil which arises from the luxury of the vulgar, and this is gaming; a school in which most highwaymen of great eminence have been bred. This vice is the more dangerous, as it is deceitful, and, contrary to every other species of luxury, flatters its votaries with the hopes of increasing their wealth; so that avarice itself is so far from securing us against its temptations, that it often betrays the more thoughtless and giddy part of mankind into them; promising riches without bounds, and those to be acquired by the most sudden as well as easy, and, indeed, pleasant means.

And

Digitized by Google

And here I must again remind the reader, that I have only the inferior part of mankind under my consideration. I am not so ill-bred as to disturb the company at a polite assembly, nor so ignorant of our constitution, as to imagine that there is a sufficient energy in the executive part to controul the œconomy of the great, who are beyond the reach of any, unless capital laws. Fashion, under whose guidance they are, and which created the evil, can alone cure it. With patience, therefore, we must wait, till this notable mistress of the few shall, in her good time, accomplish so desirable a change: in fact, till great men become wiser or better; till the prevalenee of some laudable taste shall teach them a worthier manner of employing their time; till they have sense enough to be reasoned, modesty enough to be laughed, or conscience enough to be frightened out of a silly, a shameful and sinful profligacy, attended with horrid waste of time, and the cruel destruction of the families of others, or of their own.

In the mean time we may, I think, reasonably desire of these great personages, that they would keep their favourite vice to themselves, and not suffer others, whose birth or fortune gives them no title to be above the terror of the laws, or the censure of their betters, to share with them in this privilege. Surely we may give great men the same advice which Archer in the play, gives to the officers of the army, *To kick out all—in red but their own.* What temptation can gamesters of fashion have to admit *inferior* sharpers into their society? Common sense, surely, will not suffer a man to risk a fortune against one who hath none of his own to stake against it.

I am well apprised that this is not much the case with persons of the first figure; but to gentlemen (and especially the younger sort) of the second degree, these fellows have found much too easy an access. Particularly at the several public places (I might have said gaming places) in this kingdom, too little care is taken to prevent the promiscuous union of company: and sharpers of the lowest kind have

Digitized by Google

have frequently there found admiſſion to their ſuperiors, upon no other pretence or merit than that of a laced coat, and with no other ſtock than that of aſſurance.

Some few of theſe fellows, by luckily falling in with an egregious bubble, ſome thoughtleſs young heir, or more commonly heireſs, have ſucceeded in a manner, which, if it may give ſome encouragement to others to imitate them, ſhould, at the ſame time, as ſtrongly admoniſh all gentlemen and ladies to be cautious with whom they mix in public places, and to avoid the ſharper as they would a peſt. But much the greater part of ſuch adventurers have met with a more probable and more deſerved fate; and having exhauſted their little fund in their attempts, have been reduced to a dilemma, in which it required more judgment and reſolution than are the property of many men, and more true ſenſe of honour than belongs to any debauched mind, to extricate themſelves by honeſt means. The only means, indeed, of this kind, are to quit their aſſumed ſtation, and to return to that calling, however mean and laborious, to which they were born and bred.

But, beſides that the way to this is often obſtructed with almoſt inſuperable difficulties; and falſe ſhame, at its very entrance, daſhes them in the face; how eaſily are they diſſuaded from ſuch diſagreeable thoughts, by the temptations with which Fortune allures them, of a poſſibility, at leaſt, of ſtill ſupporting their falſe appearance, and of retrieving all their former hopes? How greedily, may we imagine, this enchanting alternative will be embraced by every bold mind, in ſuch circumſtances! for what but the danger of the undertaking can deter one who hath nothing of a gentleman but his dreſs, to attain which he hath already diveſted himſelf of all ſenſe of honeſty? How eaſy is the tranſition from fraud to force? from a gameſter to a rogue? Perhaps, indeed, it is civil to ſuppoſe it any tranſition at all.

From this ſource, therefore, ſeveral of our moſt notable highwaymen have proceeded; and this hath likewiſe

Digitized by Google

likewise been the source of many other depredations on the honest part of mankind. So mischievous have been this kind of sharpers in society, that they have fallen under the particular notice of the legislature: for a statute in the reign of Queen Anne, reciting, 'That divers lewd and dissolute persons live at great 'expence, having no visible estate,' profession, or 'calling, to maintain themselves, but support those 'expences by gaming only;' enacts, 'That any two 'justices of the peace may cause to be brought before 'them all persons within their respective limits, whom 'they shall have just cause to suspect to have no visible 'estate, profession, or calling, to maintain themselves 'by, but do, for the most part, support themselves 'by gaming; and if such persons shall not make the 'contrary appear to such justices, they are to be 'bound to their good behaviour for a twelvemonth; 'and, in default of sufficient security, to be com-'mitted till they can find such security; which security '(in case they give it) is to be forfeited on their play-'ing or betting at any one time for more than the 'value of 20*s*. [*d*].'

As to gaming in the lower classes of life, so plainly tending to the ruin of tradesmen, the destruction of youth, and the multiplication of every kind of

[*d*] 9th Annæ, cap. xiv. § 6. 7. It would be of great service to the public to extend this statute to idle persons and sharpers in general; for many support themselves by frauds, and cheating practices, even worse than gaming, and have the impudence to appear in the dress of gentlemen, and at public places; without having any pretensions of birth or fortune, or without any honest or visible means of livelihood whatever. Such a law would not be without a precedent; for such is the excellent institution mentioned by Herodotus, in his Euterpe.—'Amasis,' says that historian, 'established a law in Egypt, that every 'Egyptian should annually declare before the governor of the 'province, by what means he maintained himself; and all 'those who did not appear, or who could not prove that they 'had some lawful livelihood, were punished by death. This 'law Solon introduced into Athens, where it was long in-'violably preserved as a most just and equitable provision.' Herod. edit. Hudsoni, p. 158. This punishment is surely too severe; but the law, under a milder penalty, is well worthy to be adopted.

fraud.

Digitized by Google

fraud and violence, the legiſlature hath provided very wholeſome laws [*e*].

By the 33d of Henry VIII. 'Every artificer, craftſman of any handicraft or occupation, huſbandman, labourer, ſervant at huſbandry, journeyman, or ſervant of artificer, mariners, fiſhermen, watermen, or any ſerving-men, are prohibited from playing at tables, dice, cards, &c. out of Chriſtmas, and in Chriſtmas are permitted to play only in their maſters houſes, or in his preſence, under the penalty of 20 *s.* And all manner of perſons are prohibited from playing at any bowl or bowls, in any open place out of their garden or orchard, under the penalty of 6 *s.* and 8 *d.*

'The conviction to be by action, information, bill, or otherwiſe, in any of the King's courts; one half of the penalty to the informer.

'Provided that ſervants may play at any times with their maſters, or by their licence; and all perſons who have a 100 *l. per annum* freehold, may give their ſervants, or others, reſorting to their houſes, a licence to play within the precinct of their houſes, gardens, or orchard.'

By this ſtatute likewiſe, 'No perſon whatever, by himſelf, factor, deputy, ſervant, or other perſon, ſhall for gain, keep, &c. any common, houſe, alley, or place of bowling, coatying, claſh-coyls, half-bowls, tennis, dicing-table, or carding, or any other manner of game, prohibited by any ſtatute heretofore made, or any unlawful game invented or made, or any other new unlawful game hereafter to be invented or made: the penalty is 40 *s. per* day, for keeping the houſe, &c. and 6 *s.* 8 *d.* for every perſon haunting and playing at ſuch houſe. Theſe penalties to be recovered, &c. as above.

'And all leaſes of gaming-houſes, alleys, &c. are made void at the election of the leſſee.'

[*e*] By a ſtatute made in the reign of Edward IV. now repealed, playing at ſeveral games therein mentioned, was puniſhed by two years impriſonment, and the forfeiture of [illegible]; and the maſter of the houſe was to be impriſoned for three years, and to forfeit 20 *l.* A great ſum in thoſe days!

Farther,

Digitized by Google

Farther, by the said statute, 'Power is given to 'all justices of peace, mayors, or other head-officers 'in every city, &c. to enter suspected houses and 'places, and to commit the keepers of the said houses, 'and the persons there haunting, resorting, and 'playing, to prison, and to keep them in prison, till 'the keepers have found sureties to enter into a recog-'nizance to the king's use, no longer to keep such 'house, &c. and the persons there found, to be bound 'by themselves, or with sureties, &c. at the discretion 'of the justice, &c. no more to haunt the said places, 'or play at any of the said games.'

And now by the statute of George II. this last clause is enforced, by giving the justice the same power, on the information of two persons, as he had before on view; and, by a more explicit power, to take sureties or not of the party, at his discretion.

Lastly, The statute of Henry VIII. enjoins the justices, &c. to make due search weekly, or once *per* month, at the farthest, under the penalty of forfeiting 40*s.* for every month during their neglect.

Thus stands the law; by which it may appear, that the magistrate is armed with sufficient authority to destroy all gaming among the inferior people; and that, without his neglect, or connivance, no such nuisance can possibly exist.

And yet, perhaps, the fault may not so totally lye at his door; for the recognizance is a mere bugbear, unless the party who breaks it should be sued thereon; which, as it is attended with great expence, is never done; so that, though many have forfeited it, not a single example of an estreat hath been made within my remembrance.

Again, it were to be wished, that the statute of George II. had required no more than one witness to the information; for even one witness, as I have found by experience, is very difficult to be procured.

However, as the law now is, seeing that the general bent of the people opposes itself to this vice, it is certainly, in a great measure, within the magistrate's power to suppress it, and so to harrass such as

Digitized by Google

propoſe to find their account in it, that theſe would ſoon be diſcouraged from the undertaking; nor can I conclude without obſerving, that this hath been lately executed with great vigour within the liberty of Weſtminſter.

There are, beſides, ſeveral other proviſions in our ſtatute-books againſt this deſtructive vice. By the ſtatute of Queen Anne [*f*], whoever cheats at play forfeits five times the ſum won by ſuch cheating, ſhall be deemed infamous, and ſuffer ſuch corporal puniſhment as in caſe of perjury. And whoever wins above 10 *l.* at any one ſitting, ſhall likewiſe forfeit five times the ſum won. Going ſhares with the winner, and betting on his ſide, are, in both inſtances, within the act.

By the ſame act, all ſecurities for money won at play are made void; and if a mortgage be made on ſuch account, the mortgagee doth not only loſe all benefit of it, but the mortgage immediately enures to the uſe of the next heir [*g*].

By this law, perſons who have loſt above 10 *l.* and have actually paid it, may recover the ſame by action within three months; and if they do not ſue for it within that time, any other perſon may [*h*]; and the defendant ſhall be liable to anſwer a bill for diſcovering ſuch ſum loſt, upon oath.

By 18th George II. [*i*] whoever wins or loſes 10 *l.* at play, or by betting at any one time, or 20 *l.* within twenty-four hours, is liable to be indicted, and ſhall be fined five times the value of the money loſt.

By 12th George II. [*k*] the games of Pharoah, the Ace of hearts, Baſſet, and Hazard, are declared to be lotteries; and all perſons who ſet up, maintain, and keep them, forfeit 200 *l.* and all who play at them forfeit 50 *l.* The conviction to be before one juſtice of peace, by the oath of one witneſs, or confeſſion of the party. And the juſtice neglecting his duty forfeits 10 *l.* *Note*, The proſecution againſt

[*f*] 9th Annæ, cap. xiv. by which the ſtatute of 16th Car. II. is enlarged and made more ſevere.
[*g*] Ibid. § 1.
[*h*] 9th Annæ, cap. ix. § 2.
[*i*] Chap. xxxiv.
[*k*] Chap. xxviii.

Digitized by Google

the keeper, *&c.* may be for a lottery, on the 8th George I. where the penalty is 500 *l.*

The act of 18th George II. includes the game of Rolly-Polly, or other prohibited game at cards or dice, within the penalties of the act above mentioned.

I have given this short sketch of the several acts partly for the use and encouragement of informers, and partly to insinuate to certain persons with what decency they can openly offend against such plain, such solemn laws, the severest of which many of themselves have, perhaps, been the makers of. How can they seriously answer, either to their honour or conscience, for giving the pernicious example of a vice, from which, as the legislature justly says in the preamble to the 16th of Charles II. 'Many mischiefs and inconveniencies do arise, and are daily 'found, in the encouraging of sundry idle and disorderly persons in their dishonest, lewd, and dissolute course of life, and to the circumventing, deceiving, cosening, and debauching of many of 'the younger sort, both of the nobility and gentry, 'and others, to the loss of their precious time, and 'the utter ruin of their estates and fortunes, and 'withdrawing them from noble and laudable employments and exercises!' Will a nobleman, I ask, confess that he can employ his time in no better amusement? or will he frankly own that he plays with any other view than that of amusement? Lastly, what can a man, who sins in open defiance of the laws of his country, answer to the *vir bonus est quis?* can he say,

Qui consulta patrum, qui leges juraque servat?

Or can he apply that celebrated line,

Oderunt peccare boni virtutis honore,

to himself, who owes to his greatness, and not to his innocence, that he is not deterred from such vices—*formidine pœnæ?*

SECT.

Digitized by Google

SECT. IV.

Of the laws that relate to the PROVISION *for the poor.*

HAVING now run through the several immediate consequences of a general luxury among the lower people, all which, as they tend to promote their distresses, may be reasonably supposed to put many of them of the bolder kind upon unlawful and violent means of relieving the mischief which such vices have brought upon them; I come now to a second cause of the evil, in the improper regulation of what is called the poor in this kingdom, arising, I think, partly from the abuse of some laws, and partly from the total neglect of others; and (if I may presume to say it) somewhat perhaps from a defect in the laws themselves.

It must be matter of astonishment to any man to reflect, that in a country where the poor are, beyond all comparison, more liberally provided for than in any other part of the habitable globe, there should be found more beggars, more distressed and miserable objects than are to be seen throughout all the states of Europe.

And yet, undoubted as this fact is, I am far from agreeing with Mr Shaw [*], who says, 'There are 'few, if any, nations or countries where the poor 'are more neglected, or are in a more scandalous 'nasty condition, than in England. Whether (says 'he) this is owing to that natural inbred cruelty for 'which Englishmen are so much noted among foreigners, or to that medley of religions which are so 'plentifully sown, and so carefully cherished among 'us, who think it enough to take care of themselves, 'and take a secret pride and pleasure in the poverty 'and distresses of those of another persuasion, &c.'

That the poor are in a very nasty and scandalous condition is perhaps too true; but sure the general charge against the people of England, as well as the invidious aspersion on particular bodies of them, is

[*] Vol. II. p. 2.

Digitized by Google

highly unjuſt and groundleſs. Nor do I know that any nation hath ventured to fix this character of cruelty on us. Indeed our inhoſpitality to foreigners hath been ſometimes remarked; but that we are cruel to one another is not, I believe, the common, I am ſure it is not the true opinion. Can a general neglect of the poor be juſtly charged on a nation in which the poor are provided for by a tax, frequently equal to what is called the land-tax, and where there are ſuch numerous inſtances of private donations, ſuch numbers of hoſpitals, almſhouſes, and charitable proviſions of all kinds?

Nor can any ſuch neglect be charged on the legiſlature, under whoſe inſpection this branch of polity hath been almoſt continually from the days of Queen Elizabeth to the preſent time: inſomuch, that Mr Shaw himſelf enumerates no leſs than thirteen acts of parliament relating to the indigent and helpleſs poor.

If therefore, there be ſtill any deficiency in this reſpect, it muſt, I think, ariſe from one of the three cauſes above mentioned; that is, from ſome defect in the laws themſelves; or from the perverſion of theſe laws; or, laſtly, from the neglect in their execution.

I will conſider all theſe with ſome attention.

The 43d of Elizabeth [*m*] enacts,

Firſt, That the church-wardens of every pariſh, and two ſubſtantial houſe holders at leaſt, ſhall be yearly appointed to be overſeers of the poor.

Secondly That theſe overſeers ſhall, with the conſent of two juſtices of the peace, put out apprentices the children of poor people. And all married or unmarried perſons, who have no means or trade to maintain themſelves, ſhall be put to work.

Thirdly, That they ſhall raiſe by a parochial tax a convenient ſtock of flax, hemp, wool, thread, iron, and other ware and ſtuff, to ſet the poor to work.

Fourthly, That they ſhall from the ſame tax provide towards the neceſſary relief of the lame, impotent, old, blind, and others, being poor, and not able to work.

[*m*] Chap. iii.

Fifthly,

Digitized by Google

Fifthly, That they ſhall, out of the ſame tax, put the children of poor perſons apprentices.

That theſe proviſions may all be executed, that act veſted the overſeers with the following powers; and enforced the executing them by the following penalties.

I. The overſeers are appointed to meet once at leaſt every month in the church after divine ſervice, there, ſays the act, to conſider of ſome good courſe to be taken, and ſome meet order to be ſet down *in the premiſſes*. And to do this they are enjoined by a penalty; for every one abſenting himſelf from ſuch meeting without a juſt excuſe to be allowed by two juſtices of the peace, or being negligent in his office, or in the execution of the orders aforeſaid, forfeits 20 *s*.

And after the end of their year, and after other overſeers nominated, they are within four days to make and yield up to two juſtices of the peace a true and perfect account of all ſums of money by them received or aſſeſſed, and of ſuch ſtores as ſhall be in their hands, or in the hands of the poor, to work, and of all other things concerning their office, &c. And if the church-wardens and overſeers refuſe to account, they are to be committed by two juſtices till they ſhall have made a true account.

II. The overſeers and church-wardens, both preſent and ſubſequent, are empowered by warrant from two juſtices to levy all the monies aſſeſſed, and all arrearages of thoſe who refuſe to pay, by diſtreſs and ſale of the refuſer's goods; and the ſubſequent overſeers may, in the ſame manner, levy the money and ſtock in the hands of the precedent; and for want of diſtreſs, the party is to be committed by two juſtices, without bail, till the ſame be paid.

III. They have a power to compel the poor to work; and ſuch as refuſe or neglect, the juſtice may commit to the houſe of correction, or common goal.

IV. The overſeers may compel children to be apprentices, and may bind them where they ſhall ſee convenient; 'till the manchild ſhall attain the age of twenty-four, or the woman-child the age of twenty-one, or till the time of her marriage; the indenture

Digitized by Google

to be as effectual to all purposes as the covenant of one of full age.

V. They have a power to contract with the lord of the manor, [*n*] and on any parcel of ground on the waste, to erect, at the general charge of the parish, convenient houses of dwelling for the impotent poor; and to place several inmates in the same cottage, notwithstanding the stages [*o*] of cottages.

VI. They can compel the father and grandfather, mother, and grandmother, and children of every poor, old, blind, and impotent person, or of any other person not being able to work, (provided such father, &c. be of sufficient ability), at their own charges, to relieve and maintain such poor person, in such manner, and after such rate, as shall be assessed by the sessions, under the penalty of 20 *s.* for every month's omission.

VII. If no overseers be named, every justice within the division forfeits 5 *l.*

So far this statute of Elizabeth, by which the legislature may seem very fully to have provided, *First*, For the absolute relief of such poor as are by age or infirmity rendered unable to work; and, *Secondly*, For the employment of such as are able.

'The former of these,' says Lord Hale, 'in his discourse on this subject, 'seems to be a charity of more 'immediate exigence; but the latter (viz. the employ-'ment of the poor) is a charity of greater extent, 'and of very great and important consequence to the 'public wealth and peace of the kingdom, as also to 'the benefit and advantage of the poor.' 'And this,' as Mr Shaw observes, 'would prevent the children of 'our poor being brought up in laziness and beggary, 'whereby beggary is entailed from generation to ge-'neration. This is certainly the greatest charity; for 'though he who gives to any in want does well, yet 'he who employs and educates the poor, so as to 'render them useful to the public, does better; for 'that would be many hundred thousand pounds *per* '*annum* benefit to this kingdom.'

[*n*] This must be done by consent and order of sessions.
[*o*] These cottages are never after to be applied to any other use.

Now,

Digitized by Google

Now, the former of these provisions hath, perhaps, though in a very slovenly and inadequate manner, been partly carried into execution; but the latter, I am afraid I may too boldly assert, hath been utterly neglected and disregarded. Surely this is a most scandalous perversion of the design of the legislature, which through the whole statute seems to have had the employment of the able poor chiefly under their consideration; for to this purpose only almost every power in it is established, and every clause in it very manifestly directed. To say the truth, as this law hath been perverted in the execution, it were, perhaps, to be wished it had never been made. Not because it is not our duty to relieve real objects of distress; but because it is so much the duty of every man, and I may add, so much the inclination of most Englishmen, that it might have been safely left to private charity; or a public provision might surely have been made for it in a much cheaper and more effectual manner.

To prove the abuse of this law, my Lord Hale appeals to all the populous parishes in England, (he might, I believe, have included some which are not over populous:) 'Indeed, (says he), there are rates 'made for the relief of the impotent poor; and, it 'may be, the same relief is also given in a narrow 'measure unto some others that have great families, and upon this they live miserably, and at best 'from hand to mouth; and if they cannot get work 'to make out their livelihood, they and their children set up a trade of begging at best: but it is 'rare to see any provision of a stock in any parish 'for the relief of the poor; and the reasons are 'principally these: 1. The generality of people 'that are able, yet are unwilling to exceed the present necessary charge; they do chuse to live for 'an hour rather than project for the future: and 'although, possibly, trebling their exhibition in one 'gross sum at the beginning of the year, to raise a 'stock, might, in all probability, render their future 'yearly payments, for seven years together, less by 'half, or two-thirds, than what must be without it;

'yet

Digitized by Google

'yet they had rather continue on their yearly payments, year after year, though it exhauſt them in time, and make the poor nothing better at the year's end. 2. Becauſe thoſe places where there are moſt poor, conſiſt for the moſt part of tradeſmen, whoſe eſtates ly principally in their ſtocks, which they will not endure to be ſearched into, to make them contributary to raiſe any conſiderable ſtock for the poor, nor indeed ſo much as to the ordinary contributions: but they lay all the rates to the poor upon the rents of lands and houſes, which alone, without the help of the ſtocks, are not able to raiſe a ſtock for the poor, although it is very plain that ſtocks are as well by law rateable as lands, both to the relief and raiſing a ſtock for the poor. 3. Becauſe the church-wardens and overſeers, to whom this power is given, are inhabitants of the ſame pariſh, and are either unwilling to charge themſelves, or to diſpleaſe their neighbours in charging more than they needs muſt towards the poor: and although it were to be wiſhed and hoped that the juſtices of the peace would be forward to enforce them if they might, though it may concern them alſo in point of preſent profit, yet, if they would do any thing herein, they are not impowered to compel the church-wardens and overſeers to do it, who moſt certainly will never go about it to burden, as they think, themſelves, and diſpleaſe their neighbours, unleſs ſome compulſory power were not only lodged by law, but alſo executed by ſome that may have a power over them to enforce it; or to do it, if they do it, either partially or too ſparingly. 4. Becauſe people do not conſider the inconvenience that will in time grow to themſelves by this neglect, and the benefit that would in a little time accrue to them by putting it in practice, if they would have but a little patience.'

To theſe I will add a fifth reaſon: Becauſe the church-wardens and overſeers are too apt to conſider their office as a matter of private emolument; to waſte part of the money raiſed for the uſe of the

Digitized by Google

the poor in feasting and riot; and too often to pervert the power given them by the statute, to foreign, and sometimes to the very worst of purposes.

The above considerations bring my Lord Hale to complain of some defects in the law itself, 'in 'which,' says he, 'there is no power from the justices of the peace, nor any superintendant power 'to compel the raising of a stock, where the church-'wardens and overseers neglect it.

'The act chargeth every parish apart, where, it 'may be, they are liable to do little towards it; 'neither would it be so effectual as if three, four, 'five, or more contiguous parishes did contribute towards raising of a stock proportionably to their poor 'respectively

'There is no power for hiring or erecting a com-'mon house, or place, for their common work house; 'which may be, in some respects, and upon some occasions useful and necessary.'

As to the first of these, I do not find any alteration hath been made; nor, if there was, might it possibly produce any desired effect. The consequence, as it appears, would be only making churchwardens of the justices of peace, which many of them are already, not highly to the satisfaction of their parishes; too much power vested in one man being too apt, perhaps, to beget envy.

The second and third do pretty near amount to one and the same defect; and this, I think, is at present totally removed. Indeed, in my Lord Hale's own time, though probably after he had written this treatise, a work-house was erected in London under the powers given by the statute made in the 13th and 14th of Charles II. [p], and I believe with very good success.

Since that time other corporations have followed the example; as the city of Bristol in the reign of King William [q], and that of Worcester in the reign of Queen Anne [r], and in other places.

[p] Chap. xii. [q] 8th and 9th Wil. III. chap. xxx.
[r] 2d Annæ, c. viii.

And

Digitized by Google

And now, by a late ſtatute, made in the reign of King George the I. [*s*], the power of erecting work-houſes is made general over the kingdom.

Now, either this method propoſed by Lord Hale is inadequate to the purpoſe, or this act of parliament hath been groſsly perverted: for certain it is that the evil is not removed, if indeed it be leſſened, by the erection of work-houſes. Perhaps, indeed, one objection which my Lord Hale makes to the ſtatute of Elizabeth may here recur, ſeeing that there is nothing compulſory, but all left to the will and direction of the inhabitants.

But in truth the method itſelf will never produce the deſired effect, as the excellent Sir Joſiah Child well obſerves [*t*],——'It may be objected,' ſays he, 'that this work (the proviſion for the poor) may as 'well be done in diſtinct pariſhes, if all pariſhes were 'obliged to build work-houſes, and employ their poor 'therein, as Dorcheſter, and ſome others have done 'with good ſucceſs. I anſwer, that ſuch attempts 'have been made in many places to my knowledge, 'with very good intents and ſtrenuous endeavours; 'but all that I ever heard of proved vain and ineffectual.' For the truth of which, I believe, we may appeal to common experience.

And, perhaps, no leſs ineffectual would be the ſcheme propoſed by this worthy gentleman, though it ſeems to promiſe fairer than that of the learned chief juſtice; yet neither of them ſeems to ſtrike at the root of the evil. Before I deliver any ſentiments of my own, I ſhall briefly take a view of the many ſubſequent proviſions with which the legiſlature have from time to time enforced and ſtrengthened the foregoing ſtatute of Elizabeth.

The power of putting out children [*u*], apprentices is enforced by the 3d of Charles I. [*w*], which

[*s*] 9th George I. cap. i. [*t*] Eſſay on trade, chap. ii.

[*u*] See 7th Ja. I. chap iii. which directs the manner of putting out apprentices, in purſuance of any gifts made to corporations, &c. for that purpoſe.

[*w*] Chap. iv. § 22. p. 8.; the ſame clauſe is in 21ſt Ja. I. chap. xxviii. § 33.

enacts

Digitized by Google

enacts, 'That all persons to whom the overseers shall 'bind children by virtue of the statute of Elizabeth, 'may receive and keep them as apprentices.' But there yet wanted, as Lord Hale says, a 'sufficient 'compulsory for persons to take them;' wherefore it is enacted, by 8th and 9th Will. III. [x], 'That all 'persons to whom prentices are appointed to be bound 'by the overseers, with consent of the justices, shall 'receive them, and execute the other part of the in-'denture, under the penalty of 10*l* for refusing, to 'be recovered before two justices, on the oath of one 'of the church-wardens or overseers.'

The power of setting the poor to work is enlarged by 3d Charles I. [y]. This act gives the church-wardens and overseers of the poor a power, with the consent of two justices, or of one, if no more justices shall be within their limits, to set up and occupy any trade for the setting the poor to work.

The power of relieving the impotent poor, (*i. e.* of distributing the public money), the only one which hath much exercised the minds of the parish-officers, the legislature seems to think rather wanted restraining than enlarging; accordingly, in the reign of King William [z] they made an act to limit the power of the officers in this respect. As the act contains the sense of parliament of the horrid abuse of the statute of Elizabeth, I will transcribe part of a paragraph from it *verbatim*.

'And whereas many inconveniencies do daily arise 'in cities, towns-corporate, and parishes where the 'inhabitants are very numerous, by reason of the un-'limited power of church-wardens and overseers of 'the poor, who do frequently, upon frivolous pre-'tences, (but chiefly for their own private ends), give 'relief to what persons and number they think fit; 'and such persons being entered into the collection-'bill, do become after that a great charge to the 'parish, notwithstanding the occasion or pretence of 'their collection oftentimes ceases, by which means 'the rates for the poor are daily increased, contrary

[x] Chap. xxx. § 6. [y] Chap. iv. § 21. ubi supra.
[z] 3d and 4th Will. and Mary, chap. xi. § 11.

'to

'to the true intent of a ſtatute made in the 43d year of 'the reign of her Majeſty Queen Elizabeth, intituled. 'An act for the relief of the poor; for remedying of 'which, the ſtatute enacts, That, for the future, a 'book ſhall be provided and kept in every pariſh, (at 'the charge of the ſame pariſh), wherein the names 'of all perſons receiving collections, &c. ſhall be re-'giſtered, with the day and year of their firſt recei-'ving it. This book to be yearly or oftener viewed 'by the pariſhioners, and the names of the perſons 'who receive collection ſhall be called over, and the 'reaſon of the receiving it examined, and a new liſt 'made; and no other perſon is allowed to receive 'collection but by order of a juſtice of peace, &c. 'except in caſes of peſtilential diſeaſes, or ſmall-'pox [a].'

The 8th and 9th of the ſame king, reciting the fear of the legiſlature, 'That the money raiſed only 'for the relief of ſuch as were as well impotent as 'poor, ſhould be miſapplied and conſumed by the 'idle, ſturdy, and diſorderly beggars,' enacts, 'That 'every perſon, his wife, children, &c. who ſhall re-'ceive relief from the pariſh ſhall wear a badge 'marked with the letter *P*, &c. in default of which 'a juſtice of peace may order the relief of ſuch per-'ſons to be abridged, ſuſpended, or withdrawn, or 'may commit them for twenty-one days to the houſe 'of correction, there to be kept to hard labour. And 'every church-warden or overſeer who relieves any 'one without ſuch a badge, being convicted before 'one juſtice, forfeits 20 *s.*'

Whether the juſtices made an ill uſe of the power given them by the ſtatute of the 3d and 4th of King William, I will not determine; but the parliament thought proper afterwards to abridge it: for by the 9th of George I. [b], the juſtices are forbidden 'to 'make any order for the relief of a poor perſon, till 'oath is firſt made of a reaſonable cauſe; and that

[a] The ſame ſtatute, in another part, charges the overſeers, &c. with applying the poor's money to their own uſe.

[b] Chap xxx. § 2.

Digitized by Google

'application hath been made to the parishioners at 'the vestry, or to two officers, and that relief hath 'been refused; nor can the justice then give his or- 'der, till he hath summoned the overseers to shew 'cause why relief should not be given.'

By the same statute, 'Those persons to whom 'the justices order relief, are to be registered in the 'parish-books, as long only as the cause of the re- 'lief continues. Nor shall any parish-officer be al- 'lowed any money given to the unregistered poor, 'unless on the most emergent occasion. The penal- 'ty for charging such money to the parish account 'is 5 *l.* The conviction is to be before two justices.'

Lastly, That the parish may, in all possible cases, be relieved from the burden of the poor; whereas the statute of Elizabeth obliges the father, mother, &c. and children, if able, to relieve their poor chil- dren and parents; so, by the 5th of Geo. I. [*c*], it is provided, 'That where any wife or child shall 'be left by the husband or parents a charge to any 'parish, the church-wardens or overseers may, by 'the order of two justices, seize so much of the goods 'and chattels, and receive so much of the annual- 'rents and profits of the lands and tenements of such 'husband or parent, as the justices shall order, to- 'wards the discharge of the parish; and the sessions 'may impower the church-wardens and overseers to 'dispose thereof, for the providing for the wife and 'bringing up the children, &c.'

Such is the law that relates immediately to the maintenance of the impotent poor; a law so very ample in its provision, so strongly fortified with en- forcing powers, and so cautiously limited with all proper restraints, that, at first sight, it appears suffi- ciently adequate to every purpose for which it was intended; but experience hath convinced us of the contrary.

And here I am well aware of the delicate dilem- ma to which I may seem reduced; since how shall I

[*c*] Chap. viii.

Digitized by Google

presume to suppose any defects in a law, which the legislature seems to have laboured with such incessant diligence? but I am not absolutely driven to this disagreeable necessity, as the fault may so fairly be imputed to the non-execution of the law: and indeed to the ill execution of the statute of Elizabeth, my Lord Chief Justice Hale chiefly imputes the imperfect provision for the poor in his time.

Sir Josiah Child, it is true, speaks more boldly, and charges the defect on the laws themselves: one general position, however, which he lays down, 'That 'there never was a good law made, that was not well 'executed,' is surely very questionable. So therefore must be his opinion, if founded on that maxim; and this opinion, perhaps, he would have changed, had he lived to see the latter constitutions on that head.

But whatever defects there may be in the laws, or in the execution of them, I much doubt whether either of these great men hath found the means of curing them; and this I am the more forward to say, as the legislature, by a total neglect of *both* their schemes, seem to give sufficient countenance to my assertion.

In a matter then of so much difficulty, as well as so great importance, how shall I venture to deliver my own opinion? Such, indeed, is the difficulty and importance of this question, that Sir Josiah Child thinks, 'If a whole session of parliament were em-'ployed on this single concern, it would be time spent 'as much to the glory of God, and good of this na-'tion, as in any thing that noble and worthy patriots 'of their country can be engaged in.'

However, under the protection of the candid, and with deference to the learned reader, I will enter on this subject, in which, I think, I may with modesty say, I have had some experience; and in which, I can with truth declare, I have employed no little time. If any gentleman, who hath had more experience, hath more duly considered the matter, or whose superior abilities enable him to form a better judgment, shall think proper to improve my endeavours, he hath my ready consent. Provided

the

Digitized by Google

the end be effected, I shall be contented with the honour of my share (however inconsiderable) in the means: nay, should my labours be attended only with neglect and contempt, I think I have learned (for I am a pretty good historian) to bear such misfortunes without much repining.

By THE POOR, then, I understand such persons as have no estate of their own to support them, without industry; nor any profession or trade, by which, with industry, they may be capable of gaining a comfortable subsistence.

This class of the people may be considered under these three divisions:

First, Such poor as are unable to work.

Secondly, Such as are able and willing to work.

Thirdly, Such as are able to work, but not willing.

As to the first of these, they are but few. An utter incapacity to work must arise from some defect, occasioned either by nature or accident. Natural incapacities are generally the most (perhaps the only) considerable ones; for as to accidental maims, how very rarely do they happen? and, I must add, how very nobly are they provided for, when they do happen! Again, as to natural incapacities, they are but few, unless these two general circumstances, one of which must, and the other may befall all men: I mean the extremes of youth and age; for, besides these, the number of persons who really labour under an utter incapacity of work, will, on a just inspection, be found so trifling, that two of the London hospitals might contain them all. The reader will be pleased to observe, I say of those who *really labour*, &c for he is much deceived, who computes the number of objects in the nation, from the great number which he daily sees in the streets of London; among whom I myself have discovered some notorious cheats; and my good friend Mr Welch, the worthy high-constable of Holburn division, many more. Nothing, as I have been well informed, is more common among these wretches, than for the lame, when provoked, to use their crutches as weapons instead of supporters; and for the blind, if

Digitized by Google

they ſhould hear the beadle at their heels, to outrun the dogs which guided them before. As to diſeaſes, to which human nature is univerſally liable, they ſometimes (though very rarely, for health is the happy portion of poverty) befall the poor; and at all ſuch times they are certainly objects of charity, and entitled, by the law of God, to relief from the rich.

Upon the whole, this firſt claſs of the poor is ſo truly inconſiderable in number, and to provide for them in the moſt ample and liberal manner would be ſo very eaſy to the public; to ſupport and cheriſh them, and to relieve their wants, is a duty ſo poſitively commanded by our Saviour, and is withal ſo agreeable and delightful in itſelf, affording the moſt deſirable object to the ſtrong paſſion of pity; nay, and in the opinion of ſome, to pride and vanity alſo; that, I am firmly perſuaded, it might be ſafely left to voluntary charity, unenforced by any compulſive law. And if any man will profeſs ſo little knowledge of human nature, and ſo mean and unjuſt an opinion of the Chriſtianity, I might ſay the humanity of this country, as to affect a contrary opinion, notwithſtanding all I have ſaid, let him anſwer the following inſtance, which may be called an argument *à poſteriori*, for the truth of my aſſertion. Such, I think, is the preſent bounty to beggars; for, at a time when every man knows the vaſt tax which is raiſed for the ſupport of the poor, and when all men of property muſt feel their contributions to this tax, mankind are ſo forward to relieve the appearance of diſtreſs in their fellow-creatures, that every beggar, who can but moderately well perſonate miſery, is ſure to find relief and encouragement; and this, though the giver muſt have great reaſon to doubt the reality of the diſtreſs, and when he can ſcarce be ignorant that his bounty is illegal [*d*], and that he is encouraging a nuiſance. What

[*d*] This was forbidden by many ſtatutes; and by the act of 27th Henry VIII. every perſon giving any money in alms, but to the common-boxes and common-gatherings in every pariſh, forfeits twelve times as much as he gives.

then

Digitized by Google

then must be the case, when there should be no such tax, nor any such contribution; and when, by relieving a known and certain object of charity, every good man must be assured, that he is not only doing an act which the law allows, but which christianity and humanity too exact of him?

However, if there be any person who is yet unwilling to trust the poor to voluntary charity; or if it should be objected, that there is no reason to lay the whole burden on the worthier part of mankind, and to excuse the covetous rich; and that a tax is therefore necessary to force open the purses of these latter; let there be a tax then, and a very inconsiderable one would effectually supply the purpose [*e*].

I come now to consider the *second* class. These are in reason, though not in fact, equally objects of the regard of the compassionate man, and much more worthy the care of the politican; and yet, without his care, they will be in a much worse condition than the others: for they have none of these incitements of pity which fill the pockets of the artful beggar, and procure relief for the blind, the lame, and other visible subjects of compassion; such therefore without a law, and without an honest and sensible execution of that law, must languish under, and often perish with, want. A melancholy and dreadful reflection! and the more so, as they are capable of being made not only happy in themselves, but highly useful to the service of the community.

To provide for these, seems, as I have said, to have been the chief design of the statute of Elizabeth, as well as of several laws enacted since; and that this design hath hitherto failed, may possibly have arisen from one single mistake; but a mistake which must be fatal, as it is an error in the first concoction. The mistake I point at is, that the legisla-

[*e*] The reader is desired to consider the author here as speaking only of the impotent poor, and as hoping that some effectual means may be found out of procuring work and consequently maintenance, for the able and industrious.

Digitized by Google

ture have left the whole work to the overſeers. They have rather told them what they are to do, (*viz.* to employ the induſtrious poor) than how they ſhall do it. It is true, the original act directs them, by a parochial tax, to raiſe a convenient ſtock of flax, hemp, wool, thread, iron, and other ware and ſtuff, to ſet the poor to work; a direction ſo general and imperfect, that it can be no wonder, conſidering what ſort of men the overſeers of the poor have been, that it ſhould never have been carried into execution.

To ſay the truth, this affair of finding an univerſal employment for the induſtrious poor, is of great difficulty, and requires talents not very bountifully ſcattered by nature among the whole human ſpecies. And yet, difficult as it is, it is not, I hope, impracticable, ſeeing that it is of ſuch infinite concern to the good of the community. Hands for the work are already ſuppoſed; and ſurely trade and manufacture are not come to ſo low an ebb, that we ſhould not be able to find work for the hands. The method of adapting only ſeems to be wanting: and though this may not be eaſy to diſcover, it is a taſk ſurely not above the reach of the Britiſh parliament, when they ſhall think proper to apply themſelves to it.

Nor will it, I hope, be conſtrued preſumption in me to ſay, that I have myſelf thought of a plan for this purpoſe, which I am ready to produce, when I ſhall have reaſon to ſee the leaſt glimpſe of hope, that my labour in drawing it out at length would not be abſolutely and certainly thrown away.

The laſt, and much the moſt numerous claſs of poor, are thoſe who are able to work, and not willing. This likewiſe hath fallen under the eye of the legiſlature, and proviſions have been made concerning it; which, if in themſelves efficacious, have at leaſt failed of producing any good effect, from a total neglect in the execution.

By the 43 Eliz. the church-wardens and overſeers, or greater part of them, with the conſent of two juſtice, ſhall take order for the ſetting to work the children of all ſuch parents as they ſhall think not able

Digitized by Google

able to maintain them; as alſo, all ſuch married or unmarried perſons, as ſhall have no means to maintain themſelves, nor any ordinary trade or calling whereby to get their living.

Beſides this power of compelling the poor to work, the legiſlature hath likewiſe compelled them to become, 1. Apprentices, and, 2. Servants. We have already ſeen the power of the overſeers, with the aſſiſtance of the juſtices, to put poor children apprentices; and likewiſe to oblige their maſters to receive them. And long before a compulſion was enacted [*f*] on poor perſons to become apprentices; ſo that any houſholder, having and uſing half a plough-land in tillage, may compel any poor perſon, under twenty-one, and unmarried, to ſerve as an apprentice in huſbandry, or in any other kind of art, myſtery, or ſcience (before expreſſed in the act [*g*]); and if ſuch perſon, being ſo required, refuſe to become an apprentice, one juſtice of peace may compel him, or commit him to priſon, there to remain till he will be bound.

2dly, The poor are obliged to become ſervants.

By the 5th of Eliz. [*h*] it is enacted, 'That every 'perſon being unmarried, and every other perſon 'under the age of thirty, who hath been brought up 'in any of the ſciences, &c. of cloathiers, woolen-'cloth weavers, tuckers, fullers, cloth-workers, ſhear-'men, dyers, hoſiers, tailors, ſhoemakers, tanners, 'pewterers, bakers, brewers, glovers, cutlers, ſmiths, 'farriers, curriers, ſadlers, ſpurriers, turners, tappers, 'hatmakers, or felt-makers, butchers, cooks, or 'millers, or who hath exerciſed any of theſe trades 'by the ſpace of three years or more; and not having 'in lands, rents, &c. an eſtate of 40 *s.* clear yearly 'value, freehold, nor being worth in goods 10 *l.* and 'ſo allowed by two juſtices of the county where he 'hath moſt commonly inhabited, or by the mayor, &c. 'nor being retained with any perſon in huſbandry, 'nor retained in any of the above ſciences, or in any

[*f*] 5 Eliz. c. iv. § 4, 35. [*g*] *Viz.* Every trade then uſed
[*h*] Chap. iv. § 4.

Digitized by Google

'other art or ſcience; nor lawfully retained in houſe-'hold, or in any office, with any nobleman, gentle-'man, or others: nor having a convenient farm, 'or other holding, in tillage, whereupon he may law-'fully employ his labour, during the time that he 'ſhall continue unmarried, or under the age of thirty, 'upon requeſt made by any perſon uſing the art or 'myſtery wherein the perſon ſo required hath been 'exerciſed as aforeſaid, ſhall be retained.

'And every perſon between the age of twelve and 'ſixty, not being lawfully retained in the ſeveral ſer-'vices mentioned in the ſtatute [*i*], nor being a gentle-'man born, or a ſcholar in either univerſity, or in 'any ſchool, nor having an eſtate of freehold of 40 *s.* '*per annum* value, nor being worth in goods 10 *l.* 'nor being heir to 10 *l. per annum*, or 40 *l.* in goods; 'nor being a neceſſary or convenient ſervant lawfully 'retained; nor having a convenient farm or holding, 'nor otherwiſe lawfully retained; ſhall be compelled 'to be retained to ſerve in huſbandry, by the year, 'with any perſon uſing huſbandry within the ſame 'ſhire.

'Every ſuch perſon refuſing to ſerve upon requeſt, 'or covenanting to ſerve and not ſerving, or depart-'ing from his ſervice before the end of his term, un-'leſs for ſome reaſonable cauſe to be allowed before 'a juſtice of the peace, mayor, &c. or departing at 'the end of his term without a quarter's warning 'given before two witneſſes, may be committed by 'two juſtices of the peace to priſon, there to remain 'without bail or mainprize, till he ſhall become bound 'to his maſter, &c. to ſerve, &c. [*k*].

'Nor ſhall any maſter, in any of the arts and ſci-'ences aforeſaid, retain a ſervant for leſs than a year '[*l*]; nor ſhall any maſter put away a ſervant re-'tained by this act within his term, nor at the end of 'the term without a quarter's warning, under the 'penalty of 40 *s.* [*m*].

[*i*] Chap. iv. § 7.
[*k*] Ib. § 5, 6, 9.
[*l*] Ib. § 3.
[*m*] Ib. § 5, 6, 8.

'Arti-

Digitized by Google

'Artificers, &c. are compellable by a juſtice of 'the peace, or the conſtable or other head-officer of 'a townſhip, to ſerve in the time of hay or corn 'harveſt. The penalty of diſobedience is impriſon-'ment in the ſtocks by the ſpace of two days and one 'night [*n*].

'Women, between the age of twelve and forty, 'may be obliged, by two juſtices, to enter into 'ſervice by the year, week, or day; or may be com-'mitted *quouſque* [*o*].

The legiſlature, having thus appointed what perſons ſhall ſerve, have gone farther, and have directed a method of aſcertaining how they ſhall ſerve: for which uſe principally is that excellent conſtitution of 5th Elizabeth [*p*], 'That the juſtices of the peace, 'with the ſheriff of the county, if he conveniently 'may, the mayor, &c. in towns corporate, ſhall 'yearly, within ſix weeks of Eaſter, aſſemble toge-'ther, and, with the aſſiſtance of ſuch diſcreet per-'ſons as they ſhall think proper to call to them, 'and reſpecting the plenty or ſcarcity of the time, 'and other circumſtances, ſhall, within the limits of 'their commiſſion, rate and appoint the wages of 'artificers, labourers, &c. by the year, month, week, 'or day, with or without meat and drink.' Then the ſtatute enumerates ſeveral particulars, in the moſt explicit manner, and concludes with theſe general words: 'And for any other kind of reaſonable la-'bour and ſervice.'

'Theſe rates are appointed to be engroſſed in 'parchment, and certified into chancery, before the '12th day of July; and before the firſt day of Sep-'tember, ſeveral printed proclamations, containing 'the rates, and a command to all perſons to obſerve 'them, are to be ſent to the ſheriff and juſtices, and to 'the mayor, &c. Theſe proclamations are to be en-'tered of record with the clerk of the peace, to be 'fixed up in the market towns, and to be publicly 'proclaimed in all the markets till Michaelmas [*q*].

[*n*] Chap. iv. § 28.
[*o*] Ib. § 24.
[*p*] Ib. § 15.
[*q*] Ib. iv. § 16.

'And

Digitized by Google

'And if any perſon, after the ſaid proclamations 'ſhall be ſent down and publiſhed, ſhall, by any 'ſecret ways or means, directly or indirectly retain 'or keep any ſervant, workman, or labourer, or ſhall 'give any greater wages, or other commodity, con-'trary to the true intent of the ſtatute, or contrary 'to the rates aſſeſſed, he ſhall forfeit 5 *l.* and be im-'priſoned by the ſpace of ten days [*r*].

'And every perſon who is retained, or takes any 'wages contrary to the ſtatute, ſhall be impriſoned 'twenty-one days [*s*]. And every ſuch retainer, 'promiſe, gift and payment, or writing and bond for 'that purpoſe, are made abſolutely void.

'Every juſtice of peace, or chief officer, who ſhall 'be abſent at the rating of wages, unleſs the juſtices 'ſhall allow the reaſonable cauſe of his abſence, for-'feits 10 *l.* [*t*].'

That this ſtatute may, from time to time, be care-fully and diligently put in execution, 'The juſtices 'are appointed to meet twice a year, to make a ſpe-'cial and diligent enquiry of the branches and arti-'cles of this ſtatute, and of the good execution of 'the ſame, and ſeverely to correct and puniſh any 'defaults: for which ſervice they are allowed 5 *s.* 'a *per* day [*u*].' No inconſiderable allowance at that time!

But all this care of the legiſlature proved, it ſeems, ineffectual; for forty years after the making this ſtatute, we find the parliament complaining, 'That 'the ſaid act had not, according to the true meaning 'thereof, been duly put in execution; and that the 'rates of wages for poor artificers, labourers, and 'other perſons, had not been rated and proportion-'ed according to the politic intention of the ſaid 'act [*w*].' A neglect which ſeems to have been occa-ſioned by ſome doubts raiſed in Weſtminſter-hall, con-cerning the perſons who were the ſubjects of this law. For the clearing therefore any ſuch doubt,

[*r*] Chap iv. § 18.
[*s*] Ib. § 19, 20.
[*t*] Ib. § 17.
[*u*] Ib. § 37.
[*w*] Preamble to 1 Jac. c. vi.

this

this subsequent statute gives the justices an express power 'to rate the wages of any labourers, weavers, 'spinsters, and workmen and workwomen whatsoever, 'either working by the day, week, month, year, or 'taking any work at any person's hands whatsoever, 'to be done by the great, or otherwise [x].'

And to render the execution of this law the more easy, the statute of James I. enacts, 1. 'That in all 'counties where general sessions are kept in several 'divisions, the rating wages at such respective gene-'ral sessions shall be as effectual within the division, 'as if they had been rated at the grand general 'session [y].'

2. The method of certifying the rates in chancery appearing, I apprehend, too troublesome and tedious, 'such certificate is made no longer necessary, but the 'rates being assessed and engrossed in parchment, un-'der the hands and seals of the justices, the sheriff, or 'chief officers of towns corporate, may immediately 'proclaim the same [z].'

And whereas wool is the great staple commodity of this kingdom, and the woolen trade its principal manufacture, the parliament have given particular attention to the wages of artificers in this trade.

For 1. By the statute of James I, [a], 'No clo-'thier, being a justice of peace in any precinct or li-'berty, shall be rater of wages for any artizan depend-'ing upon the making of cloth.'

2. 'Clothiers, not paying so much wages to their 'workmen or workwomen, as are rated by the justi-'ces, forfeit ten shillings for every offence [b].'

3. By a late statute [c], 'All persons any wise con-'cerned in employing any labourers in the woolen 'manufactory, are required to pay the full wages or 'price agreed on, in money, and not in goods, truck, 'or otherwise; nor shall they make any deduction 'from such wages or price, on account of any goods 'sold or delivered previous to such agreement. And 'all such wages are to be levied, on conviction, be-

[x] 1 Jac. § 3. [y] Ib. § 5. [z] Ib. § 6.
[a] Ib § 7. [b] Ib. § 7.
[c] 12 Geo. I. cap. xxxiv. § 3.

'fore

'fore two juſtices, by diſtreſs; and, for want of diſtreſs, the party is to be committed for ſix months, or until full ſatisfaction is made to the party complaining. Beſides which, the clothier forfeits the ſum of 100 *l.* [*d*].'

4. By the ſame ſtatute, 'All contracts, by-laws, &c. made in unlawful clubs, by perſons brought up in, or exerciſing the art of, a wool-comber or weaver, for regulating the ſaid trade, ſettling the prices of goods, advancing wages, or leſſening the hours of work, are declared to be illegal, and void; and any perſon concerned in the woolen manufactures, who ſhall knowingly be concerned in ſuch contract, by-law, &c. or ſhall attempt to put it in execution, ſhall, upon conviction before two juſtices, ſuffer three months impriſonment [*e*].'

But long before this act, a general law was made [*f*], to puniſh all conſpiracies for raiſing wages, limiting hours of work, &c. among artificers, workmen, and labourers; and if ſuch conſpiracy was to extend to a general advance of wages all over the kingdom, any inſurrection of a number of perſons, in conſequence of it, would be an overt act of high-treaſon.

From this curſory view it appears, I think, that no blame lyes at the door of the legiſlature, which hath not only given the magiſtrate, but even private perſons, with his aſſiſtance, a power of compelling the poor to work; and *2dly*, hath allotted the fulleſt powers, and preſcribed the moſt effectual means, for aſcertaining and limiting the price of their labour.

But ſo very faulty and remiſs hath been the execution of theſe laws, that an incredulous reader may almoſt doubt whether there are really any ſuch exiſting; particularly as to that which relates to the rating the wages of labourers; a law which at firſt, it ſeems, was too careleſsly executed, and which hath ſince grown into utter neglect and diſuſe.

Hath this total diſuſe ariſen, in common with the neglect of other wholeſome proviſions, for want of

[*d*] 12 Geo. I. c. xxxiv. § 4. [*e*] Ib. § 1.
[*f*] 2 and 3 E. VI. c. xv.

due

Digitized by Google

due attention to the public good? or is the execution of this law attended with any extraordinary difficulty? or, lastly, are we really grown, as Sir Josiah Child says, wiser than our forefathers, and have discovered any fault in the constitution itself; and that to retrench the price of labour by a law is an error in policy?

This last seems to me, I own, to be very strange doctrine, and somewhat of a paradox in politics: however, as it is the sentiment of a truly wise and great man, it deserves a fair discussion. Such I will endeavour to give it; since no man is more inclined to respect the opinions of such persons; and as the revival of the law which he opposes, is, I think, absolutely necessary to the purpose I am contending for.

I will give the passage from Sir Josiah at length. It is in answer to this position, *That the dearness of wages spoils the English trade.* 'Here,' says he, 'the 'author propounds the making a law to retrench the 'hire of poor mens labour (an honest charitable 'project, and well becoming an usurer!): the answer 'to this is easy. *First*, I affirm, and can prove, he is 'mistaken in fact; for the Dutch, with whom we 'principally contend in trade, give generally more 'wages to all their manufacturers, by at least two-'pence in the shilling, than the English. *Secondly*, 'Where-ever wages are high, universally throughout 'the whole world, 'tis an infallible evidence of the 'riches of that country; and where-ever wages for la-'bour run low, it is a proof of the poverty of that 'place. *Thirdly*, It is multitudes of people, and 'good laws, such as cause an increase of people, 'which principally enrich any country; and if we 'retrench by law the labour of our people, we drive 'them from us to other countries that give better 'rates; and so the Dutch have drained us of our 'seamen and woolen manufacturers, and we the 'French of their artificers and silk manufacturers; 'and many more we should, if our laws otherwise 'gave them fitting encouragement; of which more 'in due place. *Fourthly*, If any particular trades

Digitized by Google

'exact more here than in Holland, they are only 'such as do it by virtue of incorporations, privileges, 'and charters, of which the cure is eafy, by an act 'of naturalization, and without compulfory laws. 'It is true, our great grandfathers did exercife fuch 'policy, of endeavouring to retrench the price of la- 'bour by a law (although they could never effect it:) 'but that was before trade was introduced into this 'kingdom: we are fince, with the reft of the trading 'world, grown wifer in this matter; and, I hope, 'fhall fo continue [g].'

To this I reply, 1. That the making fuch a law is not only an honeft, but a charitable project; as it propofes, by retrenching the price of poor mens labour, to provide labour, and confequently hire, for all the poor who are capable of labour. In all manufactures whatever, the lower the price of labour is, the cheaper will be the price to the confumer; and the cheaper this price is, the greater will be the confumption; and confequently the more hands employed. This is likewife a very charitable law to the poor farmer, and never more neceffary than at this day, when the rents of lands are rated to the higheft degree. The great hopes which the farmer hath (indeed his common relief from ruin) is of an exportation of corn. This exportation cannot be by law, unlefs when the corn is under fuch a particular price. How neceffary then is it to him, that the price of labour fhould be confined within moderate bounds, that the exportation of corn, which is of fuch general advantage to the kingdom, fhould turn, in any conficerable manner, to his private profit? and what reafon is there to imagine, that this power of limiting wages fhould be executed in any difhoneft or uncharitable manner? is it not a power entrufted to all the juftices of the county, or divifion, and to the fheriff, with the affiftance of grave, fober, and fubftantial perfons, who muft be fufficient judges of the matter, and who are directed to have regard to the plenty and fcarcity of the times? is it to be fufpected, that many perfons

[g] Preface to his difcourfe on Trade.

of

of this kind ſhould unite in a cruel and flagitious act, by which they would be liable to the condemnation of their own conſciences, to the curſes of the poor, and to be reproached by the example of all their neighbouring countries? are not much groſſer exorbitancies to be feared on the other ſide, when the loweſt artificers, huſbandmen, and labourers, are made judges in their own cauſe; and when it is left to their own diſcretion, to exact what price they pleaſe for their labour of the poor farmer or clothier; of whom if they cannot exact an extravagant price, they will fly to that alternative, which idleneſs often prefers, of begging or ſtealing? *Laſtly*, Such a reſtraint is very wholeſome to the poor labourers themſelves; of whom Sir Joſiah obſerves [*b*], 'That they live better in the 'deareſt countries for proviſions than in the cheap-'eſt, and better in a dear year than in a cheap, eſpe-'cially in relation to the public good; for, in a 'cheap year, they will not work above two days in 'a week; their humour being ſuch that they will not 'provide for a hard time, but juſt work ſo much and 'no more, as may maintain them in that mean condi-'tion to which they have been accuſtomed.' Is it not therefore, upon this conceſſion, demonſtrable, that the poor man himſelf will live much better (his family certainly will) by theſe means? Again, many of the poor, and thoſe the more honeſt and induſtrious, will probably gain by ſuch a law: for, at the ſame time that the impudent and idle, if left to themſelves, will certainly exact on their maſters; the modeſt, the humble, and truly laborious, may often (and ſo I doubt not but the caſe is) be oppreſſed for them, and forced to accept a lower price for their labour, than the liberality of gentlemen would allow them.

2dly, The two aſſertions contained in the next paragraph both ſeem to me ſuſpicious. Firſt, That the Dutch and other nations have done all that in them lies, to draw from us our ſeamen, and ſome of our manufacturers, is certainly true; and this they would do at any price: but that the Dutch do in general

[*b*] Diſcourſe on Trade.

Digitized by Google

give more wages to their manufacturers than the English, is, I believe, not the fact. Of the manufactures of Holland, the only considerable article which we ourselves take of them, except linen, are toys; and to this we are induced, not because the Dutch are superior to our workmen in genius and dexterity (points in which they are not greatly celebrated) but because they work much cheaper. Nor is, *2dly*, The immediate transition from trade to manufacture altogether so fair. The Dutch, it is true, are principally our rivals in trade in general, and chiefly as carriers; but not so in manufacture, particularly in the woolen manufacture. Here our chief rivals are the French, amongst whom the price of labour is known to be considerably lower than with us. To this, among other causes (for I know there are others, and some very scandalous ones), they owe their success over us in the Levant. It is indeed a truth, which needs no comment nor proof, that where goods are of equal value, the man who sells cheapest will have the most custom; and it is as certainly true, that he who makes up his goods in the cheapest manner, can sell them so.

3dly, Sir Josiah asserts, 'That wherever wages are 'high, universally throughout the world, 'tis an 'infallible evidence of the riches of that country; and 'wherever wages for labour run low, it is a proof of 'the poverty of that place.'—If this be true, the concession will do him no service; for it will not prove, that to give high wages is the way to grow rich; since it is much more probable, that riches should cause the advance of wages, than that high wages should produce riches. This latter, I am sure, would appear a high solecism in private life; and, I believe, it is no less so in public.

4thly, His next assertion, 'That to retrench by law 'the labour of our people is to drive them from us,' hath partly received an answer already. To give this argument any force, our wages must be reduced at least below the standard of other countries; which is, I think, very little to be apprehended; but, on the contrary, if the labourer should carry his demands ever

so

Digitized by Google

ſo little higher, as may be reaſonably expected, the conſumption of many manufactures will not only be confined to our own people, but to a very few of thoſe people.

Thus, I hope, I have given a full anſwer to this great man, whom I cannot diſmiſs, without obſerving a manifeſt miſtake of the queſtion, which runs through all his arguments; all that he advances concluding, indeed, only to the *quantum* of wages which ſhall be given for labour. He ſeems rather to argue againſt giving too little, than againſt regulating what is to be given; ſo that his arguments are more proper for the conſideration of the juſtices at their meeting for ſettling the rates of wages, than for the conſideration of the legiſlature, in a debate concerning the expediency of the above law. To evince the expediency of which, I appeal to the concurrent ſenſe of parliament in ſo many different ages; for this is not only teſtified expreſly in the above ſtatute of Elizabeth and James, but may be fairly implied from thoſe of Edward VI. and George I. above recited.

I have, moreover, I think, demonſtrated, 1. The equity of this law; and that it is as much for the ſervice of the labourer as of his maſter. 2. The utility of it to trade: I ſhall only add the neceſſity of it, in order to execute the intention of the legiſlature, in compelling the idle to work; for is it not the ſame thing to have the liberty of working or not at your own pleaſure, and to have the abſolute nomination of the price at which you will work? the idleneſs of the common people in this town is, indeed, greatly to be attributed to this liberty; moſt of theſe, if they cannot exact an exorbitant price of their labour, will remain idle. The habit of exacting on their ſuperiors is grown univerſal; and the very porters expect to receive more for their work than the ſalaries of above half the officers of the army amount to.

I conclude then, that this law is neceſſary to be revived (perhaps with ſome enlargements), and that ſtill upon one account more; which is, to enable the magiſtrate clearly to diſtinguiſh the corrigible from the incorrigible in idleneſs: for when the price of labour

Digitized by Google

is once eſtabliſhed, all thoſe poor who ſhall refuſe to labour at that price, even at the command of a magiſtrate, may properly be deemed incorrigibly idle.

For theſe the legiſlature have, by ſeveral acts of parliament, provided a puniſhment, by commitment to Bridewell either for more or leſs time: and a very ſevere puniſhment this is, if being confirmed in habits of idleneſs, and in every other vicious habit, may be eſteemed ſo.

Theſe houſes are commonly called houſes of correction, and the legiſlature intended them certainly for places of correction of idleneſs at leaſt: for in many acts, where perſons are ordered to be committed to Bridewell, it is added *There to be kept to hard labour;* nay, in the ſtatute of Jac. I. [*i*] theſe houſes of correction are directed 'to be built with a convenient backſide adjoining, together with mills, turns, cards, and ſuch like neceſſary implements, to ſet rogues and other idle people on work.' Again, in the ſame ſtatute, authority is given to the maſter or governor, 'to ſet to work ſuch rogues, vagabonds, idle and diſorderly perſons, as ſhall be brought or ſent unto the ſaid houſe (being able) while they ſhall continue in the ſaid houſe; and to puniſh them, by putting fetters on them and by whipping; nor are the ſaid rogues, *&c.* to have any other proviſion than what they ſhall earn by their labour.'

The erection of thoſe houſes, as is uſual with new inſtitutions, did at firſt greatly anſwer the good purpoſes for which they were deſigned, inſomuch that my Lord Coke obſerves, 'That upon the making of the ſtatute 39 Eliz. for the erection of houſes of correction, and a good ſpace after, whilſt Juſtices of peace and other officers were diligent and induſtrious, there was not a rogue to be ſeen in any part of England.' And again he propheſies, that, 'from the erection

[*i*] Chap. iv. Theſe houſes were firſt begun to be erected Ann. 13 Eliz. the priſon for idleneſs being, before that time, the ſtocks. In the 11th year of Henry VII. vagabonds, beggars, &c. are ordered to be ſet three days and three nights in the ſtocks.

of

'of these houses we shall have neither beggar nor idle 'person in the commonwealth [k].'

But this great man was a much better lawyer than he was a prophet; for whatever these houses were designed to be, or whatever they at first were, the fact is, that they are at present, in general, no other than schools of vice, seminaries of idleness, and common-shores of nastiness and disease. As to the power of whipping, which the act of James I. vests in the governor, that, I believe, is very seldom used; and perhaps, when it is, not properly applied. And the justice in very few instances, (in none of idleness) hath any power of ordering such punishment [l].

And with regard to work, the intention of the law is, I apprehend, as totally frustrated. Insomuch that they must be very lazy persons indeed, who can esteem the labour imposed in any of these houses as a punishment. In some, I am told, there is not any provision made for work. In that of Middlesex in particular, the governor hath confessed to me that he hath had no work to employ his prisoners; and hath urged as a reason, that having generally great numbers of most desperate felons under his charge, who, notwithstanding his utmost care, will sometimes get access to his other prisoners, he dares not trust those who are committed to hard labour with any heavy or sharp instruments of work, lest they should be converted into weapons by the felons.

What good consequence then can arise from sending idle and disorderly persons to a place where they are neither to be corrected nor employed; and where, with the conversation of many as bad, and sometimes worse than themselves, they are sure to be improved in the knowledge, and confirmed in the practice, of iniquity? can it be conceived that such persons will not come out of these houses much more idle and disorderly than they went in? The truth of this I have often experienced in the behaviour of the wretches

[k] 2 Just. 729. [l] By the last vagabond act, which repeals all the former, rogues and vagabonds are to be whipt, OR sent to the house of correction.

brought

Digitized by Google

brought before me; the moſt impudent and flagitious of whom have always been ſuch as have been before acquainted with the diſcipline of Bridewell; a commitment to which place, though it often cauſes great horror and lamentation in the novice, is uſually treated with ridicule and contempt by thoſe who have already been there.

For this reaſon, I believe, many of the worthieſt magiſtrates have, to the utmoſt of their power, declined a rigorous execution of the laws for the puniſhment of idleneſs; thinking that a ſevere reprimand might more probably work the converſion of ſuch perſons than the committing them to Bridewell. This I am ſure may, with great certainty, be concluded, that the milder method is leſs liable to render what is bad worſe, and to complete the deſtruction of the offender.

But this is a way of acting, however worthy be the motive, which is ſometimes more juſtifiable to a man's own conſcience, than it would be in the Court of King's Bench, which requires the magiſtrate to execute the laws entruſted to his care, and in the manner which thoſe laws preſcribe. And beſides the indecency of ſhewing a diſregard to the laws in being, nothing ſurely can be more improper than to ſuffer the idleneſs of the poor, the cauſe of ſo much evil to the ſociety, to go entirely unpuniſhed.

And yet, ſhould the magiſtrate do his duty as he is required, will the intent and purpoſe of the legiſlature be anſwered? The parliament was, indeed, too wiſe to puniſh idleneſs barely by confinement. Labour is the true and proper puniſhment of idleneſs, for the ſame reaſon which the excellent Dr Swift gives why death is the proper puniſhment of cowardice. Where then is the remedy? is it to enforce the execution of the law as it now ſtands, and to reform the preſent conduct of the ſeveral Bridewell's? this would, I believe, be as difficult a work as the cleanſing of the Augean ſtables of old; and would require as extraordinary a degree of political as that did of natural ſtrength, to accompliſh it. In truth, the caſe here is the ſame as with the overſeers before; the truſt is too great

Digitized by Google

great for the perſons on whom it devolves: and tho' theſe houſes are, in ſome meaſure, under the inſpection of the juſtices of peace, yet this in the ſtatute is recommended in too general a manner to their care, to expect any good fruits from it. 'As to the true and 'faithful account which they are to yield to the juſti-'ces, at the ſeſſions, of the perſons in their cuſtody,' this is at preſent little more than matter of form; nor can it be expected to be any other in the hurry of a public ſeſſions, and when the ſtench ariſing from the priſoners is ſo intolerable that it is difficult to get any gentlemen to attend the court at that time. In the laſt vagrant act, indeed, two juſtices are appointed, twice or oftener, every year, to examine into the ſtate and nature of houſes of correction, &c. yet, as it gives them no power but of reporting to the ſeſſions, I believe it hath not produced any good effect; for the buſineſs of the ſeſſions is ſo complicated and various, that it happens, as in all caſes where men have too much to do, that they do little or nothing effectually. Perhaps, indeed, if two or more juſtices of the peace were appointed to meet once every month at ſome convenient place, as near as poſſible to the Bridewell, there to ſummon the governor before them, to examine the account of his ſtock and implements of work, and to make ſuch orders (under what reſtrictions the parliament ſhall think proper) as to ſuch juſtices ſhall ſeem requiſite; this might afford a palliative at leaſt. In ſhort, the great cure for idleneſs is labour; and this is its only proper puniſhment; nor ſhould it ever be in the power of the idle perſon to commute this puniſhment for any other.

In the reign of Edward VI. [*m*] a moſt ſevere law, indeed, was made for the puniſhment of idleneſs.—— 'If any perſon (ſays the ſtatute) ſhall bring to two 'juſtices of peace any runagate ſervant, or any other, 'which liveth idly and loiteringly by the ſpace of three 'days, the ſaid juſtices ſhall cauſe the ſaid idle and 'loitering ſervant or vagabond to be marked with an 'hot iron on the breaſt with the letter V, and adjudge

[*m*] 1 Ed. VI. 13 Rep.

'him

'him to be ſlave to the ſame perſon that brought
'and preſented him, to have to him, his executors
'and aſſigns, for two years. who ſhall take the ſaid
'ſlave, and give him bread, water, or ſmall drink,
'and refuſe meat, and cauſe him to work, by beating,
'chaining, or otherwiſe, in ſuch work and labour as
'he ſhall put him, be it never ſo vile. And if ſuch
'ſlave abſent himſelf from his maſter within the term,
'by the ſpace of fourteen days, he ſhall be adjudged
'by two juſtices of the peace to be marked on the
'forehead, or the ball of the cheek, with a hot iron,
'with the ſign of an S, and ſhall be adjudged to be
'ſlave to his ſaid maſter for ever; and if the ſaid ſlave
'ſhall run away a ſecond time, he ſhall be adjudged a
'felon.'

This ſtatute lived no longer than two years; indeed it deſerved no longer a date; for it was cruel, unconſtitutional, and rather reſembling the cruel temper of a Draco, than the mild ſpirit of the Engliſh law. But, *eſt modus:* there is a difference between making men ſlaves and felons, and compelling them to be ſubjects; in ſhort, between throwing the reins on the neck of idleneſs, and riding it with ſpurs of iron.

Thus have I endeavoured to give the reader a general idea of the laws which relate to this ſingle point of employing the poor, and, as well as I am able to diſcern, of their defects, and the reaſons of thoſe defects. I have likewiſe given ſome hints for the cure; and have preſumed to offer a plan, which, in my humble opinion, would effectually anſwer every purpoſe deſired.

But 'till this plan ſhall be produced; or (which is more to be expected) 'till ſome man of greater abilities, as well as of greater authority, ſhall offer ſome new regulation for this purpoſe; ſomething, at leaſt, ought to be done to ſtrengthen the laws already made, and to enforce their execution. The matter is of the higheſt concern; and imports us not only as we are good men and good Chriſtians, but as we are good Engliſhmen; ſince not only preſerving the poor from the higheſt degrees of wretchedneſs, but the making them uſeful ſubjects, is the thing propoſed; 'A

'work,'

Digitized by Google

'work,' says Sir Josiah Child [n], 'which would redound some hundreds of thousands per ann. to the 'public advantage.' Lastly, it is of the utmost importance to that point which is the subject matter of this treatise, for which reason I have thought myself obliged to give it a full consideration. 'The want of 'a due provision,' says Lord [o] Hale, 'for education 'and relief of the poor in a way of industry, is that 'which fills the goals with malefactors, and fills the 'kingdom with idle and unprofitable persons, that 'consume the stock of the kingdom without improving 'it, and that will daily increase, even to a desolation 'in time. And this error in the first concoction is 'never remediable but by gibbets and whipping.'

In serious truth, if proper care should be taken to provide for the present poor, and to prevent their encrease, by laying some effectual restraints on the extravagance of the lower sort of people, the remaining part of this treatise would be rendered of little consequence; since few persons, I believe, have made their exit to Tyburn, who have not owed their fate to some of the causes before mentioned. But as I am not too sanguine in my expectations on this head, I shall now proceed to consider of some methods to obviate the frequency of robberies, which, if less efficacious, are, perhaps, much easier than those already proposed. And if we will not remove the temptation, at least we ought to take away all encourgement to robbery.

SECT. V.

Of the punishment of RECEIVERS OF STOLEN GOODS.

NOW one great encouragement to theft of all kinds is the ease and safety with which stolen goods may be disposed of. It is a very old and vulgar, but a very true saying, 'that if there were no 'receivers there would be no thieves.' Indeed, could

[n] Page 88. [o] At the end of his discourse touching the relief of the poor.

Digitized by Google

not the thief find a market for his goods, there would be an abſolute end of ſeveral kinds of theft; ſuch as ſhop-lifting, burglary, *&c.* the objects of which are generally goods and not money. Nay, robberies on the highway would ſo ſeldom anſwer the purpoſe of the adventurer, that very few would think it worth their while to riſque ſo much with ſuch ſmall expectations.

But at preſent, inſtead of meeting with any ſuch diſcouragement, the thief diſpoſes of his goods with almoſt as much ſafety as the honeſteſt tradeſman: for firſt, if he hath made a booty of any value, he is almoſt ſure of ſeeing it advertiſed within a day or two, directing him, 'to bring the goods to a certain place, 'where he is to receive a reward,' (ſometimes the full value of the booty), 'and no queſtions aſked.' This method of recovering ſtolen goods by the owner, a very learned judge formerly declared to have been, in his opinion, a compoſition of felony. And ſurely if this be proved to be carried into execution, I think it muſt amount to a full conviction of that crime. But, indeed, ſuch advertiſements are in themſelves ſo very ſcandalous, and of ſuch pernicious conſequence, that if men are not aſhamed to own they prefer an old watch or a diamond ring to the good of the ſociety, it is pity ſome effectual law was not contrived to prevent their giving this public countenance to robbery for the future.

But if the perſon robbed ſhould prove either too honeſt, or too obſtinate, to take this method of recovering his goods, the thief is under no difficulty in turning them into money. Among the great number of brokers and pawn-brokers ſeveral are to be found, who are always ready to receive a gold watch at an eaſy rate, and where no queſtions are aſked, or, at leaſt, where no anſwer is expected, but ſuch as the thief can very readily make.

Beſides the clandeſtine dealers this way, who ſatisfy their conſciences with telling a ragged fellow, or wench, that *they hope* they came honeſtly by ſilver, and gold, and diamonds; there are others, who ſcorn ſuch pitiful ſubterfuges, who engage openly with the thieves, and who have ware-houſes filled with ſtolen goods only.

Digitized by Google

ly. Among the Jews, who live in a certain place in the city, there have been and perhaps ſtill are, ſome notable dealers this way, who, in an almoſt public manner, have carried on a trade for many years with Rotterdam, where they have their ware-houſes and factors, and whither they export their goods with prodigious profit, and as prodigious impunity. And all this appeared very plainly laſt winter, in the examination of one Cadoſa, a Jew, in the preſence of the late excellent Duke of Richmond, and many other noblemen and magiſtrates.

What then ſhall we ſay? is not this miſchief worthy of ſome remedy, or is it not capable of it? The noble Duke (one of the worthieſt of magiſtrates, as well as of the beſt of men) thought otherwiſe, as would have appeared, had his valuable life, for the good of mankind, been prolonged.

Certain it is that the law, as it now ſtands, is ineffectual to cure the evil. Let us ſee, therefore, if poſſible, where the defect lies.

At the common law, any one might lawfully (ſays Lord Hale) have received his own goods from the felon who ſtole them [*p*]. But, if he had received them upon agreement not to proſecute, or to proſecute faintly, this would have been theft-bote, puniſhable by impriſonment and ranſom.

But in neither of the foregoing caſes would the receiver of the goods have become an acceſſary to the felon. So if one man had bought another's goods of the thief, though he had known them to be ſtolen, if he had given the juſt value for them, he would not have become an acceſſary [*q*]. But if he had bought them at an undervalue, this, Sir Richard Hyde held, would have made him an acceſſary. My Lord Hale differs from his opinion, and his reaſon to ſome readers may ſeem a pleaſant one; 'For if there be any 'odds,' ſays he, 'he that gives more, benefits the 'felon more than he that gives leſs than value.' However, this, his Lordſhip thinks, may be a miſdemeanor puniſhable by fine and impriſonment; but that the bare

[*p*] Hiſt. P. C. vol. I. p. 546 619. ib [*q*] Hiſt. P. C ubi ſupra.

Digitized by Google

receiving of goods knowing them to be ſtolen makes not an acceſſary.

So ſays the great Lord Hale, and ſo indeed was the law; though the judges ſeem not to have been unanimous in their opinion. In the book of Aſſizes [r], Scroop is ſaid to have held otherwiſe; and though Shard there quaſhed an appeal of felony for receiving ſtolen goods only, yet I cannot help obſerving, that the reporter of the caſe hath left a note of aſtoniſhment at the judgement of the court. 'This,' ſays he, 'was 'wonderful!' and wonderful ſurely it is, if he who receives, relieves, comforts, or aſſiſts a felon, ſhall be an acceſſary, that he ſhall not be ſo, who willingly buys the goods of the felon; which is generally, I believe, the ſtrongeſt relief, comfort, and aſſiſtance, which can be given him, and without the hope and expectation of which, he would never have committed the theft or robbery.

It is unneceſſary, however, to enter further into this controverſy; ſince it is now expreſly declared by ſtatute [s], 'That the receivers of ſtolen goods, knowing 'them to be ſtolen, ſhall be deemed acceſſaries after 'the fact.'

But this ſtatute, though it removed the former abſurdity of the law, was not ſufficient to remedy the evil; there yet remaining many difficulties in bringing theſe pernicious miſcreants to juſtice, conſiſtent with legal rules. For,

1. As the offence of the acceſſary is dependent on that of the principal, he could not be tried or outlawed, till after the conviction or attainder of the principal; ſo that, however ſtrong evidence there might be againſt the receiver, he was ſtill ſafe, unleſs the thief could be apprehended.

2. If the thief on his trial ſhould be acquitted, as often happens through ſome defect of evidence in the moſt notorious caſes, the receiver, being only an acceſſary, though he hath confeſſed his crime, or though the moſt undeniable evidence could be brought againſt him, muſt be acquitted likewiſe.

[r] 27 Aſſiz 69. [s] 3 and 4 W. and M. c. ix.

3. In

Digitized by Google

3. In petit larceny, there can be no such accessary [t]: for though the statute says, that a receiver of stolen goods, knowing, &c. shall be an accessary after the fact, that is legally understood to mean only in cases where such accessary may be by law: and that is confined to such felonies as are to receive judgment of death, or to have the benefit of clergy. Now, for petit larceny, which is the stealing goods of less value than a shilling, the punishment at common law is whipping; and this was properly enough considered as too trifling an offence to extend the guilt to criminals in a second degree. But since juries have taken upon them to consider the value of goods as immaterial, and to find upon their oaths, that what is proved to be worth several shillings, and sometimes several pounds, is of the value of ten-pence, this is become a matter of more consequence. For instance; if a pickpocket steal several handkerchiefs, or other things to the value of twenty shillings, and the receiver of these, knowing them to be stolen, is discovered, and both are indicted, the one as principal, the other as accessary, as they must be; if the jury convict the principal, and find the goods to be of as high value as a shilling, he must receive judgment of death; whereas, by finding the goods (which they do upon their oaths) to be of the value of ten-pence, the thief is ordinarily sentenced to be whipt, and returns immediately to his trade of picking pockets, and the accessary is of course discharged, and of course returns to his trade of receiving the booty. Thus the jury are perjured, the public highly injured, and two excellent acts of parliament defeated, that two miscreants may laugh at their prosecutors, and at the law.

The two former of these defects are indeed remedied by a later statute [u], which enacts, 'That the buyers 'and receivers of stolen goods, knowing them to be 'stolen, may be prosecuted for a misdemeanor, and 'punished by fine and imprisonment, though the 'principal felon be not before convicted of felony.'

[t] Cro. Eliz. 750. Hale. Hist. vol. I. p. 530. 618.
[u] 3 and 4 W. and M. c. ix.

Digitized by Google

This laſt ſtatute is again repeated in the 5th of Queen Anne [w]; and there the power of the court to puniſh in the caſe of the miſdemeanor, is farther encreaſed to any other corporal puniſhment which the court ſhall think fit to inflict, inſtead of fine and impriſonment; and, in the caſe of the felony, the acceſſary is to receive judgment of death; but the benefit of clergy is not taken away. Laſtly, by the ſtatute of George II. [x] the receivers of ſtolen goods, knowing, &c. are to be tranſported for fourteen years. And by the ſame ſtatute, every perſon taking money or reward, directly or indirectly, under pretence or upon account of helping any to ſtolen goods, unleſs ſuch perſon apprehend and bring to his trial the felon, and give evidence againſt him, is made guilty of felony without benefit of clergy.

And thus ſtands the law at this day; which, notwithſtanding the repeated endeavours of the legiſlature, experience ſhews us, is incapable of removing this deplorable evil from the ſociety.

The principal defect ſeems, to me, to lie in the extreme difficulty of convicting the offender; for,

1. Where the thief can be taken, you are not at liberty to proſecute for the miſdemeanor.

2. The thief himſelf, who muſt be convicted before the acceſſary is to be tried, cannot be a witneſs.

3. Without ſuch evidence, it is very difficult to convict of the knowledge that the goods were ſtolen; which, in this caſe, can appear from circumſtances only. Such are principally, *1ſt*, Buying goods of value, of perſons very unlikely to be the lawful proprietors. *2dly*, Buying them for much leſs than their real value. *3dly*, Buying them, or ſelling them again, in a clandeſtine manner, concealing them, &c. None of theſe are commonly liable to be proved: and I have known a man acquitted, where moſt of theſe circumſtances have appeared againſt him.

What then is to be done, to extirpate this ſtubborn miſchief? to prove the pernicious conſequences of

[w] Chap. xxxi. [x] Chap. xi.

which,

Digitized by Google

which, I need, I think, only appeal to the ſenſe of parliament, teſtified in ſo many repeated acts, and very ſtrongly expreſſed in their preambles.

Firſt, Might it not be proper to put an effectual ſtop to the preſent ſcandalous method of compounding felony, by public advertiſements in the newſpapers? might not the inſerting ſuch advertiſements be rendered highly criminal in the authors of them, and in the printers themſelves, unleſs they diſcover ſuch authors?

2*dly*, Is it impoſſible to find any means of regulating brokers and pawnbrokers? if ſo, what arguments are there againſt extirpating entirely a ſet of miſcreants, which, like other vermin, harbour only about the poor, and grow fat by ſucking their blood?

3*dly*, Why ſhould not the receiving ſtolen goods, knowing them to be ſtolen, be made an original offence? by which means the thief, who is often a paultry offender in compariſon of the receiver, and ſometimes his pupil, might, in little felonies, be made a witneſs againſt him: for thus the trial of the receiver would in no caſe depend on the trial, or conviction, of the thief.

4*thly*, Why may not the bare buying or taking to pawn ſtolen goods, above a certain value, be made evidence of receiving with knowledge, &c. unleſs the goods were bought in market overt (no broker's or pawnbroker's ſhop to be reputed ſuch market overt) or unleſs the defendant could prove, by a credible witneſs to the tranſaction, that he had good cauſe to regard the ſeller or pawner of the goods to be the real owner. If 20 *s.* was the value limited, it would anſwer all the purpoſes contended for; and would in nowiſe interfere with the honeſt trade (if indeed it ever be ſo) between the pawnbroker and the poor.

If none of theſe methods be thought poſſible or proper, I hope better will be found out. Something ought to be done to put an end to the preſent practice, of which I ſee daily the moſt pernicious conſequences; many of the younger thieves appearing plainly to be taught, encouraged, and employed, by the receivers.

Digitized by Google

SECT. VI.

Of laws relating to VAGABONDS.

THE other great encouragement to robbery, beſide the certain means of finding a market for the booty, is the probability of eſcaping puniſhment.

Firſt then, The robber hath great hopes of being undiſcovered: and this is one principal reaſon, why robberies are more frequent in this town and in its neighbourhood, than in the remoter parts of the kingdom.

Whoever indeed conſiders the cities of London and Weſtminſter, with the late vaſt addition of their ſuburbs; the great irregularity of their buildings; the immenſe number of lanes, alleys, courts and bye-places; muſt think, that had they been intended for the very purpoſe of concealment, they could ſcarce have been better contrived. Upon ſuch a view, the whole appears as a vaſt wood or foreſt, in which a thief may harbour with as great ſecurity, as wild beaſts do in the deſerts of Africa or Arabia: for by wandering from one part to another, and often ſhifting his quarters, he may almoſt avoid the poſſibility of being diſcovered.

Here, according to the method I have hitherto purſued, I will conſider what remedy our laws have applied to this evil, namely the wandering of the poor; and whether, and wherein, theſe remedies appear defective.

There is no part of our ancient conſtitution more admirable than that which was calculated to prevent the concealement of thieves and robbers. The original of this inſtitution is given to Alfred, at the end of his wars with the Danes, when the Engliſh were very much debauched by the example of thoſe Barbarians, and betook themſelves to all manner of licentiouſneſs and rapine. Theſe evils were encouraged, as the hiſtorians ſay, by the vagabond ſtate of the offenders, who having no certain place of abode, upon committing

Digitized by Google

mitting any offence, ſhifted their quarters, and went where it was difficult to diſcover them. To remedy this miſchief, therefore, Alfred, having limited the ſhires or counties in a better manner than before, divided them into hundreds, and theſe again into tithings, decennaries, or ten families [y].

Over every one of theſe tithings or decennaries, there was a chief, called the tithingman or burgh-holder, who had a power to call a court, and to try ſmall offences; the greater being referred to that court, which was in like manner eſtabliſhed over every hundred.

Every one of theſe heads of families were pledges to each other for the behaviour of all their family; and were likewiſe reciprocally pledges for each other to the hundred.

If any perſon was ſuſpected of a crime, he was obliged to find ſecurity for his good behaviour out of the ſame hundred and tithing. This if he could not find, he had reaſon to apprehend being treated with great ſeverity; and if any accuſed perſon, either before or after his finding bail, had fled from juſtice, the whole tithing and hundred ſhould pay a fine to the king.

In caſe of the default of appearance in a decenner, his nine pledges had one and thirty days to bring the delinquent forth to juſtice. If this failed, then the chief of thoſe decenners, by the vote of that and the neighbour decennaries, was to purge himſelf both of the guilt of the fact, and of being parties to the flight of the delinquent. And if they could not do this, then they were, by their own oaths, to acquit themſelves, and to bind themſelves to bring the delinquent to juſtice as ſoon as they could; and, in the mean time, to

[y] 'By theſe ten families (ſays the annotator to Rapin) we are 'not to underſtand ten houſe-keepers, but ten lords of manors, 'with all their vaſſals, tenants, labourers, and ſlaves; who, 'though they did not all live under their Lord's roof, were all 'counted part of his family. As there were no little freeholders in thoſe times, nor for long after, ten ſuch families muſt occupy a large ſpace of ground, and might well conſtitute a rural tithing.' But this rural tithing would be larger than the hundred itſelf; and the very name and office of a tithing-man, continued in parithes to this day, ſhews that lords of manors could not be here meant.

pay

Digitized by Google

pay the damage out of the eſtate of the delinquent; and, if that were not ſufficient, then out of their own eſtate [z].

Every ſubject in the kingdom was regiſtered in ſome tithing; only perſons of the firſt rank had the privi ledge (ſays Mr Rapin [a]) that their ſingle family ſhould make a tithing, for which they were reſponſible. 'All archbiſhops, and biſhops, earls, barons, and 'all (ſays Bracton) who have ſoc and ſac, tol and 'team, and theſe kinds of liberties, ought to have un- 'der their FRIDHBURCH, all their knights, ſervants, 'eſquires; and, if any of them prove delinquent, the 'Lord ſhall bring him to juſtice, or pay his fine [b].'

The maſter of the family was anſwerable for all who fed at his board, and were of his livery, and for all his ſervants of every kind, even for thoſe who ſerved him for their food only, without wages. Theſe were ſaid to be of his manupaſt; ſo were his gueſts; and if a man abode at any houſe but two nights, the maſter of that houſe was anſwerable for him [c].

In a word, ſays Bracton, every man, as well freemen as others, ought to belong to ſome frankpledge (*i. e.* to ſome decenna), unleſs he be a traveller, or belong to the manupaſt of ſome others; or unleſs he gives ſome countervailing ſecurity to the public, as dignity (*viz.* nobility), order (knighthood, or of the clergy), or eſtate (*viz* either freehold in land or perſonal effects, *res immobiles*) if he be a citizen.

By the laws of Edward the Confeſſor, every perſon, of the age of twelve years, ought to be ſwore in a view of frankpledge, 'That he will neither become a 'thief himſelf, nor be any wiſe acceſſary to theft.'

This court, Briton [d] tells us, was to be holden twice a year, which was afterwards reduced to once a year by *Magna Charta*; and no man, ſays the Mirror, was, by an ancient ordinance, ſuffered to remain in the kingdom, who was not enrolled *in decenna*, and had freemen for his pledges [e].

[z] Bacon's Hiſt Diſ. p. 43. [a] Diſſertation on the Government of the Anglo-Saxons. [b] Bract. l. iii. De Corona, cap. x. [c] Bract. ubi ſup. Brit. 19. b. [d] Brit 36. b. [e] Mirr. chap. i. § 17. and chap. v. § 1.

Such

Digitized by Google

Such was this excellent conſtitution; which, even in Alfred's time, when it was in its infancy, wrought ſo admirable an effect, that Ingulphus ſays, a traveller might have openly left a ſum of money ſafely in the fields and highways, and have found it ſafe and untouched a month afterwards [*f*]. Nay, William of Malmſbury tells us, the king ordered bracelets of gold to be hung up in the croſs-ways, as a proof of the honeſty of his people, none ever offering to meddle with them [*g*].

But this conſtitution would have been deficient, if it had only provided for the incorporating the ſubjects, unleſs it had confined them to the places where they were thus incorporated.

And therefore by the laws of Alured or Canute, it was rendered unlawful for any of the decenners to depart from their dwelling, without the conſent of their fellow-pledges; nor were they at liberty to leave the country, without the licence of the ſheriff or governor of the ſame [*h*].

And if a perſon, who fled from one tithing, was received in another, the tithing receiving him ſhould anſwer for his deed (*i. e.* by amercement) if he was there found [*i*].

'Before this order was eſtabliſhed,' ſays Rapin, 'the meaner ſort of people might ſhift their quarters, by reaſon of their obſcurity, which prevented 'them from being taken notice of. But it was impoſſible for them to change their habitation, after 'they were obliged to bring a teſtimonial from their 'tithing, to enable them to ſettle and be regiſtered 'in another [*k*].'

'Whilſt this ancient conſtitution remained entire, 'ſuch peace,' ſays Lord Coke, 'was preſerved within 'the realm, as no injuries, homicides, robberies, 'thefts, riots, tumults, or other offences, were committed; ſo as a man, with a white wand, might ſafely have ridden, before the Conqueſt, with much

[*f*] Scrip. poſt Bedam, p. 870. [*g*] Ib. p. 44.
[*h*] Bacon, p 44. [*i*] Brit. ubi ſupra.
[*k*] Rapin, ubi ſup.

'money

Digitized by Google

'money about him, without any weapon, through 'England [*l*].' Nay, even in the tumultuous times of William the Conqueror, the hiſtorians tell us, there was ſcarce a robber to be found in the kingdom.

This view of frankpledge remained long after the Conqueſt: for we find it twice repeated in one chapter of *Magna Charta* [*m*]; and there particularly it is ſaid, *Fiat autem viſus de frankpleg' ſic videlicet* QUOD PAX NOSTRA TENEATUR. Nay, Bracton, who wrote after that time, and Fleta after him, ſpeak of frankpledge as then ſubſiſting.

The ſtatute of Marlborough likewiſe, which was made the 52d of Henry III. mentions the ſame court; at doth *Briton*, who wrote ſtill latter, in many places. And in the 17th of Edward II. an act was made, called, *The Statute for the View of Fankpledge* [*n*].

Nay, in the reign of Henry IV. we find an amercement for not coming to a view of frankpledge; and there the whole Court of King's Bench were of opinion, that every man, as well maſters as ſervants, were obliged to repair to this court [*o*]; and though then poſſibly it was degenerated, and become little more than form.

But in proceſs of time, this inſtitution dwindled to nothing; ſo that Lord Coke might truly ſay, *Quod vera inſtitutio illius curiæ evanuit et velut umbra ejuſdem adhuc remanet;* and a little after, ſpeaking of the frankpledge, the *Decennarii*, and the *Decenna*, he ſays, 'They are names continued only as ſhadows of 'antiquity [*p*].' Nay, this great man himſelf (if, after a moſt careful and painful peruſal of all he hath writ, as well here as in his 4th Inſtitute, and other places on the ſubject, I may be allowed to ſay ſo) ſeems to have no very clear idea concerning them; and might have fairly owned, of the original of the leet and frankpledge, what one of the ſages doth of

[*l*] 2 Inſtit. 73. [*m*] Chap. xxxiii. [*n*] But this matter was before that transferred from the decennary court to the leets and ſheriff's tourn. [*o*] Hill 3 H. IV. Pl. 19. [*p*] 2 Inſt. 72, 73.

an

an hundred, in the book of Henry VII. 'That a hundred had existed above a hundred years; and therefore, as to the true definition of a hundred, and whether it was composed of a hundred towns, or a hundred lordships, and whether it had anciently more or less jurisdiction, he frankly owned he knew nothing of the matter [q].'

The statute of Marlborough [r], had perhaps given a fatal blow to the true and ancient use of the view of frankpledge; of which, as Lord Coke says [s], the sheriffs had made an ill use; for in the 3d year of the succeeding king [t], we find the legislature providing against notorious felons, and such as be openly of evil fame, that they shall not be admitted to bail; and, in the 13th, the statute of Winchester entirely altered the law, and gave us a new constitution on this head.

1. By this act, the whole hundred is made answerable in case of robberies.

2. In order to prevent the concealment of robbers in towns, it is enacted, 1. That the gates of all walled towns shall be shut from sun-setting to sun-rising. 2. A watch is appointed, who are to arrest all strangers. 3. No person is to lodge in the suburbs, nor in any place out of the town, unless his host will answer for him. 4. The bailiffs of towns shall make enquiry, once within fifteen days at the farthest, of all persons lodged in the suburbs, &c. and of those who have received any suspicious person.

3. To prevent the concealment of robbers without the towns, it is enacted, that the highways leading from one market town to another shall be enlarged, and no bushes, woods, or dykes, in which felons may be concealed, shall be suffered therein.

4. Felons are to be pursued by hue and cry.

This statute, says Lord Coke, was made against a gang of rogues then called Roberdsmen, that took

[q] 8 H. VII. 3 b. [r] Chap xxiv. By which justices in eyre are forbidden to amerce townships, because all of twelve years old were not sworn. [s] 2 Instit. 147.

[t] Westminster I. chap. xv.

their

Digitized by Google

their denomination of one Robbin Hood, who lived in Yorkſhire in the reign of Richard I. and who, with his companions, harbouring in woods and deſarts, committed a great number of robberies and other outrages on the ſubject. From this arch thief a great number of idle diſſolute fellows, who were called Drawlatches, Ribauds and Roberdſmen, took their riſe, and infeſted this kingdom for above a century, notwithſtanding the many endeavours of the legiſlature from time to time to ſuppreſs them.

In all theſe laws, the principal aim viſibly was, to prevent idle perſons wandering from place to place, which, as we have before ſeen, was one great point of the decennary conſtitution.

Thus, by a law made in the 34th year of Edward III. a labourer departing from his ſervice into another county was to be burned in the forehead with the letter F. And by the ſame ſtatute, if a labourer or ſervant do fly into a city or borough, the chief officer, on requeſt, was to deliver him up.

Again, in the 7th year of Richard II. the juſtices of peace are ordered to examine vagabonds; and, if they have no ſureties for their good behaviour, to commit them to priſon.

In the 11th year of Henry VII. it was enacted, that vagabonds and idle perſons ſhould be ſet on the ſtocks three days and three nights, and have no other ſuſtenance but bread and water, and then ſhall be put out of the town; and whoever gave ſuch idle perſons relief, forfeited 12 *d.*

By 22d Henry VIII. perſons calling themſelves Egyptians ſhall not come into the realm, under penalty of forfeiting their goods; and, if they do not depart within fifteen days after they are commanded, ſhall be impriſoned.

By the 1ſt and 2d Philip and Mary [*a*], Egyptians coming into the kingdom, and remaining here a month, are made guilty of felony without benefit of clergy.

[*a*] Chap. iv.

And

Digitized by Google

And thoſe who bring them into the realm, forfeit 40 *l.*

By the 5th Eliz. the crime of felony, without clergy, is extended to all who are found in the company of Egyptians, or who ſhall counterfeit, transform, or diſguiſe themſelves as ſuch.

By the 22d Henry VIII. a vagabond taken begging ſhall be whipped, and then ſworn to return to the place of his birth, or laſt abode for three years, there to put himſelf to labour.

By 27th Henry VIII. a valiant beggar, or ſturdy vagabond, ſhall be whipped for the firſt offence, and ſent to the place of his birth, &c. for the ſecond, the upper part of the griſtle of his right ear cut off; and if, after that, he be taken wandering in idleneſs, &c. he ſhall be adjudged and executed as a felon.

I ſhall mention no more acts (for ſeveral were made) between this and the 39th Elizabeth, when the former acts concerning vagabonds were all repealed, and the ſeveral proviſions againſt them were reduced to one law.

This act, which contained many wholeſome proviſions, remained in force a long time, but at length was totally repealed by the 12th of Queen Anne; as this was again by the 13th George II. which laſt-mentioned ſtatute ſtands now repealed by another made about ſix years ago [*w*].

I have taken this ſhort view of theſe repealed laws, in order to enforce two conſiderations. *Firſt*, That the removal of an evil, which the legiſlature have ſo often endeavoured to redreſs, is of great importance to the ſociety. *Secondly*, That an evil, which ſo many ſubſequent laws have failed of removing, is of a very ſtubborn nature, and extremely difficult to be cured.

Here I hope to be forgiven, when I ſuggeſt, that the law hath probably failed in this inſtance, from want of ſufficient direction to a ſingle point. As on a former head, the diſeaſe ſeems to be no other than *idleneſs*; ſo here, *wandering* is the cauſe of the miſ-

[*w*] 17th George II. chap. v.

Digitized by Google

chief, and that alone to which the remedy ſhould be applied. This, one would imagine, ſhould be the chief, if not ſole, intent of all laws againſt vagabonds, which might, in a ſynonymous phraſe, be called laws againſt wanderers. But as the word itſelf hath obtained, by vulgar uſe, a more complex ſignification, ſo have the laws on this head had a more general view than to extirpate this miſchief: and by that means, perhaps, have failed of producing ſuch an effect.

I will therefore confine myſelf, as I have hitherto done on this head, to the ſingle point of preventing the poor from wandering, one principal cauſe of the increaſe of robbers; as it is the chief means of preſerving them from the purſuit of juſtice: it being impoſſible for any thief to carry on his trade long with impunity among his neighbours, and where not only his perſon, but his way of life, muſt be well known.

Now to obviate this evil, the law as it now ſtands, hath provided in a twofold manner. 1. By way of prevention; and, 2. By way of remedy.

As to the firſt, the ſtatute of Elizabeth declares [x], That no perſon retained in huſbandry, or in any art or ſcience in the act mentioned [y], after the time of his retainer is expired, ſhall depart out of any city, pariſh, &c. nor out of the country, &c. to ſerve in any other, unleſs he have a teſtimonial, under the ſeal of the city or town-corporate, or of the conſtable or other head-officer, and two other honeſt houſeholders of the city, town, or pariſh, where he laſt ſerved, declaring his lawful departure, and the name of the ſhire and the place where he ſerved laſt. This certificate is to be delivered to the ſervant, and regiſtred by the parſon for 2 *d.* and the form of it is contained in the act.

And no perſon is to be retained in any other ſervice, without ſhewing ſuch teſtimonial to the chief officer of the town-corporate, and in every other

[x] 5th Eliz. chap. iv. § 10. in force, though not in uſe.
[y] i. e. in almoſt every trade.

place

Digitized by Google

place to the conſtable, curate, &c. on pain of impriſonment, till he procure a teſtimonial; and, if he cannot procure ſuch teſtimonial within twenty one days, he ſhall be whipped and treated like a vagabond; ſo ſhall he be if found with a forged teſtimonial. And thoſe who receive him without ſhewing ſuch teſtimonial as aforeſaid, forfeit 5 *l.*

As to the 2d, the law hath been extremely liberal in its proviſions. Theſe are of two ſorts; 1. Simply compulſory; and, 2. Compulſory with puniſhment. Under the former head may be ranged the ſeveral acts of parliament relating to the ſettlement, or rather removal, of the poor.

As theſe ſtatutes, though very imperfectly executed, are pretty generally known (the nation having paid ſome millions to Weſtminſter-hall for their knowledge of them) I ſhall mention them very ſlightly in this place.

The ſtatute of Elizabeth, together with the wiſe execution of it, having made the poor an intolerable burden to the public, diſputes began to ariſe between pariſhes, to whoſe lot it fell to provide for certain individuals: for, the laws for confining the poor to their own homes being totally diſregarded, theſe uſed to ramble where-ever whim or conveniency invited them. The overſeers of one pariſh were perhaps more liberal of the parochial fund than in another; or, ſometimes probably the overſeer of the pariſh of A was a friend or relation of a poor perſon of the pariſh of B, who did not chuſe to work. From ſome ſuch reaſon, the poor of one pariſh began to bring a charge on another.

To remedy ſuch inconveniencies, immediately after the Reſtoration [z], a ſtatute was made, by which if any poor man, likely to be chargeable, came to inhabit in a foreign pariſh, unleſs in a tenement of 10 *l.* a-year, the overſeers might complain to one juſtice within forty days, and then two juſtices were to remove the poor perſon to the place of his laſt legal ſettlement.

[z] 13 and 14 Car. II. c. xii.

Digitized by Google

By a second act [*a*], the forty days are to be reckoned after notice is given in writing to the churchwarden or overseer by the poor person, containing the place of his abode, number of his family, &c.

But by the same statute, the executing of a public annual office during a year, or being charged with, and paying to, the public taxes, &c. or (if unmarried and not having a child) being lawfully hired into any parish, and serving for one year, or being bound apprentice by indenture, and inhabiting, &c. are all made good settlements without notice.

By a third statute [*b*], persons bringing a certificate signed by the overseers, &c. and allowed by two justices, cannot be removed till they become chargeable.

By a fourth [*c*], no such certificate person shall gain a settlement by any other act, than by *bona fide* taking a lease of a tenement of 10 *l. per annum*, or by executing an annual office.

By a fifth, [*d*], no apprentice or hired servant of certificate person shall, by such service or apprenticeship, gain any settlement.

By a sixth [*e*], no person, by any purchase, of which the consideration doth not *bona fide* amount to 30 l. shall gain any settlement longer than while he dwells on such purchase.

So much for these laws of removal, concerning which there are several other acts of parliament and law cases innumerable.

And yet the law itself is, as I have said, very imperfectly executed at this day, and that for several reasons.

1. It is attended with great trouble; for as the act of Ch. II. *very wisely* requires two justices, and the Court of King's Bench requires them both to be present together (though they seldom are so) the order of removal is sometimes difficult to be obtained, and

[*a*] 3 and 4 W and M. c. xi. See 1 Jac. II. c. xvii.
(*b*) 8 and 9 W. III c. xxx. (*c*) 9 and 10 W. III. c xi.
(*d*) 12 Anne, c. xviii. (*e*) Geo. I. c. vii.

more

Digitized by Google

more difficult to be executed; for the parish to which the party is to be removed (perhaps with a family) is often in a distant county; nay, sometimes they are to be carried from one end of the kingdom to another.

1. It is often attended with great expence, as well for the reason aforesaid, as because the parish removing is liable to an appeal from the parish to which the poor is removed. This appeal is sometimes brought by a wealthy and litigious parish against a poor one, without any colour of right whatever.

3. The removal is often ineffectual: for as the appeal is almost certain to be brought, if an attorney lives in the neighbourhood; so is it almost as sure to succeed, if a justice lives in the parish. And as for relief in the King's Bench, if the justices of peace will allow you to go thither (for that they will not always do) the delay, as well as the cost, is such, that the remedy is often worse than the disease.

For these reasons, it can be no wonder that parishes are not very forward to put this law in execution. Indeed, in all cases of removal, the good of the parish, and not of the public, is consulted; nay, sometimes the good of an individual only: and therefore the poor man, who is capable of getting his livelihood by his dexterity at any handicraft, and likely to do it by his industry, is sure to be removed with his family; especially if the overseer, or any of his relations, should be of the same occupation; but the idle poor, who threaten to rival no man in his business, are never taken any notice of, till they become actually chargeable; and if, by begging or robbing, they avoid this, as it is no man's interest, so no man thinks it his duty to apprehend them.

It cannot therefore be expected, that any good of the kind I am contending for, should be effected by this branch of the law; let us therefore, in the second place, take a view of that which is expressly levelled at vagrants, and calculated, as it appears, for the very purpose of suppressing wanderers.

To survey this branch will be easy, as all the laws concerning vagrants are now reduced into one act of

Digitized by Google

parliament; and it is the eaſier ſtill, as this act is very clearly penned, and (which is not always the caſe) reduced to a regular and intelligible method.

By this act, then, three degrees of offences are conſtituted:

Firſt, Perſons become idle and diſorderly within the act, by, 1. Threatning to run away and to leave their wives or children to the pariſh. 2. Unlawfully returning to the place from whence they have been legally removed by the order of two juſtices, without bringing a certificate, &c. 2. Living idle without employment, and refuſing to work for uſual and common wages. 4. By begging in their own pariſhes.

Secondly, Perſons by, 1. Going about as patent-gatherers, or gatherers of alms under pretence of loſs by fire, or other caſualty; or, 2. Going about as collectors for priſons, goals, or hoſpitals. 3. Being fencers and bearwards. 4. Or common players of interludes, &c. 5. Or minſtrels, jugglers. 6. Pretending to be gypſies, or wandering in ſuch habit. 7. Pretending to phyſiognomy, or like crafty ſcience, &c. 8. Uſing any ſubtle craft to dereive and impoſe on any of his Majeſty's ſubjects. 9. Playing or ſitting at unlawful games. 10. Running away, and leaving wives or children, whereby they become chargeable to any pariſh. 11. Wandering abroad as petty chapmen or pedlars, not authorized by law. 12. Wandering abroad and lodging in ale-houſes, barns, out-houſes, or in the open air, not giving a good account of themſelves. 13. Wandering abroad and begging, pretending to be ſoldiers, mariners, ſeafaring men, or pretending to go to work at harveſt. 14. Wandering abroad and begging, are to be deemed rogues and vagabonds.

Thirdly. 1. End-gatherers offending againſt the 13 George I. entituled, *An act for the better regulation of the woolen manufactures*, &c. being convicted of ſuch offence; 2. Perſons apprehended as rogues and vagabonds eſcaping; or, 3. refuſing to go before a juſtice; or, 4. refuſing to be examined on oath; or, 5. refuſing to be conveyed by a paſs; or, 6. on examination

Digitized by Google

amination giving a falſe account of themſelves after warning of the puniſhment. 7. Rogues and vagabonds eſcaping out of the houſe of correction, &c. or, 8. thoſe who having been puniſhed as rogues and vagabonds, ſhall offend again as ſuch, are made incorrigible rogues.

Now, as to the *firſt* of theſe three diviſions, it were to be wiſhed, that perſons who are found in ale-houſes, night-houſes, &c. after a certain hour at night, had been included; for many ſuch, though of very ſuſpicious characters, taken up at privy ſearches, fall not under any of the above deſcriptions. Some of theſe I have known diſcharged, againſt whom capital complaints have appeared, when it hath been too late. Why might not the juſtice be entruſted with the power of detaining any ſuſpicious perſon, who could produce no known houſe keeper, or one of credit, to his character, for three days, within which time he might, by means of an advertiſement, be viewed by numbers who have been lately robbed? Some ſuch have been, I know, confined upon an old ſtatute as perſons of evil fame, with great emolument to the public.

But I come to the *ſecond* head, namely, of vagabonds: and here I muſt obſerve, that *wandering* is of itſelf made no offence: ſo that unleſs ſuch wanderer be either a petty chapman, or a beggar or lodger in ale-houſes, &c. he is not within the act of parliament.

Now, however uſeful this excellent law may be in the country, it will by no means ſerve the purpoſe in this town: for though moſt of the rogues who infeſt the public roads and ſtreets, indeed almoſt all the thieves in general, are vagabonds in the true ſenſe of the word, being wanderers from their lawful place of abode, very few of them will be proved vagabonds within the words of this act of parliament. Theſe vagabonds do, indeed, get their livelihood by thieving, and not as petty beggars or petty chapmen: and have their lodging not in ale-houſes, &c. but in private houſes, where many of them reſort together, and unite

Digitized by Google

unite in gangs, paying each 2 *d. per* night for their beds.

The following account I have had from Mr Welch, the high conſtable of Holborn; and none who know that gentleman, will want any confirmation of the truth of it.

'That in the pariſh of St Giles's there are great 'numbers of houſes ſet apart for the reception of 'idle perſons and vagabonds, who have their lodgings 'there for two pence a-night; that in the above pa-'riſh, and in St George, Bloomſbury, one woman 'alone occupies ſeven of theſe houſes, all properly 'accommodated with miſerable beds from the cel-'lar to the garret, for ſuch two-penny lodgers; that 'in theſe beds, ſeveral of which are in the ſame room, 'men and women often ſtrangers to each other, ly pro-'miſcuouſly, the price of a double bed being no more 'than three-pence, as an encouragement to them to 'ly together; that as theſe places are thus adapted to 'whoredom, ſo are they no leſs provided for drun-'kenneſs, gin being ſold in them all at a penny a 'quartern; ſo that the ſmalleſt ſum of money ſerves 'for intoxication: that in the execution of ſearch-'warrants, Mr Welch rarely finds leſs than twenty 'of theſe houſes open for the receipt of all comers at 'the lateſt hours; that in one of theſe houſes, and 'that not a large one, he hath numbered fifty-eight 'perſons of both ſexes, the ſtench of whom was ſo in-'tolerable, that it compelled him in a very ſhort 'time to quit the place.' Nay, I can add, what I myſelf once ſaw in the pariſh of Shore-ditch, where two little houſes were emptied of near ſeventy men and women; amongſt whom was one of the prettieſt girls I had ever ſeen, who had been carried off by an Iriſhman, to conſummate her marriage on her wedding-night, in a room where ſeveral others were in bed at the ſame time.

If one conſiders the deſtruction of all morality, decency and modeſty; the ſwearing, whoredom, and drunkenneſs, which is eternally carrying on in theſe houſes, on the one hand, and the exceſſive poverty and miſery of moſt of the inhabitants on the other; it ſeems

Digitized by Google

ſeems doubtful whether they are more the objects of deteſtation, or compaſſion: for ſuch is the poverty of theſe wretches, that upon ſearching all the above number, the money found upon all of them (except the bride, who, as I afterwards heard, had robbed her miſtreſs) did not amount to one ſhilling; and I have been credibly informed, that a ſingle loaf hath ſupplied a whole family with their proviſions for a week. Laſtly, if any of theſe miſerable creatures fall ſick (and it is almoſt a miracle, that ſtench, vermin, and want ſhould ever ſuffer them to be well) they are turned out into the ſtreets by their mercileſs hoſt or hoſteſs, where, unleſs ſome pariſh officer of extraordinary charity relieves them, they are ſure miſerably to periſh, with the addition of hunger and cold to their diſeaſe.

This picture, which is taken from the life, will appear ſtrange to many; for the evil here deſcribed, is, I am confident, very little known, eſpecially to thoſe of the better ſort. Indeed this is the only excuſe, and I believe the only reaſon, that it hath been ſo long tolerated: for when we conſider the number of theſe wretches, which in the out-ſkirts of the town amounts to a great many thouſands [*f*], it is a nuiſance which will appear to be big with every moral and political miſchief. Of theſe the exceſſive miſery of the wretches themſelves, oppreſſed with want, and ſunk in every ſpecies of debauchery, and the loſs of ſo many lives to the public, are obvious and immediate conſequences. There are ſome more remote, which, however, need not be mentioned to the diſcerning.

Among other miſchiefs attending this wretched nuiſance, the great increaſe of thieves muſt neceſſarily be one. The wonder in fact is, that we have not a thouſand more robbers than we have; indeed, that all theſe wretches are not thieves, muſt give us

[*f*] Moſt of theſe are Iriſh, againſt the importation of whom a ſevere law was made in the reign of Henry VI. and many of the repealed vagrant acts contained a clauſe for the ſame purpoſe

either

either a very high idea of their honesty, or a very mean one of their capacity and courage.

Where then is the redress? is it not *to hinder the poor from wandering*, and this by compelling the parish and peace-officers to apprehend such wanderers or vagabonds, and by empowering the magistrate effectually to punish and send them to their habitations? Thus, if we cannot discover, or will not encourage, any cure for idleness, we shall at least compel the poor to starve or beg at home: for there it will be impossible for them to steal or rob, without being presently hanged or transported out of the way.

SECT. VII.

Of apprehending the persons of felons.

I COME now to a third encouragement which the thief flatters himself with, *viz.* in his hopes of escaping from being apprehended.

Nor is this hope without foundation: how long have we known highwaymen reign in this kingdom after they have been publicly known for such? have not some of these committed robberies in open daylight, in the sight of many people, and have afterwards rode solemnly and triumphantly through the neighbouring towns, without any danger or molestation? This happens to every rogue who is become eminent for his audaciousness, and is thought to be desperate; and is, in a more particular manner, the case of great and numerous gangs, many of which have for a long time committed the most open outrages in defiance of the law. Officers of justice have owned to me, that they have passed by such, with warrants in their pockets against them, without daring to apprehend them; and, indeed, they could not be blamed for not exposing themselves to sure destruction; for it is a melancholy truth, that at this very day, a rogue no sooner gives the alarm, within certain purlieus, than twenty or thirty armed villains are found ready to come to his assistance.

On

Digitized by Google

On this head the law may seem not to have been very defective in its cautions; *First*, by investing not only the officers of justice, but every private man, with authority for securing these miscreants, of which authority it may be of service to the officers, as well as to the public in general, to be more particularly informed.

First, By [g] Westminster I. persons of evil fame are to be imprisoned without bail. By the statute of Winchester [h], suspicious night-walkers are to be arrested and detained by the watch. A statute made in [i] 5 Ed. III. reciting that many manslaughters, felonies, and robberies had been done in times past, enacts, that if any person have an evil suspicion of such offenders they shall be incontinently arrested by the constable, and shall be delivered to the bailiff of the franchise, or to the sheriff, to be kept in prison till the coming of the justices. The 34 [k] Edw. III. gives power to the justices of peace, *inter alia*, to enquire of wanderers, and such as will not labour, and to arrest and imprison suspicious persons, and to take sureties of the good behaviour of persons of evil fame, 'To the intent,' says the statute,' that the people be 'not by such rioters, &c. troubled nor endamaged, 'nor the peace blemeshed, nor merchants or others 'passing by the highways of the realm disturbed, nor 'put in peril by such offenders.'

Secondly, By the common law, every person who hath committed a felony may be arrested and secured by any private man present at the said fact, though he hath no general nor particular authority, *i. e.* though he be no officer of justice, nor have any writ or warrant for so doing; and such private man may either deliver the felon to the constable, secure him in a goal, or carry him before a magistrate [l]. And if he refuses to yield, those who arrest may justify beating [m] him; or, in case of absolute necessity, killing him [n].

[g] Westm. I. chap. xv. [h] Winton. chap. iv.
[i] 5 Edw. III. chap. xiv. [k] 34 Edw. III. c. 1.
[l] Hale's hist. P. C. vol. I. p. 587. vol. II 77.
[m] Pult. 10. 2. [n] Hale's hist. vol. I. 588.

Nor

Digitized by Google

Nor is this arreſt merely, allowed; it is injoined by law, and the omiſſion without ſome good excuſe is a miſdemeanor puniſhable by amercement, or fine and impriſonment [o].

Again, Every private man may arreſt another on ſuſpicion of felony, though he was not preſent at the fact [p]. But then if the party arreſted ſhould prove innocent, two circumſtances are neceſſary to juſtify the arreſt. 1ſt, A felony muſt be actually committed; and 2dly, There muſt be a reaſonable cauſe of ſuſpicion [q]; and common fame hath been adjudged to be ſuch cauſe [r].

But in this latter caſe my Lord Hale adviſes the private perſon, if poſſible, to have recourſe to the magiſtrate, and obtain his warrant and the aſſiſtance of the [s] conſtable; for this arreſt is not required by law, nor is the party puniſhable for neglecting it; and ſhould the perſon arreſted, or endeavoured to be arreſted, prove innocent, the party arreſting him, &c. will, in a great meaſure, be anſwerable for the ill conſequence; which if it be the death of the innocent perſon occaſioned by force of reſiſtance, this will, at leaſt, be manſlaughter; and if the other ſhould be killed in the attempt, this likewiſe will amount to manſlaughter only [t].

Again, Any private perſon may juſtify arreſting a felon purſued by hue and cry. This, as the word imports, is a public alarm raiſed all over the country, in which the conſtable is firſt to ſearch his own vill or diviſion, and then to raiſe all the neighbouring vills about, who are to purſue the felon with horſe and [u] foot. And this hue and cry may either be after a perſon certain, or on a robbery committed where the perſon is not known; and in the latter caſe thoſe who purſue it may take ſuch perſons

[o] Hale, vol I. 588. vol II. 76, 77. [p] Lamb. I. ii. c. 3. Dalt. 4. 3. Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 588. 3 Hen. VII. c i.
[q] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 80. [r] Dalt. 407 5 H. VII. 4 5.
[s] Hale's hiſt. vol II. 76. [t] Hale's hiſt vol. II. 82-3-4.
[u] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 101.

as

Digitized by Google

as they have probable cauſe to ſuſpect [w], vagrants, &c.

This method of purſuit lyes at the common law, and is mentioned by Bracton [x]; and it is enforced by many ſtatutes, as by [y] Weſtm. I. 'All are to be 'ready at the ſummons of the ſheriff, and at the cry 'of the county, to arreſt felons as well within fran-'chiſes as without.' By 4th Edw. I. 'Hue and cry 'is ordered to be levied for all murders, burglaries, 'men ſlain, or in peril to be ſlain, and all are to fol-'low it.' And laſtly the ſtatute of Winton enacts as we have ſeen before.

And this purſuit may be raiſed, 1. By a private perſon, 2. By the country without an officer. 4. By an officer without a warrant. 4. By the warrant of a magiſtrate. And this laſt, if it can be obtained, is the ſafeſt way: for then all who aſſiſt are enabled by the ſtatutes 7th and 21ſt Jac. to plead the general iſſue [z]. The common law ſo ſtrictly enjoined this purſuit, that, if any defect in raiſing it lay in the lord of the franchiſe, the franchiſe ſhould be ſeized into the king's hands; and, if the neglect lay in the bailiff, he ſhould have a heavy fine, and a year's impriſonment, or ſuffer two years impriſonment without a fine [a]. And now, by a very late [b] ſtatute, 'If any 'conſtable, headborough, &c. of the hundred, where 'any robberies ſhall happen, ſhall refuſe or *neglect* to 'make hue and cry after the felons with the utmoſt 'expedition, as ſoon as he ſhall receive notice thereof, 'he ſhall, for every ſuch refuſal and neglect, forfeit '5 l. half to the king, and half to the informer.'

Now hue and cry is of three different kinds: 1. Againſt a perſon certain by name. 2. Againſt a perſon certain by deſcription. 3. On a robbery, burglary, &c. where the perſon is neither known, nor capable of being deſcribed.

When a hue and cry is raiſed, every private man is not only juſtified in purſuing; but may be obliged,

[w] Hale's hiſt. vol II. 103. [x] Lib. iii cap. 1.
[y] Cap. ix. [z] Hale's hiſt vol. I. 465. vol II. 99. 100.
[a] Fleta lib. i. cap. 24 ad init. [b] 8th Geo. II. c. 16.

Digitized by Google

by command of the conſtable, to purſue the felon, and is puniſhable, if he diſobey, by fine and impriſonment [c]. And in this caſe whether a felony was committed or not, or whether the perſon arreſted (provided he be the perſon named or deſcribed by the hue and cry) be guilty or innocent, or of evil or good fame, the arreſt is lawful and juſtifiable, and he who raiſed the hue and cry is alone to anſwer for the juſtice of it [d].

In this purſuit, likewiſe, the conſtable may ſearch ſuſpected houſes, if the doors be open; but breaking the door will not be juſtifiable, unleſs the felon be actually in the houſe; nor even then unleſs admittance hath been firſt demanded and denied [e]. And what the conſtable may do himſelf will be juſtifiable by any other in his aſſiſtance; at leaſt, by his command [f]. Indeed a private perſon may juſtify the arreſt of an offender by the command of a peace-officer; for he is bound to be aiding and aſſiſting to ſuch officer, is puniſhable for his refuſal, and is conſequently under the protection of the law [g].

Laſtly, a private perſon may arreſt a felon by virtue of a warrant directed to him: for though he is not bound to execute ſuch warrant, yet if he doth, it is good and juſtifiable [h].

Thirdly, Officers of public juſtice may juſtify the arreſt of a felon by virtue of their office, without any warrant. Whatever therefore a private perſon may do as above, will certainly be juſtifiable in them.

And as the arreſting of felons, &c. is more particularly their duty, and their fine will be heavier for the neglect, ſo will their protection by the law be the greater: for if, in arreſting thoſe that are *probably ſuſpected*, the conſtable ſhould be killed, it is murder: on the other hand, if perſons purſued by theſe officers for felony, or *juſtifiable ſuſpicion thereof*, ſhall reſiſt or fly from them; or being apprehended, ſhall reſcue

[c] Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 588. vol. II. 104. [d] 29th Ed. III. 39. 35. Hen. IV. Pl. 24. Hale's Hiſt. vol. II. 101—2. [e] ib. 103. [f] Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 104. [g] Pult 6. 15. Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 86 [h] Dalt. 408. Hale's hiſt. vol II. 86.

themſelves,

Digitized by Google

themſelves, reſiſt or fly; ſo that they cannot *otherwiſe* be apprehended or re-apprehended, and are *of neceſſity* ſlain, it is no felony in the officers, or in the aſſiſtants, though poſſibly the parties killed are innocent; for by reſiſting the king's authority in his officers, they draw their own blood on themſelves [*i*].

Again, To take a felon or ſuſpected felon, the conſtable without any warrant may break open the door. But to juſtify this, he muſt ſhew; 1. That the felon, *&c.* was in the houſe. 2. That his entry was denied. 3. That it was denied after demand and notice that he was conſtable [*k*].

Laſtly, A felon may be apprehended by virtue of a warrant iſſuing from a magiſtrate lawfully authorized; in the execution of which the officer hath the ſame power, and will at leaſt have the ſame protection by law as in the arreſt *virtute officii*. And this warrant, if it be ſpecially directed to him, the conſtable may execute in any part within the juriſdiction of the magiſtrate; but he is only obliged to execute it within the diviſion of which he is conſtable, *&c.*

In the execution of a warrant for felony, the officer may break open the doors of the felon or of any perſon where he is concealed; and the breaking the doors of the felon is lawful at all events, but in breaking thoſe of a ſtranger the officer acts at his peril; for he will be a treſpaſſer if the felon ſhould not be there [*l*].

Such are the powers which the law gives for the apprehending felons (for as to the particular power of ſheriffs and coroners, and the proceſs of ſuperior courts, they may well be paſſed by in this place.) Again, theſe powers we ſee are enforced with penalties; ſo that not only every officer of juſtice, but every private perſon is obliged to arreſt a known felon, and may be puniſhed for the omiſſion.

Nor doth the law ſtop here. The apprehending ſuch felons is not only authorized and enjoined, but even encouraged, with impunity to perſons guilty themſelves of felony, and with regard to others.

[*i*] Dalt. 409. 13 Ed. IV. 4, and 9 5 to 92. Hale's hiſt. vol. II. 86. 90, 91. [*k*] Ib. vol. I. 581. vol. II. 110.
[*l*] Hale's hiſt. vol. I. 582. vol. II. 117. 5 Co. 91 b.

Digitized by Google

By 3 and 4 of [m] William and Mary, Perſons guilty of robbery in the highway, fields, &c. who, being out of priſon, ſhall diſcover any two offenders to be convicted of ſuch robbery, are entitled to his majeſty's pardon of ſuch robberies, &c. as they ſhall have then committed.

By 10 and 11 of [n] William III. this is extended to burglary, and ſuch felonies as are mentioned in the act

By the ſame act, all perſons who ſhall apprehend a felon for privately ſtealing goods to the value of 5s. out of ſhop, warehouſe, coach-houſe, or ſtable, by night or by day (provided the felon be convicted thereof) ſhall be entitled to a certificate, which may be aſſigned once, diſcharging ſuch apprehender or his aſſignee from all parochial offices in the pariſh or ward where ſuch felony was committed. This certificate is to be enrolled by the clerk of the peace, and cannot be aſſigned after it hath been uſed.

If any man be killed by ſuch houſe-breaker, &c. in the attempt to apprehend him, his executors or adminiſtrators ſhall be entitled to ſuch certificate.

By the 3 and 4 of [o] W. and M. whoever ſhall apprehend and proſecute to conviction any robber on the highway, ſhall receive of the ſheriff 40 l. within a month after the conviction for every offender; and in caſe of the death or removal of the ſheriff, the money to be paid by the ſucceeding ſheriff within a month after the demand and certificate brought. The ſheriff on default forfeits double the ſum, to be recovered of him by the party, his executors, &c.

And if the perſon be killed in this attempt by any ſuch robber, the executors of ſuch perſons, &c. are entitled to the reward, under the like penalty.

Again, By the ſame act the horſe, furniture, arms, money, or other goods, taken with ſuch highwaymen, are given to the apprehender who ſhall proſecute to conviction, notwithſtanding the right or title of his majeſty, any body politic or lord of franchiſe, or of

[m] Chap. viii. ubi ſupra. [n] Chap. xxiii. [o] Chap. viii.

thoſe

Digitized by Google

thoſe who lent or let the ſame to hire to ſuch a robber, with a ſaving only of the right of ſuch perſons from whom ſuch horſes, &c. were feloniouſly taken.

By a ſtatute of Queen Anne, the 40*l.* reward is extended to burglary and houſebreaking.

But though the law ſeems to have been ſufficiently provident on this head, there is ſtill great difficulty in carrying its purpoſe into execution, ariſing from the following cauſes:

Firſt, With regard to private perſons, there is no country, I believe, in the world, where that vulgar maxim ſo generally prevails, that what is the buſineſs of every man is the buſineſs of no man; and for this plain reaſon, that there is no country in which leſs honour is gained by ſerving the public. He therefore who commits no crime againſt the public, is very well ſatisfied with his own virtue; far from thinking himſelf obliged to undergo any labour, expend any money, or encounter any danger, on ſuch account.

2dly, The people are not entirely without excuſe for their ignorance of the law: for ſo far is the power of apprehending felons, which I have above ſet forth, from being univerſally known, that many of the peace officers themſelves do not know that they have any ſuch power, and often, from ignorance, refuſe to arreſt a known felon 'till they are authorized by a warrant from a juſtice of peace. Much leſs then can the compulſory part to the private perſons carry any terror of a penalty of which the generality of mankind are totally ignorant, and of inflicting which they ſee no example.

Thirdly, So far are men from being animated with the hopes of public praiſe to apprehend a felon, that they are even diſcouraged by the fear of ſhame. The perſon of the informer is in fact more odious than that of the felon himſelf; and the chief-catcher is in danger of worſe treatment from the populace than the thief.

Laſtly, As to the reward, I am afraid that the intention of the legiſlature is very little anſwered. For not to mention that the proſecutor's title to it is too often defeated by the fooliſh lenity of juries, who, by

Digitized by Google

acquitting the priſoner of the burglary, and finding him guilty of the ſimple felony only, or by finding the goods to be leſs than the value of 5 *s.* both often directly contrary to evidence, take the caſe entirely out of the act of parliament; and ſometimes even when the felon is properly convicted, I have been told, that the money does not come ſo eaſily and fully to the pockets of thoſe who are entitled to it as it ought.

With regard to the firſt and fourth of theſe objections, I chuſe to be ſilent: to preſcribe any cure for the former, I muſt enter into diſquiſitions very foreign to my preſent purpoſe; and for the cure of the latter, when I conſider in whoſe power it is to remedy it, a bare hint will, I doubt not, ſuffice.

The ſecond objection, namely, the excuſe of ignorance, I have here endeavoured to remove, by ſetting forth the law at large.

The third therefore only remains, and to that I ſhall ſpeak more fully, as the opinion on which it is founded is of the moſt pernicious conſequence to the ſociety; for what avail the beſt of laws, if it be a matter of infamy to contribute towards their execution? The force of this opinion may be ſeen in the following inſtance: We have a law by which every perſon who drives more than ſix horſes in a waggon forfeits as many horſes as are found to exceed that number. This law is broken every day, and generally with impunity: for though many men yearly venture and loſe their lives by ſtealing horſes, yet there are very few who dare ſeize a horſe, where the law allows and encourages it, when by ſuch ſeizure he is to acquire the name of an informer: ſo much worſe is this appellation in the opinion of the vulgar than that of thief; and ſo much more prevalent is the fear of popular ſhame than that of death.

This abſurd opinion ſeems to have firſt ariſen from the ſtatute of 18 [*p*] Eliz. entituled, *An act to redreſs diſorders in common informers.* By this ſtatute it appears, that very wicked uſes had been made of penal

[*p*] Chap. v.

ſtatutes

Digitized by Google

ſtatutes by theſe informers, whom my Lord Coke calls [q] *turbidum hominum genus*: and ſays, 'That they 'converted many penal laws, which were obſolete, 'and in time grown impoſſible or inconvenient to be 'performed, into ſnares to vex and entangle the ſub-'ject.'

By the ſtatute itſelf it appears, that it was uſual at that time among theſe perſons to extort money of ignorant and fearful people by the terror of ſome penal law; for the breach of which the informer either inſtituted a proceſs, or pretended to inſtitute a proceſs, and then brought the timorous party to a compoſition.

This offence therefore was by this act made a high miſdemeanour, and puniſhed with the pillory.

Now who that knows any thing of the nature or hiſtory of mankind, doth not eaſily perceive here a ſufficient foundation for that odium to all informers which hath ſince become ſo general? for what is more common than from the abuſe of any thing to argue againſt the uſe of it, or to extend obloquy from particulars to univerſals?

For this the common aptitude of men to ſcandal will ſufficiently account; but there is ſtill another and ſtronger motive in this caſe, and that is the intereſt of all thoſe who have broken or who intend to break the laws. Thus, the general cry being once raiſed againſt proſecutors on penal laws, the thieves themſelves have had the art and impudence to join it, and have put their proſecutors on the footing of all others: nay, I muſt queſtion whether, in the acceptation of the vulgar, a thief-catcher be not a more odious and contemptible name than even that of informer.

Nothing, I am ſenſible, is more vain than to encounter popular opinion with reaſon; nor more liable to ridicule than to oppoſe general contempt; and yet I will venture to ſay, that if to do good to ſociety be laudable, ſo is the office of a thief-catcher; and if to do this good at the extreme hazard of your life be honourable, then is this office honourable. True, it may be

[q] 3 Inſt. c. lxxxvii.

ſaid:

Digitized by Google

ſaid: but he doth this with a view to a reward. And doth not the ſoldier and the ſailor venture his life with the ſame view? for who, as a great man lately ſaid, ſerves the public for nothing?

I know what is to be my fate in this place, or what would happen to one who ſhould endeavour to prove that the hangman was a great and an honourable employment. And yet I have read in Tournefort, of an iſland in the Archipelago, where the hangman is the firſt and higheſt officer in the ſtate. Nay, in this kingdom, the ſheriff himſelf (who was one of the moſt conſiderable perſons in his county) is in law the hangman, and Mr Ketch is only his deputy.

If to bring thieves to juſtice be a ſcandalous office, what becomes of all thoſe who are concerned in this buſineſs, ſome of whom are rightly thought to be among the moſt honourable officers in government? If, on the contrary, this be, as it ſurely is, very truly honourable, why ſhould the poſt of danger in this warfare alone be excluded from all ſhare of honour?

To conclude a matter in which, though ſerious, I will not be too tedious: what was the great Pompey in the piratic war [r]? what were Hercules, Theſeus, and other the heroes of old, *Deorum in templa recepti*—were they not the moſt eminent of thief-catchers?

SECT. VII.

Of the difficulties which attend proſecutions.

I NOW come to a fourth encouragement which greatly holds up the ſpirits of robbers, and which they often find to afford no deceitful conſolation; and this is drawn from the remiſſneſs of proſecutors, who are often,

1. Fearful, and to be intimidated by the threats of the gang; or,

2. Delicate, and cannot appear in a public court; or,

[r] Cicero in his Oration *pro Lege Manilia* calls this, if I remember rightly, *Bellum Turpe*; but ſpeaks of the extirpation of theſe robbers as of the greateſt of all Pompey's exploits.

3. Indolent,

Digitized by Google

3. Indolent, and will not give themſelves the trouble of a proſecution; or,

4. Avaritious, and will not undergo the expence of it; nay, perhaps find their account in compounding the matter; or,

5. Tender-hearted, and cannot take away the life of a man; or,

Laſtly, Neceſſitous, and cannot really afford the coſt, however ſmall, together with the loſs of time which attends it.

The firſt and ſecond of theſe are too abſurd, and the third and fourth too infamous to be reaſoned with. But the two laſt deſerve more particular notice, as the fifth is an error ſpringing originally out of a good principle in the mind, and the ſixth is a fault in the conſtitution very eaſily to be remedied.

With regard to the former of theſe, it is certain, that a tender-hearted and compaſſionate diſpoſition, which inclines men to pity and feel the misfortunes of others, and which is, even for its own ſake, incapable of involving any man in ruin and miſery, is of all tempers of mind the moſt amiable; and though it ſeldom receives much honour, is worthy of the higheſt. The natural energies of this temper are indeed the very virtues principally inculcated in our excellent religion; and thoſe who, becauſe they are natural, have denied them the names of virtues, ſeem not, I think, to be aware of a doctrine that denies all merit to a mind which is naturally, I may ſay neceſſarily, good.

Indeed the paſſion of love, or benevolence, whence this admirable diſpoſition ariſes, ſeems to be the only human paſſion that is in itſelf ſimply and abſolutely good; and in Plato's commonwealth or (which is more) in a ſociety acting up to the rules of *Chriſtianity*, no danger could ariſe from the higheſt exceſs of this virtue; nay, the more liberally it was indulged, and the more extenſively it was expanded, the more would it contribute to the honour of the individual, and to the happineſs of the whole.

But as it hath pleaſed God to permit human ſocieties to be conſtituted in a different manner, and knaves to form a part (a very conſiderable one, I am afraid)

Digitized by Google

afraid) of every community, who are ever lying in wait to deſtroy and enſnare the honeſt part of mankind, and betray them by means of their own goodneſs, it becomes the good-natured and tender-hearted man to be watchful over his own temper; to reſtrain the impetuoſity of his benevolence, carefully to ſelect the objects of this paſſion, and not by too unbounded and indiſcriminate an indulgence to give the reins to a courſer, which will infallibly carry him into the ambuſcade of the enemy.

Our Saviour himſelf inculcates this prudence among his diſciples, telling them, that he *ſent them forth like ſheep among wolves: be ye therefore*, ſays he, *wiſe as ſerpents, but innocent as doves.*

For want of this wiſdom, a benevolent tender-hearted temper very often betrays men into errors not only hurtful to themſelves, but highly prejudicial to the ſociety. Hence men of invincible courage, and incorruptible integrity, have ſometimes falſified their truſt; and thoſe whom no other temptation could ſway, have paid too little regard to the ſanction of an oath, from this inducement alone. Hence likewiſe the miſchief which I here endeavour to obviate hath often ariſen; and notorious robbers have lived to perpetrate future acts of violence, through the ill-judging tenderneſs and compaſſion of thoſe who could and ought to have proſecuted them.

To ſuch a perſon I would ſuggeſt theſe conſiderations:

Firſt, As he is a good man, he ſhould conſider, that the principal duty which every man owes, is to his country, for the ſafety and good of which all laws are eſtabliſhed; and therefore his country requires of him to contribute all that in him lies to the due execution of thoſe laws. Robbery is an offence not only againſt the party robbed, but againſt the public, who are therefore entitled to proſecution; and he who prevents or ſtifles ſuch the proſecution, is no longer an innocent man, but guilty of a high offence againſt the public good.

Secondly, As he is a good-natured man, he will behold all injuries done by one man to another with indignation.

Digitized by Google

dignation. What Cicero says of a pirate, is as true of a robber, that he is *hostis humani generis*; and if so, I am sure every good-natured man must be an enemy to him. To desire to save these wolves in society, may arise from benevolence; but it must be the benevolence of a child or a fool, who, from want of sufficient reason, mistakes the true objects of his passion, as a child doth when a bugbear appears to him to be the object of fear. Such tender-heartedness is indeed barbarity, and resembles the meek spirit of him who would not assist in blowing up his neighbour's house, to save a whole city from the flames. 'It is true,' said a late learned Chief Justice [s], in a trial for treason, 'here is the life of a man in the case; but 'then you (speaking to the jury) must consider like-'wise the misery and desolation, the blood and con-'fusion that must have happened, had this taken ef-'fect; and put one against the other, I believe that 'consideration which is on behalf of the king will be 'much the stronger.' Here likewise is the life of a man concerned; but of what man? why, of one who being too lazy to get his bread by labour, or too voluptuous to content himself with the produce of that labour, declares war against the properties, and often against the persons, of his fellow-subjects; who deprives his countrymen of the pleasure of travelling with safety, and of the liberty of carrying their money or their ordinary conveniencies with them; by whom the innocent are put to terror, affronted and alarmed with threats and execrations, endangered with loaded pistols, beat with bludgeons and hacked with cutlasses, of which the loss of health, of limbs, and often of life, is the consequence; and all this without any respect to age, or dignity, or sex. Let the good-natured man, who hath any understanding, place this picture before his eyes, and then see what figure in it will be the object of his compassion.

I come now to the last difficulty which obstructs the prosecution of offenders; namely, the extreme poverty of the prosecutor. This I have known to be so ab-

[s] Lord chief justice Pratt.

Digitized by Google

ſolutely the caſe, that the poor wretch who hath been bound to proſecute was under more concern than the priſoner himſelf. It is true, that the neceſſary coſt on theſe occaſions is extremely ſmall; two ſhillings, which are appointed by act of parliament for drawing the indictment, being, I think, the whole which the law requires: but, when the expence of attendance, generally with ſeveral witneſſes, ſometimes during ſeveral days together, and often at a great diſtance from the proſecutor's home; I ſay, when theſe articles are ſummed up, and the loſs of time added to the account, the whole amounts to an expence which a very poor perſon, already plundered by the thief, muſt look on with ſuch horror (if he ſhould not be abſolutely incapable of the expence) that he muſt be a miracle of public ſpirit, if he doth not rather chuſe to conceal the felon, and ſit down ſatisfied with his preſent loſs: but what ſhall we ſay, when (as is very common in this town) he may not only receive his own again, but be further rewarded, if he will agree to compound it?

Now how very inconſiderable would be the whole coſt of this ſuit either to the county or the nation; if the public, to whom the juſtice of the peace gives his whole labour on this head *gratis*, was to defray the coſt of ſuch trials, by a kind of *forma pauperis* admiſſion. The ſum would be ſo trivial, that nothing would be felt but the good conſequences ariſing from ſuch a regulation.

I ſhall conclude this head with the words of my Lord Hale: 'It is,' ſaid he, 'a great defect in the 'law, to give courts of juſtice no power to allow 'witneſſes againſt criminals their charges; whereby,' ſays he, 'many poor perſons grow weary of their at-'tendance, or bear their own charges therein, to 'their great hindrance and loſs.'

SECT.

Digitized by Google

SECT. IX.

Of the TRIAL *and* CONVICTION *of* FELONS.

BUT if, notwithſtanding all the rubs which we have ſeen to ly in the way, the indictment is found, and the thief brought to his trial, ſtill he hath ſufficient hopes of eſcaping, either from the caution of the proſecutor's evidence, or from the hardineſs of his own.

In ſtreet robberies, the difficulty of convicting a criminal is extremely great. The method of diſcovering theſe is generally by means of one of the gang, who being taken up, perhaps, for ſome other offence, and thinking himſelf in danger of puniſhment, chuſes to make his peace at the expence of his companions.

But when, by means of his information, you are made acquainted with the whole gang, and have, with great trouble, and often with great danger, apprehended them, how are you to bring them to juſtice? for though the evidence of the accomplice be ever ſo poſitive and explicit, nay, ever ſo connected and probable, ſtill, unleſs it be corroborated by ſome other evidence, it is not ſufficient.

Now how is this corroborating evidence to be obtained in this caſe? Street robberies are generally committed in the dark, the perſons on whom they are committed are often in chairs and coaches; and if on foot, the attack is uſually begun by knocking the party down, and for the time depriving him of his ſenſes. But if the thief ſhould be leſs barbarous, he is ſeldom ſo incautious as to omit taking every method to prevent his being known, by flapping the party's hat over his face, and by every other method which he can invent to avoid diſcovery.

But indeed any ſuch methods are hardly neceſſary: for when we conſider the circumſtance of darkneſs, mentioned before, the extreme hurry of the action, and the terror and conſternation in which moſt perſons are in at ſuch a time, how ſhall we imagine it poſſible that they ſhould afterwards be able, with any (the

Digitized by Google

leaſt) degree of certainty, to ſwear to the identity of the thief, whoſe countenance is, perhaps, not a little altered by his ſubſequent ſituation, and who takes care, as much as poſſible he can, by every alteration of dreſs, and otherwiſe, to diſguiſe himſelf?

And if the evidence of the accomplice be ſo unlikely to be confirmed by the oath of the proſecutor, what other means of confirmation can be found? for as to his character, if he himſelf doth not call witneſſes to ſupport it (which, in this inſtance, is not incumbent on him to do), you are not at liberty to impeach it; the greateſt and moſt known villain in England, ſtanding at the bar equally *rectus in curia* with the man of the higheſt eſtimation, if they ſhould be both accuſed of the ſame crime.

Unleſs therefore the robbers ſhould be ſo unfortunate as to be apprehended in the fact (a circumſtance which their numbers, arms, &c. renders ordinarily impoſſible) no ſuch corroboration can poſſibly be had; but the evidence of the accomplice ſtanding alone and unſupported, the villain, contrary to the opinion and almoſt direct knowledge of all preſent, is triumphantly acquitted, laughs at the court, ſcorns the law, vows revenge againſt his proſecutors, and returns to his trade with a great increaſe of confidence, and commonly of cruelty.

In a matter, therefore, of ſo much concern to the public, I ſhall be forgiven, if I venture to offer my ſentiments.

The words of my Lord Hale are theſe: 'Though 'a *particeps criminis* be admiſſible as a witneſs in law, 'yet the credibility of his teſtimony is to be left to the 'jury; and truly it would be hard to take away the 'life of any perſon upon ſuch a witneſs that ſwears 'to ſave his own, and yet confeſſeth himſelf guilty of 'ſo great a crime, unleſs there be alſo very conſide-'rable circumſtances, which may give the greater 'credit to what he ſwears [*t*].'

Here I muſt obſerve, that this great man ſeems rather to complain of the hardſhip of the law in taking

[*t*] Hale's hiſt. vol. i. 305.

away

Digitized by Google

away the life of a criminal on the teſtimony of an accomplice, than to deny that the law was ſo. This indeed he could not well do; for not only the caſe of an approver, as he himſelf ſeems to acknowledge, but many later reſolutions would have contradicted that opinion.

2dly, He allows that the credibility of his teſtimony is to be left to the jury; and ſo is the credibility of all other teſtimonies. They are abſolute judges of the fact; and God forbid that they ſhould in all caſes be tied down by poſitive evidence againſt a priſoner, though it was not delivered by an accomplice!

But ſurely, if the evidence of an accomplice be not ſufficient to put the priſoner on his defence, but the jury are directed to acquit him, though he can produce no evidence on his behalf, either to prove an *alibi*, or to his character, the credibility of ſuch teſtimony cannot well be ſaid to be left to a jury. This is virtually to reject the competency of the witneſs: for to ſay the law allows him to be ſworn, and yet gives no weight to his evidence, is, I apprehend, a mere play of words, and conveys no idea.

In the *third* place, this great man aſſerts the hardſhip of ſuch conviction——Now if the evidence of a ſuppoſed accomplice ſhould convict a man of fair and honeſt character, it would, I confeſs, be hard; and it is a hardſhip of which, I believe, no experience can produce any inſtance. But if, on the other hand, the teſtimony of an accomplice with every circumſtance of probability attending it againſt a vagabond of the vileſt character, and who can produce no ſingle perſon to his reputation, is to be abſolutely rejected, becauſe there is no poſitive proof to ſupport it; this, I think, is in the higheſt degree hard (I think I have proved how hard) to the ſociety.

I ſhall not enter here into a diſquiſition concerning the nature of evidence in general; this being much too large a field; nor ſhall I examine the utility of thoſe rules which our law preſcribes on this head. Some of theſe rules might perhaps be opened a little wider than they are, without either miſchief or inconvenience; and I am the bolder in the aſſertion, as I

Digitized by Google

know a very learned judge who concurs with this opinion. There is no branch of the law more bulky, more full of confusion and contradiction, I had almost said of absurdity, than the law of evidence as it now stands.

One rule of this law is, that no man interested shall be sworn as a witness. By this is meant pecuniary interest; but are mankind governed by no other passion than avarice? is not revenge the sweetest morsel, as a divine calls it, which the devil ever dropped into the mouth of a sinner? are not pride, hatred, and the other passions, as powerful tyrants in the mind of man? and is not the interest which these passions propose to themselves by the enjoyment of their object, as prevalent a motive to evil as the hope of any pecuniary interest whatever?

But to keep more closely to the point—Why shall not any credit be given to the evidence of an accomplice?—My Lord Hale tells us, that he hath been guilty of a great crime: and yet, if he had been convicted and burnt in the hand, all the authorities tell us, that his credit had been restored; a more miraculous power of fire than any which the *royal society* can produce! The same happens, if he be pardoned.

Again, says Lord Hale, he swears to save his own life. This is not altogether so: for when once a felon hath impeached his companions, and is admitted an evidence against them, whatever be the fate of his evidence, the impeacher always goes free. To this, it is true, he hath no positive title; no more hath he, if a single felon be convicted on his oath. But the practice is as I mention, and I do not remember any instance to the contrary.

But what inducement hath the accomplice to perjure himself, or what reason can be assigned why he should be suspected of it? that he himself was one of the robbers, appears to a demonstration; that he had accomplices in the robbery, is as certain. Why then should he be induced to impeach A and B, who are innocent, and not C and D, who are guilty? must he not think that he hath a better chance of convicting the guilty than the innocent? is he not liable, if he gives a false information,

Digitized by Google

information, to be detected in it? one of his companions may be discovered and give a true information, what will then become of him and his evidence? and why should he do this? from a motive of friendship? do the worst of men carry this passion so much higher than is common with the best? but he must not only run the risk of his life, but of his soul too. The very mention of this latter risk may appear ridiculous, when it is considered of what sort of persons I am talking. But even these persons can scarce be thought so very void of understanding as to lose their souls for nothing, and to commit the horrid sins of perjury and murder without any temptation, or prospect of interest, nay, even against their interest. Such characters are not to be found in history, nor do they exist any where but in distempered brains, and are always rejected as monsters, when they are produced in works of fiction; for surely we spoil the verse rather than the sense by saying, *nemo* gratis *fuit turpissimus*. Under such circumstances, and under the caution of a good judge, and the tenderness of an English jury, it will be the highest improbability that any man should be wrongfully convicted; and utterly impossible to convict an honest man: for I intend no more than that such evidence shall put the prisoner on his defence, and oblige him either to controvert the fact by proving an *alibi*, or by some other circumstance; or to produce some reputable person to his character. And this brings me to consider the second fortress of the criminal, in the hardiness of his own evidence.

The usual defence of a thief, especially at the Old Baily, is an *alibi* [*u*]: to prove this by perjury, is a common act of Newgate friendship; and there seldom is any difficulty in procuring such witnesses. I remember a felon within this twelvemonth to have been proved to be in Ireland at the time when the robbery was sworn to have been done in London, and acquitted; but he was scarce gone from the bar, when the witness was himself arrested for a robbery committed in London at that very time when he swore both he

[*u*] i. e. *That he was at another place at the time.*

Digitized by Google

and his friend were in Dublin: for which robbery, I think, he was tried and executed. This kind of defence was in a great measure defeated by the late Baron Thompson, when he was recorder of London, whose memory deserves great honour for the services he did the public in that post. These witnesses should always be examined with the utmost care and strictness, by which means the truth (especially if there be more witnesses than one to the pretended fact) will generally be found out. And as to character, though I allow it to have great weight, if opposed to the single evidence of an accomplice, it should surely have but little where there is good and strong proof of the fact: and none at all, unless it comes from the mouths of persons who have themselves some reputation and credit.

SECT. X.

Of the encouragement given to robbers by frequent pardon.

I COME now to the sixth encouragement to felons, from the hopes of a pardon, at least with the condition of transportation.

This, I am aware, is too tender a subject to speak to. To pardon all crimes where the prosecution is in his name, is an undoubted prerogative of the king. I may add, it is his most amiable prerogative, and that which, as Livy observes [w], renders kingly government most dear to the people: for in a republic there is no such power. I may add farther, that it seems to our excellent sovereign to be the most favourite part of his prerogative, as it is the only one which hath been carried to its utmost extent in the present reign.

Here, therefore, I beg to direct myself only to those persons who are within the reach of his majesty's sacred ear. Such persons will, I hope, weigh well what I have said already on the subject of false compassion, all which is applicable on the present occasion: and since

[w] Dec 1. l. ii cap. 3. Esse gratiæ locum, esse beneficii: et irasci et ignoscere posse (*Regem scilicet*) inter amicum atque inimicum discrimen nosse, Legem rem surdam inexorabilem esse, &c.

our

Digitized by Google

our king (as was with less truth said of another [x]), *is of all men the truest image of his Maker in mercy*, I hope too much good-nature will transport no nobleman so far as it once did a clergyman in Scotland, who, in the fervour of his benevolence, prayed to God that he would graciously be pleased to pardon the poor devil.

To speak out fairly and honestly, [y] tho' mercy may appear more amiable in a magistrate, severity is a more wholesome virtue; nay severity to an individual may, perhaps, be in the end the greatest mercy, not only to the public in general, for the reason given above, but to many individuals, for the reasons to be presently assign'd.

To consider a human being in the dread of a sudden and violent death; to consider that his life or death depend on your will; to reject the arguments which a good mind will officiously advance to itself; that violent temptations, necessity, youth, and inadvertency have hurried him to the commission of a crime which hath been attended with no inhumanity; to resist the importunities, cries, and tears of a tender wife, and affectionate children, who, though innocent, are to be reduced to misery and ruin by a strict adherence to justice; these altogether form an object which whoever can look upon without emotion, must have a very bad mind; and whoever by the force of reason can conquer that emotion must have a very strong one.

And what can reason suggest on this occasion? First, that by saving this individual, I shall bring many others into the same dreadful situation. That the passions of the man are to give way to the principles of the magistrate. Those may lament the criminal, but these must condemn him. It was nobly said by Bias to one who admired at his shedding tears whilst he past sentence of death, 'Nature exacts my tenderness, but 'the law my rigour.' The elder Brutus [z] is a worthy pattern of this maxim; an example, says Machiavel, must worthy of being transmitted to posterity.

[x] By Dryden of Charles II.

[y] Disc. l. iii. c. iii.

[z] He put his two sons to death for conspiring with Tarquin. Neither Livy nor Dionysius give any character of cruelty to Brutus; indeed the latter tells us, *that he was superior to all those passions which disturb human reason.* Τῶν ἐκλαφαιόντων τὰς λογις. μὸς παθῶν κρείττων.

And

Digitized by Google

And Dionyſius Halicarnaſſus [a] calls it 'a great and 'wonderful action, of which the Romans were proud 'in the moſt extraordinary degree.' Whoever derives it therefore from the want of humane and paternal affections is unjuſt; no inſtances of his inhumanity are recorded. 'But the ſeverity,' ſays Machiavel, 'was not 'only profitable but neceſſary;' and why? becauſe a ſingle pardon granted *ex mera gratia et favore*, is a link broken in the chain of juſtice, and takes away the concatenation and ſtrength of the whole. The danger and certainty of deſtruction are very different objects, and ſtrike the mind with different degrees of force. It is of the very nature of hope to be ſanguine; and it will derive more encouragement from one pardon, than diffidence from twenty executions.

It is finely obſerved by Thucydides [b], 'That 'though civil ſocieties have allotted the puniſhment 'of death to many crimes, and to ſome of the inferior 'ſort, yet hope inſpires men to face the danger; and 'no man ever came to a dreadful end, who had not 'a lively expectation of ſurviving his wicked machina-'tions.'—Nothing certainly can more contribute to the raiſing this hope than repeated examples of ill-grounded clemency; for, as Seneca ſays, *ex clementia omnes idem ſperant* [c.]

Now what is the principal end of all puniſhment? is it not, as Lord Hale [d] expreſſes it, 'To deter men 'from the breach of laws, ſo that they may not of-'fend, and ſo not ſuffer at all? and is not the inflict-'ing of puniſhment more for example, and to pre-'vent evil, than to puniſh? And therefore,' ſays he, preſently afterwards, 'Death itſelf is neceſſary to 'be annexed to laws in many caſes by the prudence of 'law-givers, though poſſibly beyond the ſingle merit 'of the offence ſimply conſidered.' No man indeed of common humanity or common ſenſe can think the life of a man and a few ſhillings to be of an equal conſideration, or that the law in puniſhing theft with

[a] Page 272. Edit. Hudſon.
[b] P. 174. Edit. Hudſon.
[c] De clementia, lib. i. c. i.
[d] Hale's hiſt. vol. I. p. 13.

death

Digitized by Google

death proceeds (as perhaps a private person sometimes may) with any view to vengeance. The terror of the example is the only thing proposed, and one man is sacrificed to the preservation of thousands.

If therefore the terror of this example is removed (as it certainly is by frequent pardons) the design of the law is rendered totally ineffectual; the lives of the persons executed are thrown away, and sacrificed rather to the vengeance than to the good of the public, who receives no other advantage than by getting rid of a thief, whose place will immediately be supplied by another. Here then we may cry out with the poet [e]:

——————— *Sævior ense*
Parcendi rabies ———————

This, I am confident, may be asserted, that pardons have brought many more men to the gallows than they have saved from it. So true is that sentiment of Machiavel, that examples of justice are more merciful than the unbounded exercise of pity [f].

SECT. XI.

Of the manner of execution.

BUT if every hope which I have mentioned fails the thief; if he should be discovered, apprehended, prosecuted, convicted, and refused a pardon; what is his situation then? surely most gloomy and dreadful, without any hope, and without any comfort. This is, perhaps, the case with the less practised, less spirited, and less dangerous rogues; but with those of a different constitution it is far otherwise. No hero sees death as the alternative which may attend his undertaking with less terror, nor meets it in the field with more imaginary glory. Pride, which is commonly the uppermost passion in both, is in both treated with equal satisfaction. The day appointed

[e] Claudian. [f] In his Prince.

by

Digitized by Google

by the law for the thief's ſhame is the day of glory in his own opinion. His proceſſion to Tyburn, and his laſt moments there, are all triumphant; attended with the compaſſion of the meek and tender-hearted, and with the applauſe, admiration, and envy of all the bold and hardened. His behaviour in his preſent condition, not the crimes, how atrocious ſoever, which brought him to it, are the ſubject of contemplation. And if he had ſenſe enough to temper his boldneſs with any degree of decency, his death is ſpoke of by many with honour, by moſt with pity, and by all with approbation.

How far ſuch an example is from being an object of terror, eſpecially to thoſe for whoſe uſe it is principally intended, I leave to the conſideration of every rational man; whether ſuch examples as I have deſcribed are proper to be exhibited, muſt be ſubmitted to our ſuperiors.

The great cauſe of this evil is the frequency of executions: the knowledge of human nature will prove this from reaſon; and the different effects which executions produce in the minds of the ſpectators in the country where they are rare, and in London where they are common, will convince us by experience. The thief who is hanged to-day hath learned his intrepidity from the example of his hanged predeceſſors; as others are now taught to deſpiſe death, and to bear it hereafter with boldneſs, from what they ſee to-day.

One way of preventing the frequency of executions is by removing the evil I am complaining of; for this effect in time becomes a cauſe, and greatly increaſes that very evil from which it firſt aroſe. The deſign of thoſe who firſt appointed executions to be public, was to add the puniſhment of ſhame to that of death; in order to make the example an object of greater terror. But experience hath ſhewn us that the event is directly contrary to this intention. Indeed, a competent knowledge of human nature might have foreſeen the conſequence. To unite the ideas of death and ſhame is not ſo eaſy as may be imagined; all ideas of the latter being abſorbed by the former. To prove this, I will appeal to any man who hath ſeen an execution,

Digitized by Google

execution, or a proceſſion to an execution; let him tell me, when he hath beheld a poor wretch, bound in a cart, juſt on the verge of eternity, all pale and trembling with his approaching fate, whether the idea of ſhame hath ever intruded on his mind? much leſs will the bold daring rogue, who glories in his preſent condition, inſpire the beholder with any ſuch ſenſation.

The difficulty here will be eaſily explained, if we have recourſe to the poets (for the good poet and the good politician do not differ ſo much as ſome who know nothing of either art affirm; nor would Homer or Milton have made the worſt legiſlators of their times;) the great buſineſs is to raiſe terror, and the poet will tell you, that admiration or pity, or both, are very apt to attend whatever is the object of terror in the human mind. This is very uſeful to the poet, but very hurtful on the preſent occaſion to the politician, whoſe art is to be here employed to raiſe an object of terror, and at the ſame time, as much as poſſible, to ſtrip it of all pity and all admiration.

To effect this, it ſeems that the execution ſhould be as ſoon as poſſible after the commiſſion and conviction of the crime; for if this be of an atrocious kind, the reſentment of mankind being warm, would purſue the criminal to his laſt end, and all pity for the offender would be loſt in deteſtation of the offence. Whereas, when executions are delayed ſo long as they ſometimes are, the puniſhment and not the crime is conſidered; and no good mind can avoid compaſſionating a ſet of wretches, who are put to death we know not why, unleſs, as it almoſt appears, to make a holiday for, and to entertain the mob.

Secondly, It ſhould be in ſome degree private. And here the poets will again aſſiſt us. Foreigners have found fault with the cruelty of the Engliſh drama, in repreſenting frequent murders upon the ſtage. In fact, this is not only cruel, but highly injudicious: a murder behind the ſcenes, if the poet knows how to manage it, will affect the audience with greater terror than if it was acted before their eyes. Of this we have an inſtance in the murder of the king in Macbeth, at which, when Garrick acts the part, it is ſcarce an

Digitized by Google

hyperbole to say, I have seen the hair of the audience stand an end. Terror hath, I believe, been carried higher by this single instance, than by all the blood which hath been spilt on the stage. To the poets I may add the priests, whose politics have never been doubted. Those of Egypt in particular, where the sacred mysteries were first devised, well knew the use of hiding from the eyes of the vulgar what they intended should inspire them with the greatest awe and dread. The mind of man is so much more capable of magnifying than his eye, that I question whether every object is not lessened by being looked upon; and this more especially when the passions are concerned: for these are very apt to fancy much more satisfaction in those objects which they affect, and much more of mischief in those which they abhor, than are really to be found in either.

If executions therefore were so contrived, that few could be present at them, they would be much more shocking and terrible to the croud without doors than at present, as well as much more dreadful to the criminals themselves, who would thus die in the presence only of their enemies; and where the boldest of them would find no cordial to keep up his spirits, nor any breath to flatter his ambition.

3*dly*, The execution should be in the highest degree solemn. It is not the essence of the thing itself, but the dress and apparatus of it, which make an impression on the mind, especially on the minds of the multitude, to whom beauty in rags is never a desirable, nor deformity in embroidery a disagreeable object.

Montaigne, who of all men, except only Aristotle, seems best to have understood human nature, enquiring into the causes why death appears more terrible to the better sort of people than to the meaner, expresses himself thus: 'I do very well believe, that it is those terrible ceremonies and preparations wherewith we set it out, that more terrify us than the thing itself; a new and contrary way of living, the cries of mothers, wives, and children, the visits of astonished and afflicted friends, the attendance of pale and blubbered servants, a dark room set round with burning tapers,

'our

Digitized by Google

'our beds environed with phyſicians and divines, in 'fine, nothing but ghaſtlineſs and horror round about 'us, render it ſo formidable, that a man almoſt fan-'cies himſelf dead and buried already [g].'

'If the image of death,' ſays the ſame author, 'was 'to appear thus dreadful to an army, they would be 'an army of whining milk-ſops; and where is the dif-'ference but in the apparatus? Thus in the field (I 'may add, at the gallows) what is encountered with 'gaiety and unconcern, in a ſick-bed becomes the moſt 'dreadful of all objects.'

In Holland, the executions (which are very rare) are incredibly ſolemn. They are performed in the area before the ſtadthouſe, and attended by all the magiſtrates. The effect of this ſolemnity is inconceivable to thoſe who have not obſerved it in others, or felt it in themſelves; and to this, perhaps, more than to any other cauſe, the rareneſs of executions in that country is owing.

Now the following method, which I ſhall venture to preſcribe, as it would include all the three particulars of celerity, privacy, and ſolemnity, ſo would it, I think, effectually remove all the evils complained of, and which at preſent attend the manner of inflicting capital puniſhment.

Suppoſe then, that the court of the Old Bailey was, at the end of the trials, to be adjourned during four days; that, againſt the adjournment day, a gallows was erected in the area before the court; that the criminals were all brought down on that day to receive ſentence; and that this was executed the very moment after it was pronounced, in the ſight and preſence of the judges.

Nothing can, I think, be imagined (not even torture, which I am an enemy to the very thought of admitting) more terrible than ſuch an execution; and I leave it to any man to reſolve himſelf upon reflection, whether ſuch a day at the Old Bailey, or a holiday at Tyburn, would make the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on the minds of every one.

[g] Montaigne, Eſſay 19.

Digitized by Google

Thus I have, as well as I am able, finiſhed the taſk which I propoſed, have endeavoured to trace the evil from the very fountain-head, and to ſhew whence it originally ſprings, as well as all the ſupplies it receives, till it becomes a torrent, which at preſent threatens to bear down all before it.

And here I muſt again obſerve, that if the former part of this treatiſe ſhould raiſe any attention in the legiſlature, ſo as effectually to put a ſtop to the luxury of the lower people, to force the poor to induſtry, and to provide for them when induſtrious, the latter part of my labour would be of very little uſe; and indeed all the pains which can be taken in this latter part, and all the remedies which can be deviſed, without applying a cure to the former, will be only of the palliative kind, which may patch up the diſeaſe, and leſſen the bad effects, but never can totally remove it.

Nor, in plain truth, will the utmoſt ſeverity to offenders be juſtifiable, unleſs we take every poſſible method of preventing the offence. *Nemo ad ſupplicia exigenda provenit, niſi qui remedia conſumpſit*, ſays Seneca [*b*], where he repreſents the governors of kingdoms in the amiable light of parents. The ſubject, as well as the child, ſhould be left without excuſe before he is puniſhed: for in that caſe alone, the rod becomes the hand either of the parent or the magiſtrate.

All temptations, therefore, are to be carefully removed out of the way; much leſs is the plea of neceſſity to be left in the mouth of any. This plea of neceſſity is never admitted in our law; but the reaſon of that is, ſays Lord Hale, becauſe it is ſo difficult to diſcover the truth. Indeed, that it is not always certainly falſe, is ſufficient ſcandal to our polity; for what can be more ſhocking than to ſee an induſtrious poor creature, who is able and willing to labour, forced by mere want into diſhoneſty, and that in a nation of ſuch trade and opulence!

Upon the whole, ſomething ſhould be, nay, muſt be done, or much worſe conſequences than have hitherto happened, are very ſoon to be apprehended.

[*b*] De Clementia, lib. ii. Frag.

Digitized by Google

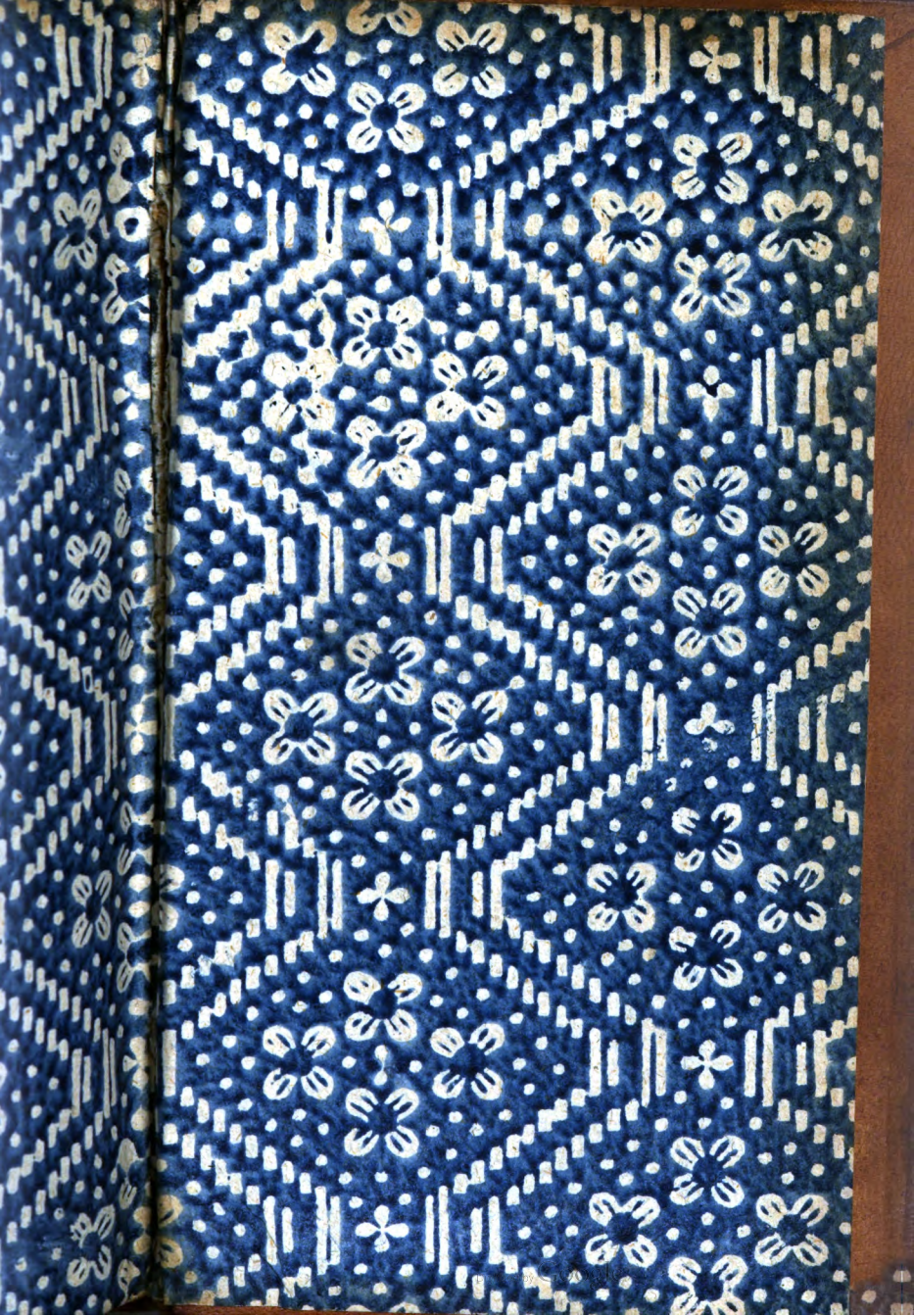
Nay, as the matter now ſtands, not only care for the public ſafety, but common humanity, exacts our concern on this occaſion; for that many cart-loads of our fellow-creatures are once in ſix weeks carried to ſlaughter, is a dreadful conſideration; and this is greatly heightened by reflecting, that with proper care and proper regulations, much the greater part of theſe wretches might have been made not only happy in themſelves, but very uſeful members of the ſociety, which they now ſo greatly diſhonour in the ſight of all Chriſtendom.

END OF VOLUME ELEVENTH.

Digitized by Google

PRAHA • NÁRODNÍ KNIHOVNA

Digitized by Google



05. E 439.
Vol. 11.